九当家

Chapter 1 part 1 : The Most Beautiful Woman

The sky has the Nine Heavens, the ground has the Nine Earths.

Hell has the river of death that connects the sky and earth. Mortals call it the “Nine Springs,” or the “Yellow Spring”, and underneath the Nine Springs is the Yellow Spring road.

The Yellow Spring road; it is the last journey for each person.

***

“If a man has not truly fallen in love with a woman, then his fall cannot be attributed to her.”

Feng Feiyun, this time, had “truly fallen” which, was why, his life was in this woman’s hand.

People have countless ways to die. Some die on the battlefield; dramatic, honorable, and meaningful. Others die a naked death on the street without a proper burial, but Feng Feiyun feels that his demise was even more devastating.

How could such a beautiful woman exist in the world?

This question appeared every time Feng Feiyun saw Shui Yueting; his heart was unable to remain calm despite their numerous encounters.

Big round eyes, pearl white skin, like snow, and a slender body with an aura of nobility. Like a goddess that has descended from the heaven.

She was the most beautiful woman in the world.

However, when Feng Feiyun was killed by her sword, he found out that she was also the most heartless woman in the world.

The sword in her hand bled crimson; his blood flowed from the tip.

Feng Feiyun’s soul descended from his body; it traveled to a black world, as cold as ice. Up ahead lied an ancient passage, hovering in the emptiness. Will this lead to the river of souls, the passage to hell?

Emptiness, loneliness, and fearful darkness.

A dead person indeed becomes a soul.

“I can’t believe that I, the youngest Patriarch of the Demon Phoenix Race, have to wait for my end like this.”

Walking on the Yellow Springs road, smiling heroically, Feng Feiyun possessed a noble aura that could cause many Emperors to bow down to.

Feng Feiyun was a Demon Phoenix, a male that had the highest aptitude in the last thirty thousand years. He reached the ninth level of Heaven Emergence within one thousand years, becoming the strongest cultivator in the Immortal World; the other seven Phoenix Empresses nominated him to be the new Demon Phoenix Race Patriarch.

At that time, Feng Feiyun was even more renowned than even the Elders and Patriarchs of other big sects; all the other Demon Emperors and Empresses were careful when dealing with him.

It was at his apex that he met Shui Yueting. The two coincidentally met at the North Sea. One was the youngest Patriarch of the Demon Phoenix Race, the other was the most beautiful woman in the world. They quickly fell in love and spent their time peacefully together on the North Sea beach.

At that time, Shui Yueting was gentle and thoughtful; a graceful woman filled with love. Feng Feiyun had many responsibilities as a Patriarch; he could even be considered heartless and ruthless, but after their meeting, he became a young man smitten by love.

Feng Feiyun gently held her slender waist, determined to protect her with his life. However, the moment when he died to her sword, he found out that she did not need his protection; her cultivation level was just as high as his. A raise of her soft hand could destroy the heaven and earth, and it was even a sneak attack.

After his death, Shui Yueting replaced his position and became the strongest expert in the Immortal World. This was the goddess Shui Yueting, worshipped and honored by all under the heavens.

Yue Ting was peerless under the heavens, the mandate in her hand; no one dared to resist.

A woman stepping on her lover’s body to reach the apex was definitely the

most frightening woman in the world.

To die at the hands of the most beautiful and strongest woman, Feng Feiyun felt that he could at least smile under the Nine Springs. At the very least, he had loved with sincerity, and, with no shame in his heart, he could go peacefully to his end.

At least I had an “intimate” relationship with her, and I didn’t lose everything for nothing!
(TL: True text)

“Dear God, if you can revive me, then I will return the full favor towards her.”

“If I can live again, then, no matter what price I have to pay, I will make her understand that she cannot get away with this betrayal; even if she is the most beautiful woman; A man’s scorn will be no less than a woman’s when he is betrayed by his love.”

“Alas! Death is unavoidable, and my soul will disappear eventually; my chance for revenge is gone.”

The Yellow Springs road, the road of the dead! You can only walk forward, there was no turning back.

Going straight to hell to drink from Meng Po’s Five Flavored Tea of Forgetfulness. I will forget everything and be reincarnated in a new body; my glory for this past life will turn into meaningless clouds and smoke.

Even if there were regrets and hatred or a lover and an enemy, it did not matter any more, for he was a dead man; only the soul remained.

“Wait a minute! Why is the Yellow Springs road so empty? where are the demons and spirits of hell? Is this the actual Yellow Springs? Did I take the wrong turn?”

Feng Feiyun started to question.

Looking at the eerily serene surroundings, nothing but the dark emptiness stood before him; he took a long turn. In the great beyond, there was a glimmer of light, as big as a rice grain. It was of a green hue, flying towards him. The speed accelerated, and the light became brighter and bigger…

Chapter 1 part 2 : The Most Beautiful Woman

What is that thing?

It was a boat; a blue spirit vessel with an ancient design that resembled an underworldly demonic ship.

It was made out of a golden bronze material with eighteen steel pillars for the sails; towering like magnificent mountains. The steel pillars had already started to rust, and the black sails were tattered and filled with holes. It painted a dark and eerie picture of a ship.

The pitiful state of the blue spirit vessel would still inspire respect and remorse from spectators.

“Such a fast speed!”

Even when Feng Feiyun was alive, he would not be able to reach that kind of speed.

The gigantic spirit vessel was as fast as light; no one could dodge it at this momentum. It pierced through the soul of Feng Feiyun.

“Bang!”

Feng Feiyun found out that his soul and the spirit vessel were flying in the void; slowly becoming one. It flew aimlessly in this eternal darkness.

Where was it heading?

“This is…”

Not waiting for Feng Feiyun to react, the blue spirit vessel tore through the fabric of space itself and zoomed outside.

“Wham!”

Up ahead, a blinding light illuminated powerfully. Feng Feiyun was knocked out immediately; he felt that his soul was entering a warm body.

Opening his eyes, he found that he had become a fourteen or fifteen year old teenager.

He had reincarnated.

However, this body did not belong to him; it was rather sickly, even when compared to the average person.

And in his head, numerous memories resurfaced. It was easy to recognize that they belonged to the owner of this body.

Did he enter a dead body? Or did he forcefully steal this boy's body?

Forget your mother! Living again was already a good thing.
(TL: Chinese slang, meaning whatever)

"Feng Feiyun! He has the same name as me; however, my name means Phoenix while his means Wind."

(Nahct: Feng (凤) means Phoenix while Feng (风) means wind.)

Feng Feiyun couldn't fully digest the heavy influx of the new memories in his head. All of a sudden, he heard a young girl quietly crying in fear next to his side.

"Young Master Feng, please spare me! My age is still very small, you shouldn't do this…"

The little girl was shaking in fear; her eyes filled with despair. There were the red marks of five fingers on her pretty white face; it was easy to see that she had just been slapped.

At the moment, Feng Feiyun had an adverse feeling towards women. He believed that women were bad omens; they were poisonous scorpions, dangerous bees, and the worst of all were their hearts.

Oh god, who is this girl?

Feng Feiyun looked around and found that his body was cold, his hands were situated strangely; as if he were touching a pair of soft, warm cottons. They were soft and slippery, as well as a little wet.

He was completely naked on top of the cute little girl. Her clothes had already been torn to pieces by him, revealing her snow white chest. His evil hands were grabbing the young bosom of this girl.

Oh god! The twin peaks were molded strangely!

The strength from his grip was too much.

The two naked bodies on the bed painted a particularly compelling scene.

She was like a helpless little quail that was trying desperately to hide; her hands covered her private parts, fortifying her last defense. Her face was full of tears; crying like the rain.

“This… This evil young master was defiling an innocent young girl; his character isn’t worthy of praises!” This thought appeared in his head; however, his hands couldn’t help but to lightly squeeze again. Oh my mother, what did this girl eat to make them so big; this feeling… is not bad!

“Ow! Somebody help!”

She cried out for help; clearly, she was in pain from the contact.

“Bang Bang!”

The black wooden door was slammed open by an eighty year old man. He carried a long walking stick, and his spine was bent from old age. He could barely walk or even stand as he was entering the room.

“Grandpa, help me!”

The young girl cried out.

The old man’s body was shaking, terrorized by the scene on the bed; it was as if his Xiao Yuer was being eaten by a wolf. He quickly kneeled next to the bed and kept on kowtowing:

“Young Master Feng, I beg you, please let my Xiao Yuer go. She is only fourteen years old; she is still very young. Please show mercy and spare her. I will kowtow and pray for you everyday. Young Master Feng, I beg you…”
(TL: kowtow kneel and touch the ground with the forehead in worship or submission as part of Chinese custom.)

This Young Master Feng was a lowlife in the city, there was nothing that he wouldn’t do. Wearing the best of clothes, forcing young girls in broad daylight, taking them home and then defiling them. Many young girls were ruined by his hands.

This Young Master Feng was the lowest of the lows; the scum of the earth.

However, his family background could not be underestimated. It could call the rain and change the wind in Spirit State City. Even though everyone was extremely resentful, no one dared to say anything. The best they could do was to avoid him.

At Spirit State City, to hear the three words “Young Master Feng” was enough to scare little girls crying.

“This old man really wants to die. Your grand daughter being chosen by Young Master Feng is her own fortune; if she can satisfy the young master tonight, she can enter our home as a maid. If not, we’ll sell her off to the Xing Hua brothel tomorrow; to become a bitch for thousands of men to ride.”

Two servants from outside came in. Both were wearing a black uniform with an expression like two wild tigers.

They started laughing and kicking the old man, immobilizing him on the ground.

“No! Xiao Yuer is only fourteen; if the Xing Hua brothel buys her, she will die in there.”

The gray-haired old man started kowtowing again, his forehead, swollen from earlier, was now painted red by blood.

The Xing Hua brothel was the biggest brothel in Spirit State City, and it’s also the most vilest of places. Even virgins that were sold to the brothel were forced to work at least ten times a day. The prettier the girl, the faster she would die.

It was the sin of men! Every man wanted to ride beautiful women; who cared about the money?

Chapter 1 part 3 : The Most Beautiful Woman

If his granddaughter was actually bought by the Xing Hua brothel, then her entire life would be ruined.

The old man stared at his granddaughter being molested by Young Master Feng on the bed. His pain and helplessness could not be explained with words. His heart was broken, he wanted to commit suicide, but he couldn't leave his granddaughter alone.

"Damn you old guy! You dare to hinder our master's good time? I'm going to beat you to death."

A muscular servant kicked the old man out of the door; blood covering his face.

"Young Master, keep on going; don't worry about the old man. We will take care of it. Haha!"

The two servants winked at Feng Feiyun and smiled deviously. They left and closed the door while carrying the old man further away with the intention of beating him to death.

Outside, the footsteps became softer and softer, and the old man's begging voice became weaker.

"Young Master Feng, please spare my grandpa; I will do whatever you want!"

Xiao Yuer was anxiously crying and begging Feng Feiyun. Her hands covering her breast but her elegant thighs were not longer closed off, signaling her acceptance to his advance in order for him to spare her grandpa.

At the moment she looked like a lost lamb, submitting to the evil wolf. Her body expression seemed to say that if you want to eat me, then eat me!

It took a while, but Feng Feiyun finally regained composure and made sense of his memories. The little girl that was undressed by him was Xiao Yu. She and her grandfather Luo lived and supported each other in a small tea shop located in an alley.

Today, Feng Feiyun and his two servants saw Xiao Yu working at the tea shop.

She was only fourteen, but her innate youthfulness and pretty face attracted Young Master Feng.

When nightfall arrived, Young Master Feng went to Old Man Luo's house. They kicked the door off the hinges, and grabbed Xiao Yu away. This kind of matter had been executed many times by him, so he already knew the procedure. Before anyone knew it, Xiao Yu was already naked beneath him.

This was when Feng Feiyun's soul crashed into the body of the Young Master Feng and both of their souls became one.

This was why he was in such an awkward and unforgivable situation.

As one, Young Master Feng's arrogance and lustfulness remain but Feng Feiyun's mind and morals have control of the body.

"Young Master Feng, please find the mercy in your heart to spare my grandfather!"

Xiao Yuer continued to beg.

She closed her eyes awaiting the nightmare to come. She told herself to not cry out, even if it was painful. However, after waiting for what seemed like an eternity, she did not feel any unwanted violations and her body became lighter. Feng Feiyun, who was originally on top of her, had already left the bed; putting his clothes back on like he was already finished with his business.

Did it not hurt the first time?

Was it when I was unaware; had he already had his ways with me?

Xiao Yuer couldn't help but softly cry again:

"Young Master Feng; since you have successfully taken me, you should let go of my grandfather."

"What?"

Feng Feiyun almost fell to the floor, and then he angrily explained:

"Open your eyes and look closely; pinch yourself if you have to. Wake up from your delusion. If I had my way with you, I fear that you wouldn't have the strength to speak at the moment."

Xiao Yuer was startled, yet relieved, knowing her virtue was still safe. However, she wondered why he didn't commit the cruel act. This required additional thinking.

Feng Feiyun shook his head, not knowing what she was thinking in her heart. He opened the door and headed towards his two servants.

This old man better not die, otherwise, after my reincarnation, I would be known as the guy who bullied an old man. How can I go on after that?

Xiao Yuer, covered her body with blankets on the bed, watched in bewilderment as Feng Feiyun's back disappear from sight. Did the evil man suddenly grow a conscience? No, there were no evil things that he wouldn't do; why would he spare us? It must be because I didn't please him earlier; was it so he can sell me to the Xing Hua brothel as a virgin, for a higher price?

Even though she was afraid and worried about her future, she quickly put on some clothes that were in the room and sneaked outside. She wanted to find her grandpa to see if he was still alive.

Feng Feiyun went to Old Man Luo's house. He arrived at an old courtyard with collapsed walls and rubbles in a corner. It seemed like the two had been living a hard life. Only a young girl and her grandfather relying on each other to make it through life.

There was a crowd surrounding the small house inside the courtyard. They were whispering about an event that had just transpired.

"A murder is going to happen, the two people from the Feng family will beat Old Man Luo to death."

"Why are you so loud? Don't you know the culprit is the young master from the Feng family? If you make this into a big deal, the Feng family will find you."

"Where is his granddaughter?"

In the dark, people used torches to light up Old Man Luo's courtyard.

The Feng servants dragged Old Man Luo into the central area, looked at all the poor peasants, and said:

"Old Man Luo didn't know right from wrong, he dared to cross our young

master. Should we let him live in this world?”

Chapter 2 : Holy Saint Treasure (1)

There was a crowd surrounding the small house inside the courtyard. They were whispering about an event that had just transpired.

“A murder is going to happen, the two people from the Feng Clan will beat Old Man Luo to death.”

“Why are you so loud? Don’t you know the culprit is the young master from the Feng Clan? If you make this into a big deal, the Feng Clan will find you.”

“Where is his granddaughter?”

In the dark, people used torches to light up Old Man Luo’s courtyard.

The Feng servants dragged Old Man Luo into the central area, looked at all the poor peasants, and said:

“Old Man Luo didn’t know right from wrong, and he dared to cross our young master. Should we let him live in this world?”

All of the neighbors looked the other way, each of them remained silent.

Although everyone knew Young Master Feng was the monster here, no one had the courage to stand up against the Feng Clan.

One servant started laughing maniacally:

“Heh! In this Spirit State City, Young Master Feng is like the heavens. Crossing Young Master Feng is like trying to cross heaven, it is natural that you will be punished with death.”

Finished speaking, he picked up a large wooden stick from the ground, and pointed it at Old Man Luo’s head.

Old Man Luo’s body was skinny like a skeleton from his harsh life; his body curled up in the fetal position on the ground. He kept mouthing his pleas:

“Please let Yuer go, please let Yuer go, she is still so young…”

The spectators were unwilling to witness the final moment, knowing that he would die and be left for the dogs to eat.

Sigh! Why would the heavens allow for this bastard Feng to exist!?

Everyone was cursing Feng in their hearts.

Suddenly, a man approached the central courtyard from the crowd. Feng Feiyun walked over and took the wooden stick from his servant; he leered at them and said:

“Move over to the side.”

The arrogant servants, of course, could not disobey their master; they docilely moved the the side. They were thinking: what the heck is going on? Did the young master want to be a good guy for once?

No, that can’t be right; that wasn’t his style. Maybe he wanted to personally kill Old Man Luo. No, that was false as well. Although, he acts like a gangster, he actually lacked courage and had never killed anyone before personally.

Everyone was surprised, Feng Feiyun threw the stick in his hand away. He slowly lifted Old Man Luo to an arching position and checked his pulse. After determining the old man’s status, he nodded his head and commanded:

“Feng Ping, go get Doctor Wang.”

“Hah?”

One of the servants acted as if he didn’t hear what Feng Feiyun said clearly.

“I said to go get Doctor Wang! You can’t hear me!?”

Feng Feiyun yelled at him.

“I heard clearly, I heard clearly.”

The servant named Feng Ping kept on obediently repeating those words, and then he ran out of the courtyard to get the doctor.

At this moment, everyone was shocked once again. Strange event! Strange event! The servants harmed Old Man Luo, yet Young Master Feng came to help him!

Everyone who had witnessed this event was startled on their feet. Maybe this was a good thing, but it was just strange. It was as if a war general started to knit a flowery handkerchief, a monk brushing his hair, or a eunuch calling a

prostitute.

Doctor Wang of the Gu Shan clinic was a renowned physician. He was in bed with his wife when he heard that Young Master Feng had called for him. He immediately wore his working uniform and rode his horse to the location.

Having helped Old Man Luo sanitized and bandaged his wounds; Doctor Wang also prescribed the best medicine available. Only afterwards, could he breathe easily again.

“Young Master Feng, Old Man Luo’s age is high. It will take time for him to recuperate; I will need to check on him once each day for seven days. He should be stabilized afterwards.”

Doctor Wang closed his medicine chest and wiped off the sweat on his brow, then he politely told Feng Feiyun. This was the most dangerous man in Spirit State City; Doctor Wang minded his words in front of Feng.

Feng Feiyun nodded and inquired:

“How much money?”

“I don’t dare; how could I accept money from Young Master Feng?”

Doctor Wang was scared mindlessly and his legs started shaking. He was this close to performing kowtow nonstop.

Feng Feiyun had an unhappy expression and demanded:

“Feng Ping, give Doctor Wang one hundred silver coins.”

“Boom!”

Doctor Feng directly kneeled on the ground, and started kowtowing toward Feng Feiyun, his mouth started begging:

“Young Master Feng, please don’t kill me. I would rather cut off my hands and never be a doctor again than to take your money.”

Doctor Wang was terrorized, his heart warned him to never take money from Feng Feiyun. There used to be an ignorant man who accepted a meal payment from Young Master Feng; afterward, his house was in disarray. His wife and three daughters were all taken to Young Master Feng, then sold off to Xing Hua

brothel.

To offend Young Master Feng was to bid farewell to your wife and forfeit your children. This was a forbidden action that he would never do.

Feng Feiyun lamented in his mind. It seemed like this body in the past had committed so many grave sins; in the eyes of these people, he was no different from a demon. However, he then recalled certain memories in his mind and saw the evil actions performed by Feng Feiyun without human remorse. He couldn't help but exclaim: "What a scum."

"You can leave now!"

Feng Feiyun said.

The boulder was lifted from Doctor Wang shoulders; he kept thanking the young master, and then he quickly ran away.

Yuer, in her tattered clothings, secretly saw everything. Her dark eyes blinked repeatedly, and she wondered what the evil younger master was planning. Why did he save grandpa?

Tilting her head and contemplated the events, Feng Feiyun was already in front of her. She lost her wit and quickly jumped back while screaming:

"You, what do you want?"

Xiao Yuer weakly took another two steps back, and her back was to the wall.

Feng Feiyun took a careful look at her, slowly walked towards her. He noticed her tattered clothings; one could catch a glimpse of the soft and slender body underneath.

Chapter 3 : Holy Saint Treasure (2)

She was truly a sproutling, beautiful woman. Especially, the pair of “small white rabbits” were very tempting.

Feng Feiyun recalled the image and he felt a bit faint from how dazzling it was.

“Cough, cough, do you need me to take responsibility?”

Feng Feiyun paused for a second, and he then unpredictably asked these words.

Feng Feiyun did not truly want to possess her, but he wanted to be accountable for his actions. He knew that women were conservative and highly valued their purity. If he saw her whole body, he needed to be responsible for her.

However, if she did not want it, then he would not even touch her finger. This was his basic moral code.

This was the biggest difference between the old Feng(Wind) Feiyun and the new Feng(Phoenix) Feiyun.

(TL Note: Both Feng are identical when translated to English. However, they sound different in Chinese with an additional accent mark. One means wind and the other phoenix.)

“No need… no need…”

In the whole Spirit State City, no girl would dare to ask for Young Master Feng to take responsibility.

The girls that were ravaged by him in the past would have been considered fortunate if they weren’t sold to the brothel. They all avoided him, afraid that he would do it again. No one dared to ask for him to take responsibility.

Xiao Yuer lightly bit her lips and stared at Feng Feiyun. Her hand lightly rubbed the red handprint on her cheek; it still seemed to be sore.

This handprint was from Feng Feiyun; she was still very scared of him.

“Does it still hurt?”

Feng Feiyun asked softly.

“It hurts!”

Xiao Yuer didn’t dare to look into his eyes. She felt like the current Feng Feiyun was a completely different person. She had this feeling that he wouldn’t hit her again.

“Today… I’m truly sorry. In the future, if you have any problems, you can come to the Feng’s office to find me. “
(TL: Imperial Chinese call the big houses of important family “government office” because most big house owners were involved in the government.)

With that, Feng Feiyun walked away. The two servants naturally hurried to follow like two dogs following their master.

“He… He just left, he really just spared me like that…”

A while later, Xiao Yuer finally closed her tiny lips. She stared at Feng Feiyun’s shadow, and she felt something in her heart that was previously missing. Her fingers were toying with her hair, her feelings had not calm down.

“Is young master ill now?”

Her heart couldn’t calm down; she believed that Young Master Feng would come back and abduct her again. She stood there for an hour before seeing that Feng Feiyun didn’t return. She sighed and then ran to take care of her grandfather.

***

It was currently night time, but Spirit State City was still the same. Horse carriages were still bustling on the streets; the background was vibrant and loud; and the street was filled with the sound of people moving around, filled with the chants of street vendors.

The girls in the brothel were wearing colorful and extravagant dresses; they were soliciting new customers. A tall man from a tribe in Xian Jiang was controlling a big ox with a big carriage behind its back. The blacksmith shop had a little boy with a black battle sabre in his hand, yelling loudly; the city felt alive.

Feng Feiyun, with his hands elegantly behind his back, quietly strolled through the ancient street. In his mind, he couldn't stop thinking about why he had come back to life while fusing with the soul of a mortal.

Did the Spirit Vessel travel through the fabric of space and time?

This was a blue ship with an ancient design – similar to a ghost ship – with an unfortunate breath of vicissitude. Feng Feiyun, at that moment, was only able to stand still in fear; he was immediately taken by the Spirit Vessel to this current body.

It was indeed the Spirit Vessel that brought his soul to this place. Then where did the Spirit Vessel go?

Feng Feiyun opened his right palm and there was a faint shadow of a ship, about an inch long. It was too blurry to see without heavy concentration.

It is very strange; it was as if it was a tattoo of the spirit boat. To merge with the body would require a treasure of Holy Saint rank in the legends.

Even the first of the eighteen spirit treasures would not be able to merge with the body; only a Holy Saint treasure in the legends would be able to reach this stage.

Feng Feiyun, in his past life, was the Patriarch of the Demon Phoenix Race. His cultivation had reached the ninth level of Heaven Emergence, but he was still one step away from reaching the Holy Saint level. He also had never seen a Holy Saint treasure.

He was already undefeated in his past life; a first class peerless master. However, when he reached the ninth level of Heaven Emergence, he felt that Holy Saints did exist in this world. When they reached this stage, however, they all went into secluded isolation and never went outside.

This was why he was considered the strongest in the immortal world, at least, only in appearance. Behind the scene were numerous ancient Holy Saint masters; they were strong to the point of being unstoppable. Even if they were separated by many million miles, they could still kill Feng Feiyun with a single finger.

"If this Spirit Vessel is indeed a Holy Saint Treasure, then it proves that saints

do exist.”

In his past, he speculated the existence of saints, but it was not definite. Now, with the addition of the Spirit Vessel, Feng Feiyun had the utmost confidence that saints do live in this world.

He became ecstatic; maybe he could use this Spirit Vessel to eventually reach the Holy Saint level. Once he reached this stage; then he would successfully jump out of the mortal world to truly become an immortal in both spirit and soul.

“Thump!”

Feng Feiyun accidentally stepped on a stone from being too excited and he almost fell flat to the ground.

His body now was too weak and small. He was drowned in decadence, so he was weaker than an average person. There was no trace of cultivation energy inside him; plus, his meridians were blocked. His muscles were weak, and his skeletal structure was poor. The old Young Master Feng was not fit for cultivation; he would even be limited when practicing regular martial arts.

However, to the current Feng Feiyun, this matter was not impossible.

If he did not want to conform to mediocrity, then he must once again embark on the road of cultivation; the road he must take in order to crown himself as the a tyrant once again. However, first, he must improve his body constitution.

Chapter 4 : A Discussion Regarding Soldiers

“The human physique cannot be compared to a phoenix’s body. The phoenix, as a fetus, already had spirit energy. Once it is born, it already had the strength to burn the sky and torch the ocean. One flap of the wings can destroy a large mountain. As for a human, one must start off with a solid foundation before he can begin the cultivation path.”

“Currently, I am no longer the sect master of the royal phoenix race; now, I am only a regular human being. If I want to change my physique, I have to start training the “Immortal Phoenix Physique.” Once the grand completion is achieved, I can live for ninety-thousand years. Even after death, my body will not decay.”

“The biggest advantage of the “Immortal Phoenix Physique” is that it can change the innate constitution of a human, making it more powerful and refined.”

Unfortunately, the “Immortal Phoenix Physique” was very difficult to cultivate; even Feng Fei Yun, in his past life, with the body of a phoenix as a base and the ninth level of Heaven’s Emergence, couldn’t reach grand completion. It was an accurate reflection of the degree of challenge it was to cultivate.

In the present, Feng Fei Yun could only start from scratch, once again, step by step on the road of torturous cultivation. It was the only way to survive, for this world was a place where the strong bullied the weak; if one doesn’t want to be eaten alive, then he has to be the strongest.

In his mind, Shui Yue Ting’s beautiful figure emerged again. Now, she was a goddess among the Saints, but he was only a weak, humbled mortal.

If another meeting were to occur, she would not recognize the current Feng Fei Yun, for her pride wouldn’t allow her to even glance at a tiny and ordinary human.

With this thought, Feng Fei Yun stopped in his tracks. He took a look at the strange pedestrians around him and saw that they all had black hair, black eyes,

and yellow skin. These weren't demons in human form, but they were actually humans.

Feng Fei Yun had always cultivated in isolation in the depths of the Phoenix Mountain, so his knowledge of the human world was non-existent.

As for the foreign architectural style, he appreciated the antiquitic aura. The wooden balcony and the roof cornices decorated with engravings of birds. Each of the houses were a unique work of art.

The cultural atmosphere was strange to Feng Fei Yun as well, stimulating his curiosity. His mind was filled with questions, he mumbled: "It seems like the Spirit Vessel had brought me to the other end of the world or a different world completely."

His current location was at the Spirit State city. In the span of a few thousand miles, Spirit State city was the oldest and biggest city. It oversaw the surrounding towns, and it had over ten million inhabitants.

Spirit State city was only an average ancient city within the Jin Dynasty. From Feng Fei Yun's knowledge, the Jin Dynasty was a whole world; it was extremely vast without boundaries. There were at least ten thousand cities that resembled the size of Spirit State city.

As for what was outside of the Jin kingdom, he did not know. A normal human's knowledge was naturally limited.

"This young master Feng was a person who only plays around, awaiting his own death. His knowledge was too little; nine parts of ten are related to women, and the remaining part is related to drinking and partying. I am the dignified Patriarch of the Demon Phoenix Race; why did my soul fuse with such a scum?"

"Ugh, what is the point of complaining? This guy is me now. I will have to accept my fate."

Feng Fei Yun reluctantly accepted his situation with a sigh.

If he wanted to quickly adapt to the new environment, he had to widen his knowledge. He would have to know this world before he could be adapt to it.

"The library in the Feng's mansion has a world map and other geographic

findings; I can go take a look at them."

Feng Fei Yun changed his direction back towards Feng's mansion and increased his pace.

Feng Fei Yun's background was quite extraordinary. His father was the governor of Spirit State city. He was in charge of not only the ten millions people in the city but also the dozen surrounding counties. Each year, officials everywhere entered Spirit State city to bribe him with treasures and money.

One could say that Feng Fei Yun's father was the king of this corner, reigning over the surrounding thousand miles and millions of citizens.

He was the only son of the governor; thus, no matter how many maidens he had ruined, no one dared to say anything. Even when someone refused to accept the unfairness, they were arrested and beaten to death by the guards. To not obey the young master was the same as not obeying the governor.

Feng Fei Yun's house was the Feng mansion, and it was the governor's office of Spirit State city. Surrounded with magnificent decorated pillars, high walls with many gardens, and nine entrances and nine exits, along with five hundred servants and maids; it was almost an imperial palace.

Even though Feng Fei Yun was the second generation's master without any talents in martial arts or literature, his dad, Feng Wan Peng, was an exceptional character well versed in both fighting and the arts.

Twenty years ago, Feng Wan Peng was third place in the Jin Dynasty's annual literary competition. He was well versed in literary work, thus, the library of the Feng mansion collected more than one hundred thousand books including ancient literature, martial arts manuals, strange information, geographical history, and Buddha scriptures…

Feng Fei Yun did not like reading since he was young; he didn't even know all of the characters.

This was his first time being in the library's pavilion. In front of his eyes were ancient books, writings on bamboo strips, and even pretty copies rewritten by human hands. His heart was filled with excitement, wondering why he had never went to such a place before.

“Young master, the master had said to not let you into the library. If you ruin his collection, the master will be thunderously furious; then everyone will have to suffer from his wrath.”

“Young master, you cannot read any of the books here! It is not too late to get out! Otherwise once the master finds out, we will all be clubbed to death.”

Four pretty young maids in charge of monitoring the library surrounded him. All of them were wearing pretty cloth robes decorated with clouds. Their ages ranged from sixteen to twenty, and their faces resembled pretty flowers; their skin was silky smooth. All were young and beautiful girls.

The girls were begging Feng Fei Yun as if they thought he was going to burn down the whole library. Although they acted respectfully toward Feng Fei Yun, inside, they looked down upon him. He was only an idiot without any talents in literature or martial arts. If his dad was not the governor, then he wouldn’t even be comparable to a beggar.

Young master Feng was illiterate before, but the present was not the same as the past. Although he was not an extreme expert in literature, having lived for one thousand years, his accumulation of knowledge was frighteningly large; it was not something mortals that could only live for dozens of years could compare to.

“So as long as I can read, can stay here?”

Feng Fei Yun was very observant, he saw the contempt in the maiden’s eyes.

“If the young master can really read, the lord would be ecstatic. Of course, then, you can stay here as long as you want… Except right now, you can’t even write your own name…”

The pretty faces of the four maidens laughed.

Feng Fei Yun randomly picked an ancient book with a hard cover; outside it, there were three words written in a strong and powerful manner. He was glad to see these letters, although there were some differences compared to his previous life, they were similar enough for him to understand.

Literature was the first sign of culture. Each world had their own unique cultures, and this was why their written systems were different. If there were

similarities in the written language, then it meant that his past world and this one was still within the same sphere.

Feng Fei Yun could breath easier now; it seemed like Spirit State city was still in the same world as his old one even if it was in a different corner. Sooner or later, he could meet his old friends and enemies again.

”Regarding Soldiers.”

“Soldiers deaths are graceful. They are chess pieces on the battlefield, placed in particular formations. It is the job of the commander to lead and give effective commands…”

Feng Fei Yun opened the book in his hand and started to recite it loudly while nodding his head as if he was absorbing and appreciating the content. He understood the importance of these profound military writings from past sages; there were much wisdom to be departed with from it outside of just combat and war.

For example, if a formation was properly executed by a great general, its effects would be greatly amplified. As for another, even with the lowest of soldiers; if one could utilize them correctly, they could even defeat a great expert.

“Regarding soldiers: one must emphasize the soldiers above all else; they must travel together as a unit with a clear direction. Only then, will an army become undefeated in battles after battles.”

The four beautiful maids stared widely at Feng Fei Yun with their eyes. They were at a loss for words; they were surprised to the point of forgetting to inhale, this was truly a strange phenomenon.

This young master Feng, outside of knowing how to play with women, still knew these words?

This young master Feng, a person like him, could read “Regarding Soldiers”?

The four were shocked for a moment the heavily ran outside the pavilion and clamored:

“Young master Feng can read now, young master Feng can read now!!”

“Oh dear heavens! Young master Feng is so formidable! of course he, naturally, can learn how to read!”

“Go bring this news to the master now, hurry, hurry!”

***

Feng’s mansion became chaotic; all of the servants and maids were in hysteria from the news. It was even more exciting and hectic than the New Year’s holiday.

Feng Fei Yun couldn’t stop himself from smiling. It was only knowing a few words, was it worth causing such a commotion? If he was to completely memorize some ancient scrolls, wouldn’t that scare some people to death?

Putting “Regarding Soldiers” back to the shelf and closing the door to the library, the room regained its original tranquility.

Feng Fei Yun read a book containing geographic findings from the great sages that had tread the earth.

”The Five Kingdoms Atlas.”

”A Geographic Lecture on the Jin Dynasty.”

”World’s Outlook.”

After finishing these books, Feng Fei Yun had a better understanding of this world. The Jin Dynasty had been established for six thousand years. The absolute royal power and strong heritage of the rulers could not be underestimated. From north to south was a distance of forty-eight thousand miles; east to west spanned seventy-four thousand miles. Its total populace exceeded one hundred billion.

This was an enormous human kingdom. A dynasty that had lasted steadily for six thousand years implied that its inner and hidden strength were outside the realm of imagination. Such a dynasty would contain many powerful sects, royals, and different families. In the end, even the governor of the Spirit State city was a minor official in the grand scheme of things.

Alongside the Jin Dynasty were four other dynasties. Their areas and populations were not lower than the Jin Dynasty; all five, together, were referred

to as the “Five Kingdoms.” Surrounding these five kingdoms were other smaller countries, numbering in the hundreds. All of them were tributaries to the five kingdoms, and their populations were only around a few million.

However, according to the “World’s Outlook” book, even the Five Kingdoms were only a small corner of the continent. There were few records regarding what was outside of the Five Kingdoms; there were only vague concepts of the beyonds.

“This world is too vast; Spirit State city is but a drop of water in the sea; a grain of sand in the desert.”

“Seems like, right now, my only choice is to cultivate. As long as I become stronger, then naturally, I will be able to expand my horizons and step onto the world stage, to re-embark on the road towards immortality, and, to once again, stand at the pinnacle of the world.”

Feng Fei Yun returned the books to their original shelves. The old Feng(Phoenix) Fei Yun had died. From now on, everything in my past was now unrelated to me.

“I am Feng(Wind) Fei Yun, the young master of the Feng family, the most evil, wealthy son of Spirit State city who is feared by everyone.”

Chapter 5 : Amazing, actually learned how to read

“Click clack click clack.”

Outside of the library pavilion were heavy footsteps; then the dragon engraved doors were pushed open.

A grey haired housekeeper came in from the outside; despite his old age, each of his steps were steady and did not leave a trace of dust on the ground. The gap in between his eyebrows was narrow, exuding a cold aura similar to the light of an unsheathing sword. His deep eyes were brighter and sharper when they were compared to a younger man.

As he saw Feng Feiyun, he cracked a big smile that showed all of the wrinkles on his forehead. He excitedly grabbed Feng Feiyun’s hand and clamored:

“Young master! Young master! All of the little girls said that you could read; is this true? This is the truth?”

He repeatedly asked with eyes filled with expectations.

The old man carried a worried expression with a wavering heart. He hoped that Feng Feiyun had grown up, but he was also afraid to hear the answer he didn’t want to hear, which would ruin his excitement.

“Grandpa Liu, your age is very high now, and you need a lot of rest. The servants and maids… *sigh*… to bother you with such an insignificant matter. They truly are too insensible.”

Feng Feiyun carefully held Grandpa Liu’s hands.

Housekeeper Liu was the housekeeper from Feng Feiyun’s mother’s side. He was part of the dowry for their marriage. After the death of Feng Feiyun’s mother, Housekeeper Liu was like a grandfather to him; he took care of Feng Feiyun’s every need.

Feng Feiyun’s mother died when he was only one year old; she died of an unknown illness. He actually wasn’t even positive that she had died of an illness because the affair was told to him by his dad, Feng Wanpeng.

At that time, Feng Feiyun was too young to remember. His impression of his mother was very vague; he only knew that she was very pretty and gentle, and there was no other girl in the world who was as gentle as she was.

In Feng Feiyun's memories, his mother was only an incomplete shadow. His father was always busy with tasks, and their meetings had only resulted in scoldings and beatings. Only the old man in front of him had shown him any warm affections.

Housekeeper Liu was utterly loyal to Feng Feiyun's mother. After her death, he considered Feng Feiyun to be his new master, and he acted in a manner befitting a servant that would always take care of Feng Feiyun.

Although Feng Feiyun was a tyrant outside; however, he was truly respectful towards Housekeeper Liu, and he treated him like a real elder.

This Housekeeper Liu was not a normal person, but one that had cultivated. When he held Housekeeper Liu's hand, he felt a strong qi rotating within the body of the old man. If he garnered all of his qi, then the destructive force would reach multiple thousands of pounds. One punch would turn a tiger into a pool of blood; he was definitely not a normal human.

As a phoenix in his past life, his soul still contained the phoenix's soul which was why his spiritual senses were high. Even a strand of qi could not be hidden from him.

Housekeeper Liu had definitely cultivated an immortal style. Even though his body was seemingly elderly, his muscles and bones were filled with radiant life and youthful auras.

This was the first cultivator Feng Feiyun had seen since his reincarnation; in the mortal world, it could be considered to be very high. Judging from his level, he would easily live past the age of one hundred and fifty.

If a housekeeper was this formidable, then he couldn't imagine the depths of his mother's household. This was definitely not a normal family; it had to be a powerful family of cultivators.

Housekeeper Liu lamented:

"This is not a small matter; if the young miss below the Yellow Springs was to

find out, she would be ecstatic.”

The young miss refered to by Housekeeper Liu must be Feng Feiyun’s mother. When he said these words, his eyes contained a hidden flash of strange thought. It was quickly retracted by him, but Feng Feiyun had noticed it.

Feng Feiyun committed atrocities outside, no one in the Spirit State city was ignorant of this fact. Housekeeper Liu, of course, was aware of it as well; however, he had not left the mansion in the last few years. He definitely wanted to turn a blind eye to it, and he had no expectations for Feng Feiyun. However, today, when he suddenly heard that Feng Feiyun could read, and a hard book like “Regarding Soldiers” at that, the originally disappointed Housekeeper Liu saw a hint of hope. If Feng Feiyun could straighten up to become an adult, then he wouldn’t be so ashamed for failing the young miss’ request.

“If my mother was indeed watching me from the Yellow Springs, she should start praying for me to find a pretty and talented wife to bear her many grandchildren.”

Feng Feiyun jokingly said.

Housekeeper Liu’s eyes narrowed; if they could actually find Feng Feiyun a talented woman, one that could reign and watch over him, maybe he would become someone worthwhile, even if it was a little late.

Men after marriage always grew up quickly.

The more Housekeeper Liu thought about it, the more sense it made to him. Feng Feiyun, this little bastard lacked proper discipline and scolding, and this was why he turned out this way. It seems like we must find him a proper marriage; a wife that can control him.

In his mind flashed the pictures of many great candidates. They have to be beautiful as well as courageously strong in order to discipline and repress the playboy Feng Feiyun. Among the list was the Goddess of Death, cultivators of proper powerful sects, female monks from a convent, and even the best lady from the most notorious brothel…
(TL: Some of the highest valued girls from brothels do not sell their bodies, but their social skills)

Feng Feiyun didn’t know that his silly joke made Housekeeper Liu harbor some strange thoughts in his mind. He would be extremely regretful if he knew about the candidates that Housekeeper Liu was thinking of.

“Come on! Come on! Your father was originally on patrol in the city’s military encampment. He heard about the news and quickly returned. Now, he is waiting for you in the main lobby.”

Housekeeper Liu definitely had an evil plan; this could be known by the strange smile that was on his face. He led Feng Feiyun to the main lobby.

Within Feng Feiyun’s memories, Feng Wanpeng was a stoic man with a strong body. His emotions were always hidden underneath his iron face; it was as if he had never laughed or cried before.

Young Master Feng was an evil boss in Spirit State city; however, in front of Feng Wanpeng, he was still deathly afraid. When meeting his father, it was akin to a mouse meeting a cat; his whole body shook in fear. It was rightfully so because his father hated his cowardly demeanor; he had always beaten him up.

Right now, Feng Wanpeng was situated in the chair of the house in the main lobby. He appeared to be around the age of thirty, wearing a silky white robe beneath his armor. His heroic eyes were matched well by his well trimmed beard.

He was also a refined man, placing third in the nation in the past. Not only that, he was diligent in his martial arts practice as well; he even learned some cultivational techniques. Although it was little, he was still stronger than the normal man by at least ten times. One versus one thousand on the mortal battlefield would not be a stretch for his abilities; he was completely eligible to be named as a master that was reigning over one corner of the Jin kingdom.

He slowly sipped his tea under the flashing candles. When he had heard that Feng Feiyun had learned how to read, he immediately rode home on his horse to return without breaks. He didn’t even have time to take off his armor; his head was still dusty from the journey.

He couldn’t appreciate his tea because his focus was on Feng Feiyun; he calmly asked:

“I heard that you can read now? Is this true?”

Feng Wanpeng naturally knew the character of his son more than anyone else, so his expectations were not high.

However, in the end, Feng Feiyun was still his only son; if this little bastard could repent, he would spare no cost for molding him into a respectable person.

His newly found literacy, if true, would be considered a big improvement.

“In my free time, I started to learn different words; it seems like reading is not an issue any longer.”

Feiyun responded without fear; it was a response that exuded pride in a respectful manner.

Of course, these words was only an excuse; he couldn’t tell Feng Wanpeng that he had taken over his real son’s soul and that he could easily write immortal manuals, let alone reading mortal manuals. If his father knew the truth, he would most likely considered Feiyun as a demon and annihilate him.

Feng Wanpeng was surprised; his eyes narrowed at the sight of the new, confident Feng Yun Fei, and he thought inside:

“This little bastard. Normally when he sees me, he would be scared to death, and he would immediately kneel on the ground. He wouldn’t even be able to form one coherent sentence. However, today, he could casually stand in front of me and clearly respond? Did his brain finally start working?”

His heart was happy for a moment, but his expression didn’t change. He placed his tea back on the table and said:

“I heard that you have read “Regarding Soldiers”. What did you think about it?”

Before, Feng Feiyun was only flipping a few pages. Truthfully, he didn’t have any deep understanding regarding the book.

In the Jin Dynasty, if one wished to become renowned, he had to join the military, destroy demons and enemies of the court, and obtain many war achievements to become an established general. A general with an army of a million troops was definitely stronger than an official in the court or even a royal noble.

Even though the Jin Dynasty was a mortal country, it did not lack cultivators. There were many great families and sects that possessed ancient cultivation manuals. There were many geniuses that were successful with their practice and were able to fly in the sky and traverse the earth; to call the rain and move the wind.

Even though it was only a mortal country, there were countless formidable experts. However, the experts generally did not know militaristic strategies and formations.

There were many fighting experts, but none of them were fit to be commanders!

Feng Wanpeng knew that Feng Feiyun was not suitable for cultivation; however, if the little bastard could achieve an acceptable understanding of militaristic strategies to become a commander, he could still become a great person. Perhaps he could eventually even surpass Wanpeng in ranking.

Of course, these were all speculations. No one knew if he had the qualification to become a commander just from learning how to read.

He was a shameless person who only knew how to drown in lust and women; how much knowledge could he have? Feng Wanpeng thought he got overzealous and overrated his son. His heart lost its excitement, and his expectations were gone. He wanted to avoid the big disappointment after having a big expectation.

Chapter 6 : Immortal Phoenix Physique

The book “Regarding Soldiers” had been published for many ages. Many sages and talented strategists had never stopped researching and adding information to it, making it timeless and applicable on the battlefield. The contents of the book included military strategies as well as formations and how to set them up.

It was studied by many intelligent students; however, because everyone had a different aptitude, they learned different things from the book. Some learned the intricacies in military strategies, others learned how to create magical formations that could form a deadly spell with the power to shake the heavens and earth.

Some of the most powerful formations listed in the book were: Ten Thousand Golems, Demonic Fog Forest, Eight Diagrams Four Beasts formation… These deadly formations were researched by the older generations. After many thousands of years of geographic and celestial findings, these formations have only become more powerful.

Feng Feiyun didn’t really know how to answer; he thought he should have kept his mouth shut so that he wouldn’t have to answer this damn question.

However, after seeing Housekeeper Liu and Feng Wanpeng’s eager eyes, Feng Feiyun’s heart was moved with an indescribable feeling. It was telling him that he shouldn’t let the ones that truly care about him be disappointed.

Only effort and perseveration will be acceptable!

Feng Feiyun elegantly fixed his sleeves, pondered for a moment and then spoke:

“Regarding Soldiers” is indeed ideologically profound. Its careful and rigorous logics are timeless and have been proven throughout the years. It speaks on the many variables of war including the psychological factor, basic morale management, the importance of the common soldiers, and the commanders. One can say that “Regarding Soldiers” has a great application for military battles as well as proper cultivation of the troops during war. The excellence of the book

is from how it deals with the humanity factor, establishing trust and comradery between the soldiers and commanders; killing and sieging are only secondaries."

Feng Feiyun was in a trance, his hands motioned as if he was observing an actual battle between two armies.

"How to maneuver one's troop, how to siege and defend, how to utilize one's given advantages or disadvantages, and how to plan the correct formations are all part of the book. A commander should be versed in all of the aforementioned information in order to be effective."

Feng Feiyun had the aura of a great general as he was calmly explaining the logics behind the book in great detail.

At this moment, both Feng Wanpeng and Housekeeper Liu were completely frightened. With their mouths opened, they tried to wipe the dust off their eyes to see if Feng Feiyun was an impostor.

Even the maid standing by the door was terrified, and she nearly fell to the floor. Her big eyes were filled with admiration for the young master.

They asked themselves:

"Is this not Young Master Feng? An illiterate fool with no talents? This is the young master that couldn't control his words or actions?"

Housekeeper Liu was especially touched; his tears dripped down his face:

"Master… Look at the young master! He still has a promising future!! He will not be a mediocre person without a goal, and he will be a great general one day. If the young miss knew about this, she would be so happy."

Feng Wanpeng was more composed than Housekeeper Liu, but he still felt strong emotions. He uncontrollably slammed the table and thought:

"Maybe the azure heaven still has eyes for me. This boy who was always afraid of my presence; if he could drop his bad habits and train rigorously without fear of hardship, maybe he could be historically renowned in the future."

Feng Wanpeng once again contained his excitement and did not express it outwardly; his calm face continued his question:

"You said winning the hearts of your troops is the main point while killing and

siege were only second, can you explain this logic to me?”

“What actually drives a war is the soldier’s beliefs and morale on both sides. To finish a war without battle by winning or crushing the hearts of the combatants; this is the true strategy.”

Feng Feiyun replied.

Feng Wanpeng again questioned:

“In war, what is the most important factor?”

Feng Feiyun had no experience in militaristic combats, and he didn’t know the right answer for this question. He contemplated for a bit and then responded:

“Fortune.”

“Fortune.” Feng Wanpeng’s brows furrowed in thought for a moment, then he exploded with laughter:

“A good fortune! You are not wrong! When in battle, if fortune is not on your side, then even with a million troops you will surely fail. Fortune! Fate! Inevitability!”

This was the first time Feng Feiyun had heard his father’s laughter.

Even though this answer was not completely correct, Feng Wanpeng was still satisfied with the simple, yet profound, answer. However, ultimately, who knew if this was just a sudden flash of brilliance. Who was to say that he wouldn’t go back to playing with the maids in the next few days?

Feng Wanpeng stated:

“Even though your view regarding the military has improved, but it is still nothing compared to your older brother. Housekeeper Liu, tomorrow, go and invite adviser Ge to our home. Tomorrow, I want adviser Ge to start teaching him the art of war!”

Housekeeper Liu was ecstatic. Adviser Ge, in Spirit State City was considered an accomplished military adviser. If the master wanted him to teach young master; it showed the master had some confidence and expectation of Young Master Feng from now on.

The Jin Dynasty had always used force to rule the kingdom. There were numerous battles and revolts inside the kingdom; if one was gifted at the art of war, then he could join the army; his future, at that time, could not be measured.

Housekeeper Liu happily followed the order. Even though he was old, his speed was impressively akin to the wind; his feet had never touched the ground, and he disappeared from the hallway.

Feng Feiyun followed him outside from the hallway to the inner courtyard. His mind was considering his future regarding cultivation and military career. He had to be the best; only, this goal would allow him to have the strongest motivation for success.

“First I have to make myself well known in the Jin Dynasty. A restart in cultivation might not necessarily be a bad thing; it will train and forge my willpower one more time. There is a chance that I can reach a higher apex than I was at before.”

Feng Feiyun smiled while looking at the shadow of the Spirit Vessel on his palm; he was eagerly awaiting his future.

His future was in the palm of his hand.

***

“Feiyun, I heard that you have learned how to read; is this true?”

Near the hallway, next to a small tranquil pond, a handsome young man appeared. He wore a simple yet elegant robe, and an iron white sword hung by his waist; his qi was flowing naturally in his body, showing his considerable inner strength. Each of his steps felt graceful, yet they contained a hidden white aura enumerating from his feet. He was like an immortal; any women would be attracted by him.

Young of age, powerful cultivation, handsome, and elegant! All of these descriptions applied to Feng Suiyu. His smile gave off an amicable feeling. He went and gently tapped on Feng Feiyun’s shoulder.

This was Feng Feiyun’s older brother; he was adopted by Feng Wanpeng.

If Feng Feiyun was an uneducated fool that was hated by everyone in Spirit State City, then Feng Suiyu was a famous young man known for his talent, cultivation, and his humble behavior toward everyone.

In people's eyes, Feng Feiyun and Feng Suiyu were the two sides of a coin. Some, behind their backs, had said that Feng Suiyu was the future young governor and cursed Feng Feiyun as a piece of trash, an animal, and a low life.

Feng Suiyu treated Feiyun extremely well; it was as if they were blood-related. The first time Feng Feiyun defiled a girl, it was Feng Suiyu who set it up and planned the whole ordeal.

The first time Feng Feiyun burned down the library was also with the help and planning of Feng Suiyu. Each time Feng Feiyun had committed an atrocity, Feng Suiyu had always dealt with the aftermath; he even begged Feng Wanpeng to forgive his younger brother.

The old Young Master Feng loved his older brother very much, but the current Feng Feiyun was sickened to the stomach by Suiyu's smile.

If it wasn't for Suiyu's guidance at a young age, then Feiyun wouldn't be in this current disposition where everyone in the city hated him.

Feng Suiyu was an adopted child; if he wanted to inherit the governor's position, his only option was to make Feng Feiyun ineligible by removing all hope of him from Feng Wanpeng.

Feng Suiyu only hurried here to examine the news of Feng Feiyun becoming a literate person. If Feiyun became a better person, then he would threaten his future ascension. Maybe he would need to exterminate Feiyun in the cradle, cutting the weed from its roots.

Feng Feiyun had a sudden thought, and he wanted to tease Suiyu a little bit; he shook his head and lamented:

"Literacy to me is such a monumental task; it was all news spread by the dog servants and maids. It shouldn't have reached father because he started asking me about it. Brother would know, I normally had never read a book before. I panicked when he asked me and I answered: "The Golden Lotus". I regretted this so much because it is a banned book! Oh! Of course father started scolding me."

(TL: Jin Ping Mei or The Golden Lotus is a renowned historical novel regarding sexual relations in ancient China)

Feng Suiyu couldn't help but laugh, he presumptuously thought in his mind: "An idiot will always be an idiot, I thought he really became literate. It seems like I have worried needlessly. Haha. He said "The Golden Lotus" in front of foster father; foster father must be even more disappointed in him now."

However, his face did not reveal any intention of ridicule, and he thoughtfully said:

"Feiyun, don't worry about it too much. I will help explain this to foster father for you."

"I really thank you, Brother."

Feiyun was touched with tears in his eyes. However, in his mind, he knew that Feng Suiyu was definitely not a good person. For him to explain anything positive to father would be a miracle; he would just use this chance to discredit me even more.

"We're closer than blood brothers. Such a small matter, not worth mentioning. I heard, recently, you are interested in old man Luo's granddaughter. Go find her and relax; you should forget the unhappy things."

Feng Suiyu voiced his concern.

"This is a great idea! Only brother truly understands me."

Feng Feiyun replied with a refreshed feeling and left afterwards.

Feng Suiyu saw how quickly Feiyun left. He cynically smiled and thought that this kid would, sooner or later, die on a woman's belly. He shook his head and went to the main lobby. He saw Feng Wanpeng sitting in the chair of the house and said:

"Foster father, regarding Feiyun…"

"You know about Feiyun's story?"

Feng Wanpeng's fingers gently played with the tea cup; his expression became a bit strange.

Feng Suiyu did not know Feng Wanpeng's current mood; however, he was certain that he became even more disappointed with Feng Feiyun, even to the point of despair.

Heh Heh! The more disappointed you are, the more advantageous it is for me!

He was ecstatic on the inside; outwardly, he sighed heavily, and he nodded his head:

"Feiyun, in the end, was still too young. Reading that book was indeed a bit inappropriate."

"No, I found it very fitting. Feng Feiyun the boy lacked discipline. Before, I didn't think that he could become anything worthwhile; however, if he could research these books more, I believe that there is still hope for him. Suiyu, regarding this area, you have to learn from him a little; read this type of books more. It will only help your future career path."

With a serious expression, Feng Wanpeng earnestly said.

Feng Suiyu was stunned! Why would a book like "The Golden Lotus" be nothing but good for his career? Is foster father trying to teach me a secret regarding the court? But… "The Golden Lotus"… How could it relate to administration in any way? My experience must not be enough. I was unable see the intricacies or the long term implications of his words.

Although Feng Suiyu's heart was filled with questions, he didn't dare to ask. He did, however, respectfully say:

"Your advice is wise; Suiyu will research more on the topic. I will not let foster father become disappointed."

Feng Wanpeng pleasingly nodded his head.

***

Of course, Feng Feiyun didn't actually seek out Xiao Yuer before, because it was only a ruse to trick Feng Suiyu.

The most important thing right now was to cultivate the "Immortal Phoenix Physique". The most crucial thing to him right now was cultivation; the art of war was only secondary.

If one's cultivation was absolutely high, reaching the apex, one punch could destroy millions of soldiers. The art of war, in front of absolute power, was not worth mentioning. The current Feng Feiyun could not even defeat an average man; if someone as talented as Feng Suiyu wanted to kill him, he wouldn't have the strength to defend himself. This was another reason why he was in such a rush to cultivate.

Although his physique was not suitable for cultivation, the Immortal Phoenix Physique could improve one's constitution and innate body type; this would turn him into a cultivation genius.

The Immortal Phoenix Physique was divided into two stages, the first stage was "Blood Purification".

Blood was the source of life in a human's body, but it also contained many impurities; the higher the amount of impurities, the weaker the body would be.

The lower the grade of the blood, the weaker the body would be, too. Thus, if the blood purity and grade can increase, then the body would become stronger as well; the meridians will widen, the bones and marrows would become more intricate and tough.

The second stage was "Bone Refining"; this was also known as "Cultivating the Phoenix Bones."

A cultivator's aptitude depended on one's physique, and the physique's strength was determined by the skeletal structure. The bones were the foundation of a body that were needed to create an immortal physique.

Each time a phoenix bone was successfully cultivated, the body became one part stronger. Only when one had completed all nine hundred and ninety nine phoenix bones would his Immortal Phoenix Physique be considered to have reached grand completion, allowing him to live ninety thousand years.

In his past, Feng Feiyun had finished two hundred and six phoenix bones; his body was tougher than diamond, and the elements couldn't harm him. If he was able to reach grand completion, then Shui Yueting wouldn't have been able to kill him even with a sneak attack.

Once the grand completion level of the Immortal Phoenix Physique was

reached, then the owner could stand tall even among the ancient saints.

However, now, Feng Feiyun had to start over from the beginning. He started the first process “Blood Purification”.

It was divided into four steps.

The first step was to remove the impurities from the blood. Once the blood reached a color of crimson fire, it has been purified. The meridians would be wider after achieving the first step; additionally, the purified blood would allow for spirit energy to enumerate from it and change the original constitution of his body.

Reaching the early level of the Spirit Realm was also considered the first step in leaving the mortal realm.

Cultivators also had their own ranks; once they reached the highest stages, they would become saints and immortals.

The Spirit Realm was the first stage of cultivators, and was divided into early, intermediate, and peak.

In this stage, the body was able to produce its own spirit energy, and this was the distinguishing factor between a mortal and a cultivator.

To sum it up in a sentence, as long as the body was capable producing spirit energy, then even Feng Feiyun could escape his reputation of being an idiot and even become stronger than normal martial artists.

This was only the early level; the intermediate and peak levels of the Spirit Realm were considerably more terrifying. Above the Spirit Realm was the Immortal Foundation. Immortal Foundation cultivators were tyrants of their own regions.

Feng Feiyun had already cultivated the Immortal Phoenix Physique once, so he was already experienced with the process; his blood flow within his meridians was swift.

Under normal circumstances, the blood required three minutes to do a full rotation of the human body, but Feng Feiyun’s current flow was at two minutes per revolution. The impurities were extruded from his pores. After three hours,

the blood had revoluted one hundred and eighty times, and his body was filled with a dark layer of clay-like impurities.

“This is the first step towards 'Blood Purification,' but it is also the easiest. It should take three to five days for a grand completion.”

Feiyun opened his eyes and quickly calculated.

The warm sun light permeated from the window as time passed by quickly. Feng Feiyun didn’t sleep for a whole night, but he had no feeling of drowsiness. He commanded the servants to prepare hot water so he could wash away the dark impurities. A maid then put on a new silky white robe for him; he was rejuvenated and filled with energy.

A grand breakfast was already prepared. It consisted of a snow jelly mushroom soup, a bowl of bird nest with lotus seeds, a plate of buttered snowflake shortbread, and an appetizing lean meat dish.

Feiyun saw the food on the table and shook his head:

“Take it away, bring me one pound of buns and water.”

Because he was in the midst of purification, his food should be plain. Buns with water were the best combination.

The two servants thought to themselves that the young master had become so unpredictable; it was as if he was possessed. However, they didn’t dare to question his intention, so they immediately cleaned the food on the tables and brought him the buns and water.

“For lunch, prepare the same thing for me.”

Feiyun immediate ate the buns and drank his water. Afterwards, he went to the decorated mountain at the pond near the West Building; he stood on top of an isolated stone and gently threw a punch, then withdrew it.

This was the opening technique; he wanted to see how much his physique had improved.

“The meridians are widened twice the size as before, same as a talented mortal. The body is hardened by three parts, and strength is increased by double as well judging by that one punch.”

Although it was only one night, Feiyun's constitution, compared to before, was like the difference between heaven and earth.

In the cultivating world, the number one technique was definitely a physique training technique. However, to fully perfect the body, the Immortal Phoenix Physique alone was not sufficient. The body had to experience real combat and overcome many challenges in order to become more formidable day by day.

"Whoosh whoosh!"

Feiyun started to throw a series of punches. These were not part of any known technique; however, based on his own perception of the heavenly arts, they summed up the mysterious truths behind body refining. A total of only nine punches were thrown, and each punch represented a different spot of the body. Every fist that was thrown had the whole body structure behind it, and every bit of muscle and bone were activated. These actions were also like the flow of water and the drifting of the clouds; he became one with the heavenly nature, giving spectators a feeling of natural beauty.

Chapter 7 : Early Spirit Realm

“The young master isn’t playing around today, but he is practicing punches instead; how strange.”

“The punches don’t seem to be that impressive; there is no exerted pressure to them. However, it is hard to tell their trajectories due to the indescribable rhythm.”

“This is weird, could the young master’s technique actually be complex? Is it that one couldn’t imitate it even if they tried?”

Some of the servants started to imitate Feng Feiyun’s actions, however, they couldn’t perform the same natural flow. Each time their fist flew out, their whole body wailed in pain; they had no choice but to stop since they didn’t dare risk feeling the pain again.

The nine different fists of Feng Feiyun represented nine different hidden meanings; they looked simple outwardly, but in fact, they were enigmatic. Even if one could imitate the physical action, without being able to imitate the hidden meanings, he would only harm himself.

Feng Suiyu was on top of a balcony on the sixth floor of a distanced building; he was watching Feiyun practicing from afar, and his handsome expression became cold. In one hand, there was a book, and the other hand was busy knocking on the balcony’s stand. He was lost in his contemplation.

“Young Master, there is no need to worry; his fist techniques are just monkey plays. There will be no achievements resulting from it.”

An ugly servant standing behind Sui Yi smirked.

Suiyu shook his head, and seriously replied:

“They are not normal; something like this isn’t normal. I feel that there is something about him that is very different from before; it makes me uneasy.”

“Hehe, do you want me to go make mincemeat out of him? As to avoid the nightmare of a long night. “

(TL: Meaning longer the night, longer the nightmare so it is better to cut the sleep short)

A different servant said.

Suiyu glared at him with icy cold gaze, and exclaimed:

“Do you think foster father has truly given up on him? He is a very witty man; once he finds out even a single hint of fratricide, we would all be dead.”

“Unless there is no other choice, we will not touch Feng Feiyun. Also, Housekeeper Liu is by his side. The cultivation level of this man is unfathomable; with him by Feiyun’s side, unless I personally take action, nothing fruitful would come out of it.”

A servant spoke:

“Young Master has already reached the third level of the 'Vigorous Gale Method,' and your cultivation is at the peak of the Spirit Realm; you are capable of fighting ten experts at once, yet you still can’t beat that Old Man Liu?”

The “Vigorous Gale Method” is an incompleted cultivation manual that Feng Wanpeng passed to Feng Suiyu. His good aptitude allowed him to reach the third level only after a few years, and he was highly praised by Feng Wanpeng, many times.

Feng Wanpeng had been cultivating for thirty years, and he was only at the fifth level. However, this was enough for him to rule a whole city. Feng Suiyu reached the third level in just three years; his talents could only be higher than Wanpeng’s.

“Don’t underestimate Housekeeper Liu; his cultivation shouldn’t be lower than foster father.”

Feng Suiyu was a meticulous man; thus, he made sure his actions were made without mistakes. He contemplated and then asked:

“Feng Feiyun’s personality changed after last night, right? Who did he meet yesterday?”

The servant carefully answered:

“The little Xiao girl, Xiao Yuer. Yesterday there was a strange event, Feng

Feiyun himself asked for a doctor to take care of Old Man Luo; however, the miracle here is that he didn't touch the Xiao girl. What if Xiao Yuer made him repent, and she turned him into a good person?"

"Changed by a woman? A playboy repented?"

Feng Suiyu was amused by the thoughts and said:

"Interesting! Interesting!! You go find brother Wu; let him take care of this. If Feng Feiyun gently cares for a flower, then we'll find someone who does not care for flowers. Haha!"

"If Xiao Yuer meets Brother Wu, then it would be the flower that will be devastated with torn leaves."

The servant laughed pervertedly. His heart knew the type of person brother Wu was and the inevitable fate of Xiao Yuer.
(TL: The passage above revolves a Chinese saying symbolizing the woman as a flower so they're all maintaining this metaphor)

"Heh! A playboy repenting? It is not that easy."

Feng Suiyu calmed his evil intention and went back to read the book that was in his hand.

The cover of the book was: "The Golden Lotus."

***

During the next three days, Young Master Feng had not left the Feng's mansion. He was learning military strategies with his adviser during the day and Immortal Phoenix Physique during the night.

Today, Young Master Feng seemed to be a different person; many servants and maids did not know what had happened.

After three days of cultivation, the blood qi in Feng Feiyun's body became extremely abundant; the color became crimson fire, and the flow was even faster. His body was many times stronger than before.

"Bam!"

A strand of white blood was born in his vessel, and it poured into his diantian.

It didn’t stop spreading; it was like a lake connecting to the ocean. Each individual drop slowly spread themselves throughout his whole body.
(TL: Dantian is an area below the stomach, considered by most wuxia/xianxia to be the house for energy/cultivation)

This was the Spirit Realm!

“I have finally reached the first level of Blood Purification, and I have created my first spirit strand; right now, I could be considered to be in the early stage of the Spirit Realm.”

Blood Purification itself was divided into four stages:

The first stage was when the blood was pure with the color of crimson.

The second happened when the blood boiled with an obsidian color like black ink.

The third occurred when the blood formed its own consciousness, with radiating silver lights.

The fourth was the last. The blood becomes one with nature again, and its color would revert back to its natural state.

Feng Feiyun currently was at the first stage, and his blood was of the crimson color.

With the spirit qi inside his body, Feng Feiyun used this energy to stimulate the Spirit Vessel in his right palm.

However, it disappointed him to find that the faint image of the spirit boat didn’t have the slightest reaction. His energy was like a rock drowning in the ocean; there was not even a little ripple of reaction.

“It seems like I will need a monstrous amount of energy in order to activate the Spirit Vessel. A Holy Saint Treasure cannot be dealt with using normal common sense.”

Feng Feiyun wasn’t angry; if a light strand of spirit qi was enough to control the Spirit Vessel, that would be abnormal instead.

Because he was once again on the road of cultivation, he was in a merry mood. He slightly raised his finger and a white light flashed, creating a hole in the wall.

“Crack!”

Feng Feiyun used his hand to crush a white porcelain cup, turning it into white powder. At the same level of early Spirit Realm, with his experience, he would crush any equivalent opponents.

“Ha ha! Yin Gou, is the bath water ready?”

Feng Feiyun opened the door and commanded the servant nearby.

“It had been ready, Xiao Lan, Xiao Qing, go service the young master for his bath.”

After telling the maids, the servant named Yin Gou smiled and asked his master:

“Young Master, why are you in such a good mood today?”

The two maids brought the hot water from small buckets, and they poured their contents into a bigger wooden tub. Additionally, they added scented red flowers to the bath, and soon after, white steam filled the air.

“Heh. This is not for you to know. We will be going out later; I want to buy a decent weapon. Is there an armory in Spirit State City that has a high grade magical weapon?”

Feng Feiyun, at the early stage of spirit realm, had a lifting strength of a few hundred pounds. Therefore, in actual combat, a high grade magical weapon could increase his potency by quite a bit.

Yin Gou was ecstatic to hear this piece of news. They haven’t left the house for a while with their young master. Finally, Young Master Feng was in the mood to play today.

They could once again follow him from behind and use his notoriety to do whatever they want. To be a servant for Young Master Feng could be considered a prideful thing.

“”Honorable Young Master, there are three different weapon armories in Spirit State City; however, if you want the best, then there is only the Yin Gou Ward.”

Yin Gou replied.

“Why is it that only the Yin Gou Ward would have the best magical weapon?”

Feng Feiyun was relaxing in the bathtub with one of the maids rubbing his back.

“The Yin Gou Ward is very big, and their business is flourishing. It is owned by one of the great four clans of the Jin Dynasty, the Yin Gou Clan. There are around ten thousand branches throughout the kingdom and as long as one has enough money, you can even buy spirit weapons.”

“They are indeed impressive for them to even have spirit weapons for sale. It seems like the Yin Gou Clan is not so simple.”

Spirit weapons were a rare thing in the human kingdom. Even the lowest grade would be worth more than ten cities.

They were treasures that have their own consciousness and surpass the boundary of the mortal world. Normal treasures couldn’t compare to them.

The four great clans were all formidable, possessing hidden secrets. They possessed half of the political and economical power of the Jin Dynasty; they were truly four great monsters.

“Okay; let us go to the Yin Gou Ward.”

Feng Feiyun announced.

Chapter 8 : Crimson Dragon

Feng Feiyun was a romantic fourteen year old. Today, he was wearing a purple silk robe with his hair neatly tied behind his neck, and he had a paper fan in his hand; he revealed an unprecedented handsome look, like never before.

Feng Feiyun was already good looking and today, he was like a young scholar. After practicing the “Immortal Phoenix Physique”, his temperament and expression was brighter than the light; he was, in addition to all of this, accompanied by the air of a romantic wanderer.

Even his two servants, Feng Ping and Feng An, were dazed by his new look; they couldn’t see the resemblance to his normal self at all.

“Let us go! I am going to the Yin Gou Ward right now. What are you two waiting for? Hurry up and lead the way.”

Feng Feiyun loudly commanded.

The two servants, then, regained their wits, and they led the way.

The Yin Gou Ward was situated in the prosperous south side area in Spirit State City. It had seven floors, and it was made from wooden bricks decorated with dragon and phoenix carvings. It become a well known symbol of the city.

There were weapons, strange treasures, medicinal pills, armors, and anything that had to do with cultivation; this place had it. However, a regular person couldn’t buy anything here.

“Ehhh, isn’t this Young Master Feng? Which wind brought the great you here? Please come in, please come in!”

Zheng Dongliu was the manager of the Yin Gou Ward, and his age was over sixty. He knew a lot of people and with his sharp eyes, he immediately recognized Feng Feiyun.

Although his eyes wouldn’t be considered to be forged by heaven’s fire and the all seeing, but they were indeed knowledgeable and sensitive the moment it came to judging people.

It was Feng Feiyun's first time visiting the Yin Gou Ward, but his dad was the tyrant of Spirit State City; thus, he was already added to the important person list. This was a young master, so he needed to be well received.

Feng Feiyun, with the fan in his hand, gracefully walked into the Yin Gou Ward, and he said with a smile:

"The Yin Gou Ward's reputation is as it was mentioned; this is my first time here, but you have already recognized me."

"In this city, anyone who doesn't recognize you will have his business go downhill."

Zheng Dongliu led Feng Feiyun to an inner chamber where there was already a pot of tea brewing. He acted quite friendly and familiar with Feiyun.

Feiyun did not shy away from the warm welcome; he sat down, and he said:

"Your words are too much. Other people's business might go down, but the Yin Gou Ward is definitely not a part of this group."

Behind the ward was the great Yin Gou Clan, one of the four great clans in the Jin Dynasty. Normal people couldn't afford to offend them.

Feng Feiyun, of course, was not foolish enough to mess with the Yin Gou Clan; at least, he was not at the moment since he currently lacked the strength.

The moment Feiyun had entered the door, Zheng Dongliu had already started to observe this legendary young master very carefully; however, his impression of Feiyun, compared to his reputation, was greatly different.

This young master did not seem to be an idiot!

Zheng Dongliu smiled, and he then inquired:

"If you didn't have any business, you wouldn't have come here. What did you want to buy here at the Yin Gou Ward?"

"Weapons! I heard the Yin Gou Ward sold the best magical weapons."

Feng Feiyun replied.

Zheng Dongliu continued:

"Which do you want to buy? Weapons are categorized into twenty eight

different sections: sword, blade, staff, hook, rings…”

“The sabre!”

Feiyun said.

“Which one do you want? The sabre is also divided into thirty four different categories: Zhanma sabre, horse slaying sabre, butterfly sabre, tiger sabre…”

Zheng Dongliu was a shrewd merchant, and he was familiar with any merchandise; otherwise, he would not be the manager of the Yin Gou Ward.

“The heavy sabre!”

Feng Feiyun spoke.

Zheng Dongliu was surprised; this Young Master Feng looked like a person who was physically weak. Could he even hold a heavy sabre?

Even though his mind was questioning the choice, he didn’t want to bring his concern to light.

“The heavy sabre; the lightest is eighty nine pounds, and it is divided into three ranks: iron sabre, magical sabre, and spirit sabre. I trust that you wouldn’t find an iron sabre to be worthy of your status. Today, our Yin Gou Ward has two finely crafted magical heavy sabre, you can pick from them.”

Zheng Dongliu explained.

Weapons are divided into three categories: normal weapons, magical weapons, and spirit weapons.

The highest grade of normal weapons was made from common metals, and they could split iron ingots without damaging the blade.

However, even the lowest grade of magical weapons could easily slice through the best grade of normal weapons. they were made with a few special metals that were extremely valuable.

As for spirit weapons, they were exceedingly rare. Each of them was a heavenly weapon with the power to scare the heavens and shake the earth. Even if one was to trade ten mortal cities for them, no one would be willing. Right now, in all of Spirit State City, no one had one available. Maybe, in the Yin Gou Ward, they

could potentially be the only group to have one for sale.

Zheng Dongliu took Feiyun to the fifth level. The higher the level, the higher the grade of the weapon as well as the level of protection.

The first magical heavy sabre was brought by two bodyguards. Its blade was completely black and around one and a half meters long. It was half a palm thick, and on top of it, were animal engravings with an icy cold aura.

This was a true killing weapon; people couldn't help but shudder at the sight of it.

"The blade's name is Man Ya, and it weighs three hundred and forty two pounds. It is made from Dark Steel that is found in the bottom of the ocean. The whole blade has the ice element; once it slices off someone's neck, it can freeze the blood in the blink of an eye. Thus, even after killing someone, the blade will not be covered with blood."

Zheng Dongliu brought in a cup of water, and he poured it over the blade. A freezing noise filled the room, and they were no longer water drops the moment they reached the floor; the water was turned into ice.

"This blade's price is three thousand gold coins."

One gold coin was equal to one hundred silver coins, and one silver coin was worth one hundred bronze coins.

One gold coin was enough to feed a regular family for a year, so one could see that three thousand gold coins was a staggering sum; a grand fortune in the eyes of regular people.

"It is a good blade!"

Feng Feiyun clapped his hands, but he also shook his head and said:

"Unfortunately this blade is too big; is there one with a smaller body?"

Feng Feiyun didn't mention the price, showing that three thousand gold coins, to him, was not a large sum.

"Yes!"

Zheng Dongliu had the second blade brought out! This second blade was only

one meter long, and the body wasn't as thick. It had a crimson color with an ancient aura; one touch of the hand brought about a feeling of warmth.

The blade's body exuded a natural feeling while the edges themselves felt dull; it even had a hole in it. It, seemingly, was not made with a great attention to detail.

Zheng Dongliu sighed, and he said:

"This blade is named Crimson Dragon. The materials it is made of are special; from special examination, it was found to be a mix of nine different rare metals. Even though the length was not great for a heavy sabre, it reached the weight of two hundred and forty pounds; it is truly astonishing."

After seeing this blade, Feng Feiyun's eyes revealed a strange glimmer. He immediately stood up, caressing the blade with his finger. His heart was ecstatic, and his intuition was telling him that, even though the blade's external appearance is lacking, its absolute power was ten times over its counterpart.

He could feel the spirit energy moving within the blade; this feeling was very delicate. With the exception of him, no one else could feel this faint spirit energy.

"This is a spirit blade. Unfortunately, the blade was broken once, and all of the spirit energy had left its body; thus, no one else knew that it used to be a spirit weapon."

Feng Feiyun's finger lightly touched the broken part, and he made his decision.

Even though it is a broken spirit weapon, its power was incomparable to any normal magical weapons.

Feng Feiyun was silent, trying to hide his excitement. He removed his hands from the blade, and he asked:

"This blade suits me, Manager Zheng; how much do you wish to sell this blade for?"

"Five thousand gold coins."

Zheng Dongliu, of course, knew that this blade was abnormal, but he didn't know why. He announced such a high price, but he was not sure of it; he hesitantly looked at Feng Feiyun after naming the price.

This was a remnant of a spirit weapon, so its price would definitely be higher than fifty thousand gold coins. Feng Feiyun was laughing, internally, at Zheng Dongliu for not knowing the value of his own item, but he expressed an impatient expression and furrowed his brows:

“Manager Zheng, is this you trying to cut my throat with a price? Five thousand gold coins would be enough for me to play around with five thousand exceptional beauties. For one broken blade to be valued at five thousand coins, isn’t this just a robbery?”

Zheng Dongliu smiled:

“How much would be an appropriate price for you, Young Master Feng?”

“Three thousand gold coins.”

Feng Feiyun replied.

“Okay, so be it.”

Zheng Dongliu was seemingly afraid of Feng Feiyun leaving, and he immediately agreed with that proposition. His face grew a smile; three thousand gold coins, compared to his original expectation, was already double of what he wanted for it.

Seeing how quick Zheng Dongliu conceded, Feng Feiyun regretted setting the price to three thousand in his heart. It seemed like his given price was too high, but three thousand gold coins, to buy a broken spirit weapon, was still a great deal.

Zheng Dongliu was visibly happier than Feng Feiyun; he even gave him a magical steel scabbard for free, and he engraved it with detailed flowers showing its expensive price.

“Young Master Feng, do you need me to deliver this blade to your place?”

The Crimson Dragon Blade weighed two hundred and forty pounds; Zheng Dongliu automatically assumed that Feng Feiyun couldn’t hold it, so he asked the question.

“No need.”

After Feng Feiyun paid the amount owed, he carried the blade in his hand and

left the fifth floor.

Zheng Dongliu was frightened by this sight. After a while, he regained his composure and mumbled:

“Strange, how strange. The idiot in the legend turned out to be an expert. How interesting, how interesting. It seems like I’ll have to sell this information to Feng Sui Yu; it would fetch a good price.”

“Master, this is the blade you have chosen?”

The two servants outside of the Yin Gou Ward greeted Feng Feiyun.

“It is only a broken blade, nothing to behold.”

Feng Feiyun smilingly nodded, and he left to the outside.

Feng Ping and Feng An immediately chased after him, and they asked:

“Young master, where are we going?”

“Tea drinking!”

“The best tea house in Spirit State City is Zhu Jian pavilion, and the oldest one is the Jing Shui tea house. Which one do you want to go to?”

Feng Feiyun didn’t answer, and he only kept walking. He swiftly passed through the ancient street even though he had a two hundred forty pound sabre on his back. His steps were as fast as lightning, making the two servants behind him run out of breath.

Today, his cultivation has reached the early Spirit Realm stage. In his Dantian existed a strand of spirit energy forming the inception of a small river; this was considered the first door to the cultivation world. Feng Feiyun’s mood had never been better.

Crossing three big roads, Feng Feiyun reached a small desolate alley.

At the end of the alley was an old, open-door tea house, and its roof was made out of straws. There were five old tables and next to that, a slanted desk with a sign written by charcoal: “Tea.”

Feng Ping and Feng An were heavily breathing; they watched Feiyun from far away, and they noticed the old tea house. Their expressions were as if they had

just reached an understanding.

“The young master didn’t come here to drink tea; he came here for the little miss Xiao Yuer.”

Feng Ping devilishly smiled.

“Last time, the young master showed her mercy, so this time she can’t run away from the sun. Ha ha!”

Feng An also joined in with his evil laughs, causing a lot of commotion.

This tea house was where Old Man Luo and Xiao Yuer worked at!

Feng Feiyun, of course, wasn’t the same person who bullied both men and women, and he definitely wouldn’t ravage Xiao Yuer. He only came here to see Old Man Luo’s injuries. In the end, this poor old man and granddaughter were all alone, without any backing, and they were bullied by his servants; of course, he felt responsible.

Giving them a bit of money would make their lives a lot better.

Feng Feiyun’s eyes looked around and saw Xiao Yuer in the tea house. She was making tea with her petite figure, slim, like a neighbor’s little sister; the gentle wind blew her blue ribbons back and forth on her head, her silky black hair scattered straight down, like a waterfall, and the wind also brought the scent of tea to the rest of the street.

Chapter 9 : Two Evil Men

In the tea house, a sense of warmth radiated from a fire under a stove. On top of the stove, there were five boiling tea pots that had white smoke coming out of their top; this brought a strong scent of tea to the room.

Xiao Yuer was small in stature, so she was only a little bit taller than the stove. Wearing a worn out apron with her sleeves pulled back, she revealed two small, jade-like, hands; with these delicate hand, she took care of the customers while she made tea.

The small girl was very diligent; her forehead was filled with sweat, and her cute face was red from being next to the stove's fire.

"Xiao Yuer, Uncle Liu wants two cups of Mao Jian; how come they aren't ready? "
(TL: Mao Jian = Tippy tea)

Old Man Luo rushed Xiao Yu while he cleaned a table.

His head was still covered with bandages; however, because this was his livelihood, he had no choice but to ignore the pain and work.

"Coming! Coming! Two hot Mao Jian are coming right up!!"

Xiao Yuer brought two hot tea cups over, her fingers were red from the heat. She pinched her little ear, and she went back to the stove to continue working.

"Xiao Yu, little boss, checkout. How much money do I owe you?"

Someone teased.

"Two bronze coins; just leave it on the adjacent table! Grandpa go get the money!"

Although Xiao Yuer was busy, without rest, her smile never left her face; it was as if she didn't know what fatigue was.

Feng Feiyun was watching her, and he couldn't help but smile. He slowly walked to the tea house and sat down at a table, and he yelled:

“Xiao Yu, little boss, give me a cold cup of coarse tea!”

“Okay, one cup of…”

Xiao Yuer’s voice suddenly stopped; she quickly turned around and saw that the person sitting on the table was Feng Feiyun. She couldn’t help but shiver, and the teapot in her hands fell to the floor, breaking into pieces.

Why was it this evil man again?

The rest of the people in the tea shop were also staring at Feng Feiyun; it was like they were staring at a plague god.

“Oh heavens! It was only peaceful for three days. Young Master Feng is about to commit another evil deed!”

“Run, run!”

Everyone was extremely scared; they didn’t bother to try and finish their tea, and they all left the shop instantly. The lively shop quickly became desolate.

Only Old Man Luo and Xiao Yuer remained, due to fear, and they stood staring at Feng Feiyun with terror in their eyes.

“Damn your mother! Why are you afraid? Hurry up and bring tea to the young master. Do you think I wouldn’t destroy your tattered shop right now?”

Feng Ping, who was behind Feng Feiyun, roared thunderously with a fierce look on his face. Feng An was also pulling up his sleeves as if he was ready to beat someone up.

Xiao Yuer bit her lips, and she, with her eyes blinking a little, looked like a lost puppy; she pleaded:

“Young Master Feng, please don’t destroy this tea house. This is our livelihood; without it, we would surely die from hunger.”

Feng Feiyun stared at her pitiful state and in his heart, he was very amused; he replied:

“I want to drink the tea you make; for one cup of tea, you will earn one gold coin. Do you want this business?”

“One gold coin per cup?”

Xiao Yuer opened her eyes wide in disbelief because she couldn't believe Feiyun's words. One gold coin to her was like a fast step toward being a rich person; it was enough for them to live for a whole year.

Feng Feiyun wore a smile on his face, and he grabbed a bunch of golden coins from his pocket; each of them weighing around one or two pounds.

"Bang!"

He threw the coins on top of the table, and said:

"As long as you are the one to personally make it, you will earn one gold coin for each cup."

Xiao Yuer curiously looked at Feng Feiyun. What was this person's intention?

In the end, her eyes stopped at the money on the table; she paused for a moment, and she then said:

"You cannot change your mind! Also, you cannot bully me or my grandfather!"

"If you dare to tell me the conditions again, do you believe that I will bully you right now?"

Feng Feiyun showed an evil laugh while he rubbed his hands together, gently, to scare the little girl.

Old Man Luo's expression darkened; he was afraid that Xiao Yuer would make Feng Feiyun angry, so he interjected:

"Xiao Yuer, is Young Master Feng someone you can offend? Go brew the tea now!"

Xiao Yuer was shocked. Her mind recalled the events of that night, and she recalled that her hands were sore from over clenching. Then, she couldn't help but cover her chest. There was a cold feeling to her here, and she quickly left to move to the stove, silently. Old Man Luo walked over and apologized to Feng Feiyun, without break.

Feng Feiyun, of course, wasn't really angry with her; he only wanted to play around. This might be influenced by the personality of the old Young Master Feng.

“Old Man Luo, how long are you gonna take to pay this month’s fee?”

From outside of the tea house, a cold voice rang.

Feng Feiyun remained seated at a table. He slightly glanced with the corner of his eyes, and he saw that there were five or six men outside; they were all wearing dark red belts and possessed vicious hawk eyes.

There was a man with a large stature, with tanned skin; he was extremely muscular. It was as if he was filled with explosive power; it felt like one punch from this person could split a man’s head open.

This was the gangster organization in Spirit State City named Eagle Claw, and their boss was named Wu.

In his hand was a chain as thick as an arm and around two meters long. The end of the chain was wrapped around a fierce lion’s head; the fierce lion’s body was as big as an elephant, and it seemed as though it possessed astonishing power.

Its legs were as big as pillars, and both of its eyes were red like burning flames. One hit of its head would be enough to bring down a five meter thick wall.

This was a Red Eyed Golden Lion; Boss Wu had spent a large amount of money to buy it from the “Beast Taming Camp.” This great beast, alone, was enough for him to dominate Spirit State City; all of the store owners had to pay his protection fees.

“Rawr!”

The Red Eyed Golden Lion arched its back, and it let out a fierce roar; the roar itself resonated through half of Spirit State City. Even the ground shook a little bit, and the teacups in the shop shattered.

Hearing the beast’s roar, everyone knew Boss Wu had arrived. The whole street was instantly devoid of pedestrians; however, there were still some curious souls that stuck around to peek at the commotion. It was not normal for Boss Wu to personally come to collect protection fees.

Old Man Luo, in his heart, was lamenting his fate; why was it that the two most evil bullies of Spirit State City were both here, today? He was so unlucky!

Old Man Luo ran outside of the shop; he reached inside his shirt pocket for a pouch of coins, and he respectfully gave it to Boss Wu. He smiled:

“It has already been prepared, it has already been prepared! Three hundred bronze coins; not one coin is missing! There is not even one coin left out!”

Old Man Luo peeked at the fierce beast, and he couldn’t help but feel a shiver throughout his whole body; its mouth was big enough to eat him alive in one gulp. It frightened him down to his very soul with its cold aura, and Old Man Luo couldn’t help but take two steps backward.

Boss Wu took the pouch, and he threw the coins inside the bag to the ground; he created a commotion:

“Why is there so little? Old Man Luo, you must have eaten some bear’s guts if you think you can chase me away with this amount. Do you think I’m a beggar?”

Boss Wu loudly yelled.

It was like someone had just rang a bell, and that “bell” almost rendered Old Man Luo unconscious.

Sweating profusely, on his forehead, Old Man Luo shakingly responded:

“Last month was also three hundred coins; I didn’t leave out a single coin.”

Boss Wu smirked and said:

“This week is San Ye’s birthday; every household has to pay an extra five hundred coins as gifts. Old Man Luo, you are an honest man. You should be reasonable and pay the extra five hundred; I won’t make life hard for you.”

Old Man Luo and Xiao Yuer’s tea shop was just a small business and each month, they only made around one thousand coins. Three hundreds was already given to Boss Wu, and the remaining was barely enough for them to get by.

However, he wanted five hundred extra coins this month? How could they survive?

Feng Fui Yen gently tapped on his Crimson Dragon sabre on the table, and he smiled:

“Who is this San Ye character? Is his reputation so great that his birthday

would require all households to pay extra money?”

Feng Ping replied:

“San Ye is very mysterious. He is the number one gangster in Spirit State City; he specializes in the black market, the slave trade, the brothels, the casinos, and assassinations as well. Many people are afraid of him.”

“There is a saying in our city: “Anger Young Master Feng, wife will be gone and daughter will disappear; anger San Ye, the family will be broken and decimated.”

Feng An added.

Young Master Feng and San Ye were the two big evil doers in Spirit State City; one lusts after women and the other after life.

Feng Feiyun was surprised; he didn’t know that he was so notorious in the city!

Two big evil doers? How interesting!

Feng Ping continued:

“This Boss Wu character is the number one henchman for San Ye. He is the boss of the Eagle Claw gang, and he has a few thousand members; there is nothing that he wouldn’t do.”

“Isn’t that just like me?”

Feng Feiyun said.

“He can’t compare to young master. When you play with women, you are at least merciful; when he plays with women, it is not just him; it is him and a whole group of people until the girls are dead.”

Feng Ping replied.

Feiyun thought that he was already a bastard, but this Boss Wu and his group made him seem like a saint, in comparison.

Chapter 10 : Young Master Feng's Sabre

"Oh god! Five hundred coins!"

Old Man Luo lost his wit; his strengthless body laid on the floor, and he started begging:

"Master Wu, I'm only a small-time business owner. I don't have five hundred coins to give you. All I have, right now, is one hundred and forty three coins. I will offer all of it to you. The rest of the amount, I will be able to pay next month."

Normally, Boss Wu would let this go; however, this was before he had received the order from Feng Suiyu, so he couldn't just ignore this. The reason Boss Wu could terrorize Spirit State City was because he had the backings of both the government and the underground world. San Ye was his dark backer while Feng Suiyu was his political supporter. This was why, with the exception of very few people in Spirit State City, he could do anything without fear of repercussion.

Boss Wu smirked, stroked his beard, and he then said:

"Old Man Luo, the truth is, five hundred coins aren't a big amount. If you sell your granddaughter to the brothel, you would get at least thirty thousand coins…"

Not waiting for Boss Wu to finish his sentence, Old Man Luo dropped to the floor, grabbing Wu's legs, and he begged:

"Boss Wu, please don't joke about this. Yuer is only fourteen, and she can't be sold; she can't be sold!"

Old Man Luo was living at the bottom of society, and he had no power; besides kneeling to beg, there was nothing else he could do to save his granddaughter.

Boss Wu, exasperated, kicked Old Man Luo away, and he then walked inside the tea shop with his fierce beast. At this moment, Xiao Yuer ran out from inside, and she threw a gold coin toward Boss Wu.

"Here is your money; don't hurt my grandfather."

Yuer quickly lifted her grandfather up from the ground.

“Bang.”

The gold coin fell on the floor and rolled towards Boss Wu’s feet. The gold coin was equivalent to ten thousand bronze coins, and that was way more than the five hundred bronze coins payment. Boss Wu picked it up and rubbed it; he was surprised to find that it was real gold. Where did she get it from?

“You think this matter can be settled with just money?”

Holding the gold coin, he looked over to the direction of Xiao Yuer and Old Man Luo with a cold devious smile.

“Chen Liu, Zheng Hao, tie this little girl up for me. Today is a merry occasion! This girl is pretty, with her soft and fair skin. I had chosen this girl from a long time ago; today, I will fulfill my wish.”

After hearing the command, the two thugs came over with ropes in their hands and an evil smile on their faces.

Xiao Yuer’s heart was shaken, but she tried to be courageous:

“Boss Wu! We still have an important guest waiting for my service; if you tie me up, he would not be pleased.”

After he heard this, Boss Wu’s eyes hovered to the shop. He saw a young man inside with extravagant clothing and was extraordinarily handsome that was smiling in his direction.

“Young Master Feng!”

Boss Wu’s eyes narrowed, and his expression became serious. He signaled for the two thugs to fall back. Feng Feiyun was still sitting in the same position, and he smiled:

“Boss Wu, who gave you permission to collect fees in Spirit State City?”

“About this…”

Boss Wu’s face became ugly. Spirit State City was the Feng’s home turf. Although his reputation and power were plentiful, it was not comparable to the main Feng house. However, he quickly regained his confidence. Feng Feiyun was only an idiot that could only eat and wait for his own death. Even Feng Wanpeng had given up on him, so why should he be afraid? After thinking it through, Boss

Wu couldn’t help but laugh. He casually walked to the tea shop and sat in front of Feng Feiyun; his eyes wandered as if to judge Feng Feiyun:

“Young Master Feng wants to interfere with this matter?”

Feng Feiyun had not even opened his mouth, and Feng Ping quickly whispered in his ear:

“Young Master, Boss Wu isn’t easy to play with; there is no need to turn against him because of a woman.”

The two servants, Feng Ping and Feng An, were praying for their young master to not impulsively fight with Boss Wu over a woman. As long as he could remain calm, nothing bad would happen.

Xiao Yuer was quite tense; in the end, Feng Feiyun was only an idiot young master. He could also be a coward. If he became afraid of Boss Wu, then her fate would be extremely miserable.

If given the choice, she would rather fall into the hands of Feiyun; not be roped and taken away by Boss Wu.

Feng Feiyun smirked and proclaimed:

“I will definitely interfere; anyone who even touches her hair will die!”

His voice filled with authority like thunder resonating in the sky.

Xiao Yuer went into a daze, exposing her round widened eyes. She was surprised and confused, even a bit blushful. They weren’t related to each other, so. for an immoral playboy to stand up for her like this, it could even be considered heroic. There was a wave of unknown feelings surging in her heart; she once again judged Feng Feiyun, and she found that maybe he wasn’t as evil as she originally thought.

Boss Wu nodded his head, and he gravely said:

“Good! Very good! Young Master Feng today is indeed one to care for the flowers; let us see if you can protect her.”

With the wave of his hand, five thugs immediately headed for Xiao Yuer.

After his purchase, Feng Feiyun wanted to test his sabre; these thugs were

delivering themselves on a platter. Feiyun's eyes became emotionless, and his hand steadily gripped the Crimson Dragon sabre weighing at two hundred and forty pounds. His movement was like the wind, one step took him three meters far. Jumping into the air, creating a crescent moon while channeling his qi, he unleashed a strike, down from above. The sabre's energy was crimson, like an unstoppable flame.

"Whoosh!"

The sound of the sabre cutting the air was akin to a fierce beast's roar, hurting the spectator's ears.

"Phoosh!"

The sabre's power was great; it sliced one of the thugs into two pieces from his head to his legs. Fresh blood gushed out, and it painted the ground red. The speed of that one slash was too great. From the moment the sabre was lifted, to the instance of dismemberment, Feiyun's actions were swift and natural; it was as if he was extremely experienced. It all happened so fast that Boss Wu didn't have time to react while Feiyun's sabre was already basked in a bright coat of sanguine blood. The other four thugs were frightened out of their minds; one blade was enough to cut a person into two pieces. The force of that blow must have been great. Feng Ping and Feng An turned into stone statues, with their jaws dropping to the floor. When did the young master become so strong? He was almost like a God of War.

Facing the bloody scene, Xiao Yuer fainted from fear, and she was held by her grandfather. Before her conscious faded, the image of Feng Feiyun's killing techniques, his transformation from a regular person into a heroic man with an undaunting, yet charming, aura, lingered in her mind.

"You… you…"

Boss Wu was out of words. Although he had never cultivated through immortal manuals, he had trained his body to the point where he was comparable to even cultivators. But after seeing Feiyun's blade, he didn't know if he could have personally survived it.

Feng Feiyun, with the sabre on his shoulder, went back into the tea house and smiled:

“Boss Wu, tell me; who commanded you to make a move against Old Man Luo and Xiao Yuer?”

Feng Feiyun carefully drifted his fingers across the bloody blade, removing the remaining remnants of blood drops.

“I do whatever I want; I was never commanded by anyone else.”

Boss Wu was also a veteran that had went through many battles; he quickly regained his composure. Although Feng Feiyun’s slash was very frightening, that didn’t mean it was unstoppable. With the help of his Red Eyed Golden Lion, he could potentially defeat Feng Feiyun.

However, at this very second, the Red Eyed Golden Lion was lying on the floor in a puddle of cold sweat. Feng Feiyun’s revealed phoenix aura had terrorized the beast, rendering him immobile. Feng Feiyun’s body carried his phoenix soul; naturally, there was an accompanied heavenly phoenix aura. The phoenix placed first among the four divine beast, and their bloodlines were extraordinary. An impure creature like the Red Eyed Golden Lion could not withstand the royal aura of the phoenix. Boss Wu, wanting to use his beast to subdue Feng Feiyun, was a great miscalculation.

“If you don’t want to speak, then you will have to pay the price!”

Feng Feiyun was smart, even without Boss Wu’s confession, he could roughly guess who it was. Who could it be outside of Feng Suiyu or San Ye.

“What are you doing?”

Boss Wu’s face darkened:

“Feng Feiyun, I am San Ye’s underling. If you kill me, there will be serious consequences.”

“Seriously, your mother! Here in Spirit State City, the Feng family has the final say. Who the hell is San Ye, and is he gonna stop me from what I want to do?”

How could Feng Feiyun be threatened by him?

“Boom!”

Feng Feiyun dragged his heavy sabre and headed towards Boss Wu.

Boss Wu remained vigilant this whole time; when he saw Feng Feiyun's movement, he immediately leaned forward and threw out a punch with the force of a few hundred pounds, aiming for Feiyun's arm. His body was huge, but his speed was swift; a punch swept forward with grinding force, like a flying dragon.

"Bang!"

Feng Feiyun was lifting his sabre while he quickly stepped forward; his feet were as light and flexible as a snake, moving forward and then back to easily dodge Boss Wu's mountain-shattering punch. The sabre took a quick turn; its bloody aura appeared, and it met the fist's power.

Boss Wu's hand was trained and tempered like iron steel, but it was impossible for him to face the sabre in a straight battle of power. Boss Wu's expression became maddened; he tried to move away, but it was too late.

"Poof!"

The two hundred and forty pound Crimson Dragon sabre directly cut Boss Wu's right arm straight down, starting from his shoulder. Hot blood flooded from the open wound, squirting as far as three feet away.

"Bang!"

Feng Feiyun kicked Boss Wu in the stomach, his body rolled on the floor, like a dead dog on the street, in the fetal position. Blood was oozing from his mouth; he was twitching in great pain.

The street had been slowly filled with spectators. These people, normally, were bullied and exploited by Boss Wu; however, seeing his current state, they all started to clap and cheer.

"This is it! Yes! Young Master Feng! Young Master Feng has cut off Boss Wu's arm!"

"How could a normal person handle Boss Wu? The idiotic Young Master Feng turned out to be a great master! Just like his sabre, he is earth shattering."

"This might not be a good thing! Based on my experience, a calamity is coming!"

An old man with gray hair slowly stroked his beard and predicted.

The people around were clamoring and making statements about how Young Master Feng had beaten Boss Wu; this was definitely an event that would shock Spirit State City.

Feng Feiyun sheathed his sabre and gallantly walked in front of Boss Wu. He threw the hand that he previously dismembered in front of him, and said:

“Return and tell San Ye that I will definitely be on time for his birthday!”

Boss Wu endured the pain; he bit his teeth and crawled on the ground to grab his arm. He angrily turned around, and he left with pernicious and indignant eyes…

Feng Feiyun simply didn’t fear his future revenge. Boss Wu was only a mortal martial artist, and Feiyun was now in the early stage of Spirit Realm; he could easily crush him. Once he reached the intermediate or peak Spirit Realm stage, his inner qi would be multiple times stronger. Even ten Boss Wus wouldn’t be his match. Sparing him was like sparing a dog; it would not cause any big waves in the future.

“Master, what do we do with this Red Eyed Golden Lion?”

Feng Ping asked.

The two servants, now, have considered Feng Feiyun to be a god. They have determined to worship him for the rest of their lives. Young master was simply too amazing!

There remained a Red Eyed Golden Lion with chains around its neck. There was no will to battle in him; only fear remained in its red eyes. He became a sickly cat after feeling Feiyun’s dominating phoenix aura.

“It is only a low blood animal; we will roast it tonight for everyone. It will strengthen the body and prolong the life span; at night, one can bed ten girls, and your “glory” will not fall. Ahem, ahem, remember to leave some for me.”

Feng Feiyun smiled and wiped the blood off his sabre.

“Ah!”

The two servants were shocked. This was a fierce beast, and its value would be

around three hundred gold coins. This wasn’t roasted meat, rather, it was roasted gold. Alas, their young master had spoken, so they could only follow his order.

Chapter 11 : Blood Spirit Seed

In a garden located within Spirit State City.

Boss Wu was kneeling on the floor, facing an old man while complaining:

“San Ye, Feng Feiyun had changed overnight; he was too powerful. I was never his match.”

The old man had a skinny figure and was dressed in a black robe. His left cheek, for unknown reasons, had a visible scar showing signs of muscle atrophy, only human skin was left; one couldn’t tell his original facial features.

The hair on his head was already gray. He seemed to be around sixty years of age, but Boss Wu knew San Ye’s real age had exceeded one hundred; his strength was unimaginable. He had personally witnessed San Ye using one finger to kill an armored general from one hundred feet away; this required extreme skill and was quite hard to believe.

San Ye smiled with his stiff face, and said:

“He also told you that he wanted to meet me at my birthday celebration, right?”

“San Ye, you heard about it too?”

Boss Wu was surprised to hear.

San Ye said:

“In this whole Spirit State City, there are not many places that my eyes can’t reach. Stop kneeling, stand up! Feng Feiyun is definitely strange; he has cultivated. Maybe Feng Wanpeng had taught him the 'Vigorous Gale Method'?”

His old eyes were filled with a deep light, as if he was contemplating about something.

Boss Wu stood up from the ground and gloomily said:

“If Master San Ye actually takes action, he will only need one fingertip to kill the little boy Feng Feiyun.”

San Ye coldly glared at him, this gaze was truly frightening. Boss Wu's heart was shaking and cold sweat ran down on his forehead, wondering if he had said something wrong.

San Ye reverted his gaze, and coldly snorted:

"Three years ago, Feng Wanpeng had reached stage five of the 'Vigorous Gale Method,' obtaining the intermediate stage of Immortal Foundation. For a fourth generation of the Feng Clan, this was considered an outstanding cultivation. Even if I personally took action, there is no guarantee that I would be successful. Not to mention, there is also old man Liu by his side; if both of them were to fight together, I wouldn't have the strength to even defend myself."

"If we move against Feiyun, it would disturb the other two men; this is not beneficial to me. Go bring this news to Feng Suiyu; I'm sure Feng Suiyu wants to get rid of Feng Feiyun even more than us. Just let the Feng Clan fight internally, it couldn't be more wonderful!"

"Feng Suiyu wanted to use us to take care of Feng Feiyun. His plan was really wily, but unfortunately, in front of me, he is still too immature."

San Ye revealed a smile; the smile became more and more grim.

***

Before Xiao Yuer woke up, Feng Feiyun had already left the tea house.

Once Feng Feiyun returned to the governor's mansion, the sun had already set.

Before his return, he went to the Yin Gou ward and spent one thousand gold coins to buy a "Blood Spirit Seed"; this was a spirit plant that grew amidst the lava. When an ordinary person consumed it, the blood flow would become faster and the heart would beat so fast that the body would explode, resulting in death.

Even for a lower ranking cultivator, if the plant was rashly consumed, he couldn't avoid his meridians being fractured as well as having a broken dantian.

For people who have not reached the stage of Immortal Foundation, this plant was a poisonous substance. But to those who have exceeded the Immortal

Foundation, this was a spirit treasure used to refine the body.

Naturally, Feng Feiyun had not reached the Immortal Foundation stage; currently, he is only at the early Spirit Realm. According to the normal rules, if he was to consume the Blood Spirit Seed, he would be seriously injured, if not dead.

However, because his method was the Immortal Phoenix Physique to cultivate the most powerful body, the Blood Spirit Seed could not push the blood that fast. Once the blood flow had reached a certain speed, it would be the same as helping Feiyun's blood refining process instead of causing harm; the faster the flow, the faster the refinement process.

Feng Feiyun opened a black jade container. The inside contained ice pieces with a red seed in the middle, along with a small leaf as big as two fingers. It was crystal clear and transparent, like a blood jade carving.

This was the Blood Spirit Seed!

Rather, this Blood Spirit Seed had not reached the level of spirit grass; at most, it could only be considered as a normal grass with a strong effect. This was precisely why it was only worth one thousand gold coins. If it was a true spirit grass, then the lowest price would still be one hundred thousand gold coins, a priceless treasure.

Spirit grass, like the name suggested, was a sentient entity. It had produced its own wisdom and could run away. A few top spirit grasses could even transform into humans and start the road of cultivation.

"Boss Wu is only a small underling, he certainly has someone with a cultivation background behind the shadows supporting him. Lets hope that this Blood Spirit Seed can increase my cultivation to the next level."

Feng Feiyun's soul was growing stronger. Today, when he was fighting against Boss Wu, he felt that there was someone within Spirit State City who was spying on him. This person's cultivation was extremely high, and his spiritual soul also had unfriendly murderous intent.

Even though his cultivation was way higher than Feng Feiyun, Feng Feiyun was still able to detect his spiritual spying.

The owner of that soul did not make a move; he quickly pulled back during the

climax of the action.

This was why Feng Feiyun felt the urge to improve quickly, because the person did not have a friendly intent. Sooner or later, he would make a move himself; Feiyun had no choice but to take a risk with the Blood Spirit Seed and hope that it would increase his cultivation.

As long as one's strength was sufficient, there would be no need to fear any enemies.

"The force of the Blood Spirit Seed could be even greater than a spirit grass; I most likely can't accept all of it at the moment and would need external help."

Feng Feiyun closed the black box, and opened the door to walk outside. The sky was completely dark, and the night and water were equally cold.

The mansion's lamps had been lit up above in the chandeliers. The laughter of many women could be heard in the distant bedrooms; it was the dormitory of the maids.

Before, Feng Feiyun often visited there. As long as a maid had a bit of beauty to her, she would be ruined. However, ever since his soul was merged with the other Feng Feiyun, he didn't go there any longer.

Sometimes this, sometimes that.

A piece of scum can also become a great person!
(Nahct: This is a saying in Chinese. Basically means a person can have a change of heart.)

Passing by the moment, Feng Feiyun's heart had mixed and unexplainable feelings. He didn't stop here but kept going through a garden, along a trail of white pebbles, to a pond next to the fake decoration mountain.

Standing by the water's edge and looking at the sparkling water surface, Feng Feiyun opened the black box again. The Blood Spirit Seed was akin to a small flame; illuminating the dark night with a touch of red.

"With the cold temperature and pressure of the water on top of the special nature of the Immortal Phoenix Physique, I should be able to resist the Blood Spirit Seed's potency."

Feng Feiyun immediately ate the whole Blood Spirit Seed, and then jumped into the cold water in the dark pond.

“Splash!”

As each drop of water flew into the air, his body continuously sank to the bottom of around seven or eight meters deep. He sat down in the cultivation pose on top of the muddy ground at the bottom of the pond.

Feng Feiyun had a special breathing technique that could allow him to stay — even a day — at the bottom of the pond without suffocating.

After swallowing the Blood Spirit Seed, it felt like swallowing fire. It turned the meridians and blood vessels throughout Feng Feiyun’s body aflame; his body started making many crackling sounds.

The blood flow in his vessels started to increase in speed as well as temperature, as if there were many small strands of fire traveling in his bloodstream.

Feng Feiyun began to channel the Immortal Phoenix Physique incantations. He had successfully cultivated the first level of Blood Purification; his blood was already pure with a crimson fire color. The second level, compared to the first, was more than ten times more difficult.

However, once the cultivation was successful, the blood quality would also greatly improve. The physical body would have earth-shattering changes.

Turning the crimson blood into the dark blood would require a change in the quality of the blood, and from that, his spirit energy inside his body would also change.

One could say that, if Feng Feiyun could successfully complete the second stage of Blood Purification, he would immediately skip the intermediate stage of the Spirit Realm, straight to the peak of the Spirit Realm, or an even higher stage.

However, this was not easy. Even with the help of the Blood Spirit Seed, it was impossible to complete the second stage of Blood Purification overnight.

“Boom!”

Suddenly, something outside of Feng Feiyun’s expectation happened. The

blood flow in his body suddenly reversed, and the gathering place of the blood was not his heart, but at his right hand's palm.

"What is going on?"

Feng Feiyun was surprised.

Reversed blood flow; it was even more dangerous than reversed meridian flow.

The shadow of the Spirit Vessel in Feng Feiyun's right palm started to radiate a flashing light, as if it was trying to move, returning to life.

The boat had traveled through space and time, and it was ranked above the eighteen legendary spirit treasures. Feng Feiyun couldn't awaken it with his spirit energy, but with his stimulated blood, there was a reaction!

Chapter 12 : Break Through Again

The blood in his body, ignited by the Blood Spirit Seed, had become a runaway horse; it escaped Feiyun's control and headed towards his right palm in a maddened fashion.

The spirit boat, that had fused with his flesh, made an even more violent beating noise.

"Bang!"

Feiyun's eardrums vibrated as if there were bells repeatedly crashing within his head.

A strange picture appeared in his mind. It was an ancient bronze boat, a spirit boat!

Above the bronze boat were eighteen pillars, towering like magnificent peaks. The eighteen bronze pillars had already rusted through the times. Hung on top of them were black, tattered sails. It looked like a painting of the dark heavens and earths.

The large and vast ancient boat seemed capable of holding an entire world.

"Bang!"

Feng Feiyun shuddered. The ancient boat image in his mind was broken into many smoke clouds. His blood's traveling speed became even more terrorizing; all of it was aiming for his right palm and entering the spirit boat.

"Oh, the force of the Blood Spirit Seed is beyond my imagination, and the slumbering spirit boat had awakened as well. Would my body be unable to handle the breakthrough damage, and will the ship escape again, resulting in my death?"

Feng Feiyun was unwilling to perish. He bit his teeth and activated his Immortal Phoenix Physique once again.

"Splash splash!"

The blood in his body was like the Yellow River, rushing with unstoppable currents.

His palm was like the an ocean, his blood was the seawater, and the spirit boat was floating on top. The three formed an odd picture: the “Ocean with a Wave of Blood,” an “Ancient Boat Taking Sail,” and the “Red River of God.”
(TL: The Chinese Raw used poetic language to describe the three quotes, as if they were names of paintings.)

Suddenly, the ancient spirit within the boat broke out into the sky with awe-inspiring strength, caused the blood to boil, and then went back into the blood vessels, into the body.

His blood was boiling!

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

Feng Feiyun’s whole body trembled. His hair in the water also stood up vertically and his skin radiated a shade of red, as if it was on fire.

He lifted his head and let out a long roar!

“Roooaaarrrrr!”

An explosion of force escaped from his body!

Under the night, the cold lake had an absence of ripples in the dead water. Suddenly, the entire water surface spun like crazy, creating a huge whirlpool. Bang! A loud noise filled the air as if a huge cauldron had just exploded completely.

The water in the lake splashed upward for more than ten meters.

The entire mansion had been alerted, and a brigade of armored guards rushed towards the pond’s direction.

A powerful figure flew out from the pool before the security forces have arrived, and disappeared into the night.

“Such a loud commotion, what happened here?”

“Did someone dare to invade the governor’s mansion?”

“Surely courting death!”

“We have to search, find and capture this evil intruder!”

The guard captain, holding his long spear, stood by the bank of the pond, and noticed the broken debris left over from the fake decoration mountain that had been completely destroyed. His heart was shaken with fear; this force was too strong. This power was capable of fully shattering a tall compound.

Fifty armored guards searched around the pool with a white dog, but to no avail. The only result was that they alarmed the maids and servants within the mansion.

The instigator of this commotion, Feiyun, had already changed his tattered clothing and replaced it with a fur coat made from fox skin for sleep. He wore a big pair of wooden shoes and yawned, as if he was still in deep sleep.

It was like he had just woken up.

“Why is it so noisy, you dog servants, what are you trying to find so late at night? Do you know that you have disturbed this young master’s sleep?”

Feiyun lazily stretched his waist and said.

The fifty armored guards stepped forward with one knee on the ground and said:

“We subordinates greet Young Master Feng.”

The captain of the guards was also on his knees, one hand holding his long spear, and said in a reasonable manner:

“Just now, an extremely strong expert had broken into the mansion. Young Master, please have no fear, we will certainly be able to protect you under any circumstances.”

The armored guards knew that the young master was rather timid, and they were afraid that he would be startled.

Feng Feiyun pretended to be scared, and lamented:

“Extreme expert, you guys shouldn’t scare me…”

“The intruder’s strength is extraordinary. One palm was able to destroy the

whole fake decoration mountain; it was an unbelievable force. This servant believed that even within the entirety of the Spirit State City, only a few are capable of such a feat."

The guard captain's face was a bit embarrassed. After all, such a strong expert had broken into the mansion, and they were completely oblivious to the fact. This was a dereliction of their duty.

Feiyun looked at his hand and he was ecstatic; he, himself, was considered an extreme expert within the whole of Spirit State City that could only be counted on one's hand.

"What happened just now? Bodyguard Lin, in the end, what had happened here?"

Feng Suiyu, with his heroic manner and two servants, came over. Their paces were calm but heavy, their poses were elegant and composed, yet valiant.

His silky clothing was organized, his hair was finely done. His handsome eyes were like a pair of cold knives in the dark.

Once he had arrived, the whole scene became silent!

The guards saw Feng Suiyu and all of them became more respectful. Each devoutly got on their knees; their attitudes became much more humbling.

It was like the servants had finally met their master!

Although Feng Suiyu was only the governor's adopted son, because he was strong and talented, he was considered the heir to the position; everyone was respectful towards him.

This was in stark contrast with their attitudes toward Feng Feiyun!

One was the future master of Spirit State City, the other was a timid playboy young master; how could they be compared?

The captain guard respectfully clapped his hands and lowered his head, then said:

"I deserve death for letting an extremely strong master break into the mansion. Please punish me, Young Master."

Feng Suiyu calmly walked towards the pond with both hands behind his back. Seeing the fragments of the pool of rocks, his eyes were shocked and he shivered:

“So powerful, this is not someone that you guys could have dealt with, everyone stand up! The opponent is a cultivator, you guys don’t have to be ashamed; I will report this to adopted father, and let him be the decider.”

The captain guard, along with the fifty armored troops, were relieved. In their hearts, they complimented him for being so wise. He was really worthy of being the best within the generation.

They secretly compared Feng Suiyu and Feng Feiyun in their minds, but they could only breath heavily in the end from confusion. One was a peerless hero while the other was an idiot who could only eat and await his own death.

It was impossible to compare!

All fifty armored guards backed down from the scene.

Feng Feiyun sighed at the excellence of Feng Suiyu. This person was very meticulous and talented with his actions and thoughts; he was able to win the people’s hearts with two simple sentences. Frightening, simply frightening!

“Feng Feiyun, I heard you were studying military strategies with Strategist Ge, have you learned anything?”

Feng Feiyun originally wanted to turn back to the house, but was stopped by Feng Suiyu.

He stopped in his track, turned around, and smiled:

“The messy strategies of Strategist Ge; sometimes it is about sieging a castle, sometimes it is about organizing formations, they were all child’s play. I was not interested, boring, boring! Brother, if you are interested, why don’t you come together to hear that old man’s nagging?”

Feng Suiyu already heard the news; he knew that Feng Feiyun’s strength was formidable and took off Boss Wu’s arm. His real self was not how it seems on the surface.

Could he have been fooling me all these years?

This kid was keeping a low profile!

(Nahct: This is for the line below. Ancient China believed people think with their hearts, not brains.)
There were thousands of thoughts in Feng Suiyu's heart, but his face did not show it; he laughed:

"Eighteen kinds of war, thirty six different ways to siege, seventy two ways to defend; I had understood them all since seven years ago and could familiarly recite them. Simple reasonings on paper to me is no longer important. Feiyun, you are now in the primary stage of learning the art of war. After eight or ten years, you could reach my height; you need to keep trying your best!"

This guy was so arrogant!

"Big Brother is really talented, I can't help but to admire!"

Feng Feiyun let out a yawn, and smiled:

"I can't, I can't anymore, have to go back to sleep!"

With that, Feiyun turned around and left.

The smile on Feng Suiyu's face slowly disappeared. He watched Feng Feiyun's back as he was leaving and his expression became cold and distant.

"Young Master, is this kid, Feng Feiyun, really a waste of a human being or is he pretending to be waste?"

A servant behind him asked.

Feng Suiyu said:

"In front of me, it is all the same. On the art of war, he couldn't catch up to me even after ten years of learning. He is only at the early stage of the Spirit Realm, while I am at the peak of the Spirit Realm. Even if I let him make ten moves first, he still wouldn't be my opponent."

The difference between early and peak Spirit Realm was ten times in power. They were not on the same level of existence, so even though Feng Suiyu knew that Feng Feiyun was cultivating, he did not care.

To go from the early to peak stage of the Spirit Realm was not something that

could be done overnight. Even with his amazing talent, it still took him three years. It wasn't a certain thing for ordinary people either, even with ten years.

He did not believe that Feng Feiyun's talents were higher than his!

"An idiot wants to rise again. I will certainly, once again, suppress you; never allowing you to lift your head again."

The faint smile on Feng Suiyu's face was natural, as if he was strategizing about something.

He wasn't only a cultivation genius, but also a wise man.

"Young Master, the governor called for you. There is an event he wishes to discuss."

A maid bowed her head.

Feng Suiyu furrowed his brows, wondering why his foster father was calling for him so late. Maybe something big had happened?

***

"Slam."

Feng Feiyun closed the door, and spread out his right palm. The faint picture of the ancient boat had became more pale, as if it was completely integrating into the flesh.

"This spirit boat suppressed the Spirit Blood Seed's medicinal power at a critical moment. If not for it, I'm afraid I would have exploded to death. But now, I have successfully broken through to the intermediate stage of the Spirit Realm. The potency of the Spirit Blood Seed, by itself, would not have been possible for my breakthrough directly, so it had to be the spirit vessel's effect. A Holy Saint Treasure cannot be speculated using common sense."

With the Spirit Blood Seed's potency by itself, Feng Feiyun would have needed at least one month to break through to the intermediate stage; but because the spirit vessel increased the effect of the Spirit Blood Seed, it made it possible for him to breakthrough in just one night.

If Feng Suiyu was to know about this, he probably would be frightened to unconsciousness.

The intermediate stage could not be compared to the early stage. The difference between the two was like the heavens and earth.

The difference in thickness of the spirit energy was many folds greater.

The spirit energy in Feng Feiyun's meridians was mighty; his Dantian rotation speed throughout his body was great, as if it was a spirit river flowing without breaks.

Now, if Feiyun and Boss Wu were to fight again, he would not need to use his sabre. A slap would be sufficient to break every bone in Boss Wu's body.

"Even though I broke through to the intermediate stage, my second level of the Blood Purification process did not reach grand completion."

The second level of Blood Purification required the blood in the entire body to turn into a dark color — boling inside his vessels, but the blood in Feiyun's body was only a crimson red. He still had a long way to go to reach a complete black-like-ink color.

"Even if I break through to the peak of the Spirit Realm, I'm afraid my blood would still not be black-like-ink. The Immortal Phoenix Physique is not of an ordinary difficulty."

Feng Feiyun pointed his finger and a light came out from the tip, causing a candle to go out from five steps away.

The whole room became dark.

After a busy day, Feiyun was exhausted mentally and physically. He wanted a good rest in bed for one night because tomorrow, he had to learn military strategies with Strategist Ge.

"Knock, knock, knock!"

The door was knocked on.

A maid outside yelled loudly:

"Young Master Feng, the governor called for you to deliberate an important event."

His bed was not yet warm, yet he had to struggle to get up. A trace of doubt

surfaced in his heart; it was so late at night, what else had happened?

Plus, even if something big had happened, Feng Wanpeng would discuss it with Feng Suiyu. This was the first time he called for Feng Feiyun.

Chapter 13 : Hidden Dragon War and Military Strategy Iron Council

The lobby of the governor's mansion was twelve meters wide. There were eight tall pillars around the room. In the middle was a golden eagle statue, mightily breathtaking, like a divine bird looking down on the common people.

Every time there were guests in the lobby, their spirits were shaken by an invisible force of oppression; they would become too afraid to even breathe too heavily.

Feng Wanpeng was holding a jade scroll around three feet long and then slowly rolled it back up. This letter, he had read three times, and he also smiled three times; as if it was such a good event that even someone as stern as him couldn't help but smile.

Besides Feng Wanpeng, Strategist Ge and Housekeeper Liu were also present and sat on both sides. Their ages were similar, both with gray hair and wrinkled faces.

However, they were both not ordinary characters; they could single-handedly rule one direction.

Strategist Ge, with a fan made out of feathers in his hand, glared at the jade scroll, seemed to have guessed a lot of things, and spoke:

"Governor, is this a piece of news from the Southern Main House?"

The jade scroll in Feng Wanpeng's hand was named the "Flying Jade Scroll." It could travel one hundred thousand miles in one day; it was a real spirit treasure.

The Flying Jade Scroll came to Spirit State City, which meant the news came from the Grand Southern City of the Feng Clan.

Strategist Ge and Housekeeper Liu were not outsiders. They had followed Wanpeng for more than a decade and thus, Wanpeng never hid anything from them. He smiled and said:

"The next Hidden Dragon War of our clan that occurs once every twenty years

is happening soon.”

Strategist Ge’s eyes squinted, and ecstatically said:

“How long?”

“Three months later, the beginning date of the Autumn season. Purple mist prefectural city, hidden dragons pierce the sky.”

Feng Wanpeng read the contents of the Flying Jade Scroll.

The significance of the Hidden Dragon War of the Feng Clan was known throughout the world; anyone that performed remarkably in the Hidden Dragon War would surely thrive in the future.

The Feng Clan was a huge clan; children of the clan numbered in the tens of millions. They were divided into many different branches; every branch all had countless young geniuses.

Like Feng Wanpeng, who ruled over Spirit State City and was in charge of millions of people in many thousand miles, he was a tyrant in this direction. But he was only a fourth generation descendant from a Feng branch clan. He was not comparable to a true member of the Feng main clan.

The Feng Clan’s fourth generation, if not ten thousand, then it would be at least eight thousand members in size. There were many talented people and they all ruled over multiple ancient cities, or county towns, the military barracks, or the government. Their people and influence scattered across the whole world.

Every twenty years, the Feng Clan would have a selection to judge the potential of their younger generations. They would select the most transcendent talents and focus on cultivating them; this was the purpose of the Hidden Dragon War.

Hidden Dragons leave the sea, hurricanes ravage ten thousand miles!

After three months would be the date of the Hidden Dragon War; all the younger generations of the Feng Clan would have to participate in this event. Whoever could show all of their talents would be the next leaders in their generation. In the future, they could even be nominated for the patriarch position.

The main house of the Feng Clan was located in the Grand Southern City, it was also one of the strongest clans in the city.

Grand Southern City was one of the eight biggest cities of the Jin Dynasty, located to the south.

Grand Southern City had vast territories and a large population. It had twenty six counties; each county had countless ancient cities, and under the cities were the small towns.

Spirit State City was only one out of one hundred and twenty four ancient cities, under the Bai Ling county.

The Feng Clan was one of the three strongest clans in the Grand Southern City. Thus, it was clear how powerful it was.

Feng Wanpeng laughed loudly:

“Twenty years ago, I participated in the Hidden Dragon War with high spirits. I went through dozens of checkpoints and defeated hundreds of opponents. Afterwards, an elder took notice of my talents and groomed me into the position of governor, ruling one direction.”

Strategist Ge asked:

“What was your ranking in the last war twenty years ago?”

“I was the eighteenth.”

Feng Wanpeng’s heart was proud when he recalled the feat and couldn’t help but heroically laugh.

Placing eighteenth at the last Hidden Dragon War was indeed an achievement worthy of arrogance.

Strategist Ge was an adviser under the Feng Clan; he naturally understood the event from twenty years ago, and said:

“Twenty years ago, during the Hidden Dragon War, there were nine thousand four hundred and thirty eight people within the fourth generation’s main branch, while the side branches had a total of seventy thousand people. To defeat so many people and reaching the position of eighteen, you must have been remarkable during that year.”

Strategist Ge's words were not flattery. After all, Feng Wanpeng was still a formidable expert even now. He was still renowned within the fourth generation and had some influence.

Physical strength determined one's power!

Feng Wanpeng said:

"Twenty years have passed, the fifth generation of the Feng Clan has become even more prosperous. According to the statistics from the message, the main branch has thirty thousand people, which is a surprise, because some of them are absolutely brilliant geniuses. Some could even defeat the experts of the last generation. A lot of people predict that this fifth generation of the Feng Clan will be the rise of a new golden generation for our Feng Clan. A heaven shattering genius could appear at any time, and he would make the elders become crazily ecstatic."

Strategist Ge nodded and responded in a serious manner:

"If this is the case, then it is difficult to be within the top rankings. But with the cultivation of the oldest young master, breaking into the two hundreds should not be a problem."

Feng Wanpeng smiled and shook his head:

"The boy Feng Suiyu's talents are extremely high, I have high confidence in him. His ranking will not just be in the two hundreds. If he participates in the branch selection war, there will be a big chance of him standing out."

Because Feng Suiyu was only an adopted child, he could only join the branch war of the Feng Clan. However, as long as he performed well, he could still join the war with the direct clan afterwards.

Feng Wanpeng changed his expression and lamented:

"I, Feng Wanpeng, was a hero my whole life, but I gave birth to a useless son. If Feng Feiyun, this darn kid, was equal to one-tenth of Suiyu, I would still be satisfied."

Strategist Ge said:

"Recently, I have been exchanging with young master Feng a lot. Although he

was a bit cynical and distracted, he is not without merit. Some of his understandings with the art of war is very unique; sometimes his ideas greatly impress me."

"Are these words the truth?"

Feng Wanpeng asked.

Strategist Ge answered:

"My opinion is, young master Feng is indeed capable of becoming a talented person. Even though he cannot cultivate, if he could learn the art of war, he could join the military in the future and his achievements would not be little."

Housekeeper Liu who had been keeping quiet this whole time finally opened his mouth with an emotional expression:

"Governor, a prodigal son who learned to turn back is worth more than gold. I think during this Hidden Dragon War, we can let the young master participate in the Military Strategy Iron Council."

"Military Strategy Iron Council!"

Feng Wanpeng's expression became frozen, as if he was contemplating something.

In the Jin Dynasty, if one wanted to succeed and become renowned, surpassing everyone else, then he couldn't stop his cultivation to become a formidable expert. However, not everyone had the talent to cultivate. And without cultivation talents, one could only learn military strategies to become an educated man, a strategist, or a chief of staff. If one's art of war and resourcefulness was great, then he could still be a person on top of ten thousands, sitting in an esteemed guest position for many major clans and immortal sects.

The Military Strategy Iron Council and the Hidden Dragon War were both ways for the Feng Clan to select outstanding young talents; one for fighting, and the other for brains.

One literature, one martial arts!

If one could show his mental capabilities and high level of understanding of the

art of war, then he would still be heavily groomed by the Feng Clan.

“The Military Strategy Iron Council test is not easy. Many young geniuses that participate in the Hidden Dragon War take part in this literature test to debate militaristic arts. Placing first is harder than flying to the heavens. This child Feiyun… He only started his studies for a few days, plus he is very timid. What if he will act like a fool at the event… Sigh! To see so many young geniuses, maybe he would be frightened to the point of non-stop shaking, unable to even speak.”

Feng Wanpeng couldn’t stop lamenting. Even though he wanted Feng Feiyun to take “one step to the sky” and become successful, he also knew that with Feiyun’s virtues, he would rather let him not go than for him to lose face at the event.

There would be less shame this way!

At this time, Feng Suiyu entered from the front door. He bowed his head to Feng Wanpeng, and then respectfully greeted Housekeeper Liu and Strategist Ge. He straightened his posture, and said:

“Foster father is right, Feiyun is not familiar with the major aspects of society, so if he was to participate in the Military Strategy Iron Council, he would be scared silly and cause a scene. Your reputation and our clan’s reputation would be ruined in his hands.”

His words made the other people sad. Even though the words were ugly, but they were on point and everyone here knew of Feiyun’s virtues and character.

“Maybe… Feiyun is indeed too timid”

Even Housekeeper Liu sighed repeatedly.

“Thump thump.”

Feng Feiyun was wearing wooden slippers, and came in while yawning. He stood next to Feng Suiyu, and bowed toward Feng Wanpeng, Housekeeper Liu, and Strategist Ge, then said:

“Father, I want to participate in the Military Strategy Iron Council.”

Feng Feiyun had heard everyone’s discussion when he was outside. If one wanted to be known for his abilities, then he had to take the first step and show

them.

With a smile on his face, Feng Suiyu said:

“Feiyun, the Military Strategy Iron Council is not a joke, you need to understand this.”

“Hah hah! Brother, I admit that I have not read that many books, but you cannot underestimate me. Simple reasonings on paper, anyone could do those!”

Feng Feiyun smiled.

Feng Suiyu was unhappy, and said:

“Are you saying that I can only reason theoretically on paper?”

“Well that is a fact!”

Feng Feiyun still smiling:

“Brother, you seem dissatisfied, have you ever been in the military?”

Feng Suiyu had never even stepped inside a barrack. Of course he had never been in the military. He was speechless at the moment.

“Brother, it looks like you are really not convinced, eh!”

Seeing Suiyu’s rare beaten look, Feiyun’s heart was quite happy.

Suiyu’s face muscles twitched twice, and then he stiffly smiled:

“Feiyun, you are still too young, even just reasonings on paper, you are still lacking.”

“Reasonings on paper is to use less to defeat more, using strength to defeat the weak, to use real weapons and summon the troops, to kill the enemies, wiping them out to the last man?”

Although young, Feng Feiyun right now was spirited while pointing out a country’s military potential.

“Allow me to summon the troops.”

Everyone was confused; Spirit State City was located in the hinterland of the Jin Dynasty. There was no external enemy nor internal conflict. It had been many years since the last time the troops were summoned. What was the point of

talking about troop deployments right now?

Feng Suiyu was also confused, he didn't know what Feiyun was trying to say or what his next step was.

Feng Wanpeng, Strategist Ge, and Housekeeper Liu were also frozen; was this little boy crazy?

Feng Feiyun got down on one knee and with a serious expression, he loudly said:

"Spirit State City has many thieves rampaging about. Their leader abused his power and the people refer to him as San Ye. This person sells slaves, participates in human life gambling, forces women into prostitution, and organizes a gang with a few thousand members to oppress the townspeople. He is the cancer of Spirit State City. Feng Feiyun here urges the governor to give me three thousand troops; I will, in one night, capture all the evil crooks, not even one man will remain standing."

"I beg the governor to give me three thousand troops. I will mop up the culprits, behead the thieves, and purify Spirit State City; I will fight for the sake of the peoples' hearts!"

Chapter 14 : Heaven Restoration Evil Eyes

Feng Wanpeng's heart was shocked, there were simply no words to describe this feeling. Was this the ignorant Feiyun? No, absolutely not; this boldness wouldn't necessarily be apparent even in the most battle-hardened veterans.

A fourteen year old boy wanting a military order to command the troops, even the courageous Feng Suiyu wouldn't have the guts to do so.
(TL: The word military order here has the connotation that the commander will be taking responsibility for failures, usually resulting in death as the punishment.)

The others were even more stunned, this was an unbelievable event.

Even though Spirit State City was in the hinterland, away from the borders, it also had ten military encampments which totaled at ten thousand city guards. All of them were well equipped with armor, riding strong horses and tigers, spears in their hands, and were invincible in all battles.

Although the city guards couldn't compare with the brilliant official military, the soldiers were all brave and could fight one versus three.

"Nonsense, Feiyun, you are too young and too insensible; the city guards can't be arbitrarily summoned."

Feng Suiyu laughed out loud, bowed and said:

"Foster father, Feiyun is still too young and frivolous, not knowing right from wrong. If three thousand city guards were under his hands, it would be handling the situation too lightly."

Feng Wanpeng naturally knew about San Ye, this person's cultivation was not below his own. Unless it was the last resort, Wanpeng didn't want to make this man his enemy.

After all, they were both cultivators. If it was really a fight to the bitter end, then maybe half of Spirit State City would be destroyed in the process.

This was not the situation Wanpeng wanted to see.

However, he had never seen this side of his son, such seriousness and high morale. Was it finally the time for the boy to rise?

As long as the will to fight was there, the future would be bright.

Feng Feiyun saw Wanpeng's dignified expression in contemplation, he understood his hesitation, so he said:

"I have a full grasp of my victory; I am sure to bring down the Eagle Claw gang, not letting even one person slip through the net."

Feng Suiyu presumptuously scowled:

"Feng Feiyun, there is a lot at stake here. How can we rush to give you the city guards just based on your words alone?"

Feng Suiyu did not want Feiyun to be in the limelight. If he couldn't destroy the gang, then it would be good fortune. However, if he could actually exterminate the Eagle Claw gang, then Feiyun would certainly have a new found fame in war, and become Spirit State City's new star figure. Even the main Feng house would notice him.

Feng Suiyu would definitely not allow for the "salted fish to stand up from failure."
(TL: Akin to a koi fish becoming a dragon.)

Feng Wanpeng thought for a moment, then suddenly stood up and said:

"San Ye is not an easy opponent, this person's cultivation had reached the intermediate stage of Immortal Foundation. He also practices the 'Heaven Restoration Evil Eyes' technique, and has a pseudo spirit treasure. He can split a mountain in one strike and reform the geography, even one thousand city guards would be killed to the last man. Feiyun, you have to know, even though the army is powerful, but against some people, just the quantity alone isn't enough to kill them."

"Naturally I understand this, so I want to invite Housekeeper Liu to come with me to the Blood Eagle Mansion."

Feng Feiyun confidently said.

"The Blood Eagle Mansion is the place where San Ye lives; anyone who had

stepped inside had never come out alive.”

Feng Suiyu’s expression changed, he thought that Feiyun was arrogant to the extreme.

Anyone without great courage would never dare to break into the Blood Eagle Mansion. To invade the Blood Eagle Mansion was to court death.

Housekeeper Liu suddenly opened his bright eyes, two bright lights radiated from them and said:

“If Young Master is so bold, then even I will go with Young Master, even if my life was on the line.”

The old man’s heart was very excited. His master has such courage; rare, so rare to see. Who dared to say that his master was timid? Was this courage still considered small?

Feng Wanpeng’s heart had a great shock, he had decided to let Feng Feiyun go. As long as his son could become someone great, then even if the entirety of Spirit State City comes to ruin, it would still be worth it.

“I will give you five thousands city guards. I will personally stand on the tower to watch the battle. If you can destroy the Eagle Hawk gang, I will give you permission to participate in the Military Strategy Iron Council three months later. However, if you and the entire troops are annihilated, I will not attempt to save you. You and the entire army will be dead and buried together.”

Feng Wanpeng said.

“I obey your command!”

Feng Feiyun was ecstatic, and broke out laughing:

“Within a month, I will have the entire Blood Eagle Mansion razed to the ground.”

Feng Feiyun took the five military orders from the hands of Feng Wanpeng. He gripped them tightly, then turned around and left.

After Feng Feiyun had left the lobby, Feng Suiyu, as if awoken from a daze, quickly kneeled to the ground and said:

“Foster father, this is too childish, San Ye’s cultivation is frightening. The Eagle Hawk gang also has several thousand members. To leave five thousand city guards’ lives in Feiyun’s hands, I’m certain that there will not be that many left. More so, after the city guards and the gang start the battle, there will be dead bodies all over Spirit State City; ruins everywhere. I can’t imagine the consequences, I beg foster father to rethink this matter.”

Feng Wanpeng without hurry or hesitation, calmly said:

“Suiyu, I heard that you have been close with San Ye and his people. In the next few days, don’t leave the mansion; calm your mind and practice the 'Vigorous Gale Method' in preparation for the Hidden Dragon War three months later.”

Hearing these words, Suiyu’s heart jumped. This was foster father’s warning to him, it seemed that nothing was hidden from him in Spirit State City.

Feng Suiyu closed his mouth and didn’t say half a word after.

***

The reason why Feng Feiyun wanted to deal with San Ye was not because of justice, he essentially was not a moralistic and righteous person.

Plus, he and San Ye didn’t have any hatred. There was no need to do this heavy task, but he had to because there was a plan in his mind.

It was already late at night. The servants were in deep sleep at the governor’s mansion, the surroundings seemed quiet.

Holding the five military orders, Feng Feiyun didn’t return to his room but to the library. He opened the main door and ignited the night candles.

The “Heaven Restoration Evil Eyes” was one of the twelve grand evil techniques of Sen Luo Temple. When cultivated to the minor completion level, one could see an ant fighting from a hundred miles away, or if there was water on a fly. Within one hundred steps, a glare could kill a man, his soul would be shattered, and he would become a vegetable.

Feng Feiyun closed the ancient book in his hand and mumbled:

“San Ye’s cultivation is from the 'Heaven Restoration Evil Eyes,' plus it is certain

that he had obtained minor completion. This is also a method from the Sen Luo Temple, his origin must not be simple."

"He also has a pseudo spirit treasure. This is an unbelievable weapon, I must obtain it."

Feiyun had the Crimson Dragon sabre. It was once a spirit weapon, but it was broken and its aura had almost been depleted. It could only be regarded as a top magic weapon and couldn't be compared to a pseudo spirit weapon.

The so-called quasi-spirit weapon, the vessel itself has the same material and spiritual control as a spirit weapon, but the spirit itself for the weapon was not sentient. A spirit material would need many hundreds of years to form its own sentient spirit, outside of some extremely exceptional materials. The birth of a spiritual treasure was very difficult.

Even the main Feng Clan, which was so powerful for more than a thousand years, only had three spirit treasures. Each was considered to be a clan heirloom as well as its protectors. A spirit weapon, when activated, would be able to to destroy a city like Spirit State from a thousand miles away.

The three spirit treasures were considered the invincible ace cards of the Feng Clan. As long as they activate any of the three, they could repress any trouble. As long as the three spirit treasures remained in the Feng Clan's possession, it would remain the overlord of Grand Southern City.

Even though a quasi-spirit treasure was many times weaker than a spirit treasure, it couldn't be underestimated; in the end, it still had the same body and material, only lacking the consciousness of the spirit.

Feng Feiyun wanted to make a move on San Ye so that he could get the quasi-spirit treasure from his hands.

"San Ye has a quasi-spirit treasure, and I have, in my hands, a shattered spirit treasure, the Crimson Dragon sabre. It still has a strand of spirit consciousness and spirit energy; if I could extract this remaining spirit and then insert it into a quasi-spirit treasure, then I am ninety percent certain of creating a complete spirit treasure."

"A complete spirit treasure! Ha ha! Your mother, I am so talented. The spirit

treasure is capable of burning the sky and boiling the sea. If I could get a hold of one, killing an Immortal Foundation expert would not be impossible.”

When he had obtained the Crimson Dragon sabre, Feng Feiyun harbored this thought, so the moment when he found out that San Ye had a quasi-spirit treasure, he decided to take care of San Ye.

This matter of killing and raiding for treasure would not give a good reputation, this was more like the young master killing evil for the people!
(Nahct: Basically saying that he doesn’t want to treat this as benefiting himself, but helping the people of the city.)

Quasi-spirit treasures were already rare, but broken spirit treasures with a strand of spirit consciousness remnant was even rarer, even among one thousand spirit treasures. Feng Feiyun was truly lucky to encounter it, on top of buying it for only three thousand gold coins.

Other people, even if they were to come upon a broken spirit treasure, wouldn’t be able to extract the residual spirits inside because the spirit itself belonged to that particular spirit treasure. Even an expert with a heaven shattering cultivation wouldn’t be able to do the separation.

However, a Holy Saint Treasure was capable.

A Holy Saint Treasure was above all spirit treasures; all spirits must be subservient to the Holy Spirit.

It was like the king and his subjects; the king’s words, the subjects could only obey.

The Spirit Vessel, it was a Holy Saint Treasure!

Although Feng Feiyun could not control the spirit boat, he could use its prestigious aura from its holy spirit to extract the soul from the broken spirit treasure.

So in the whole world, only Feng Feiyun had the capability to turn a quasi-spirit treasure into a complete spirit treasure, to combine a broken spirit treasure and a quasi-spirit treasure into a real one.

To be the master of a spirit treasure, this thought would drive people crazy.

Now, Feiyun could only wait until San Ye’s death, then take the quasi-treasure from his hand. This would be the most difficult task.

Chapter 15 : Mysterious Guest

To deal with San Ye was not an easy task.

To rely on the city guards and Feng Feiyun alone would never be successful, so the next morning, Feng Feiyun left the mansion to find a powerful ally.

The tall and ancient Yin Gou Ward slowly appeared in front of his eyes.

Today, the atmosphere of the Yin Gou Ward was formal and solemn. There were armored guards on both sides of the statue at the front door. Eight men to the left, eight men to the right, all with cold steel lance in their hands. Their black skins were like metal, their eyes beamed killing intent no different from two packs of wild beasts.

Feng Feiyun stood outside the front gate, his eyes were slightly alarmed; he could clearly feel the powerful presence of the sixteen armored guards like an impregnable fortress made out of sixteen steel pillars.

These sixteen god slayers blocked the door, no one dared to step inside the Yin Gou Ward, not even one step.

'Really worthy of the Yin Gou Ward’s reputation. If these sixteen heavenly armored guards were to fight together, then their battle power would be extremely formidable; comparable to a strong army.'

Feng Feiyun felt that he had come to the right place!

No one was weak within the sixteen armored guards; their bodies gave off an invisible energy, any mosquitoes flying in the air would instantly be crushed.

This was Feng Feiyun’s first time seeing these sixteen guards. It was apparent that they had just arrived in Spirit State City today.

With the sixteen heavenly guards protecting the Yin Gou Ward, even the brave souls would only stand far away and watch; today, the Yin Gou Ward was a bit deserted, the inside was strangely empty and cold.

Early in the morning, white mist was still filling the streets. Feng Feiyun slowly walked out of the white mists.

“Ha ha! Young Master Feng, the Yin Gou Ward is not welcoming guests today, please come back at a later time.”

Manager Zheng Dongliu saw Feng Feiyun coming from afar.

Feng Feiyun clapped his hands and smiled:

“Today, I have a big proposition. Do you not want to conduct business, Manager Zheng?”

Zheng Dongliu sighed:

“Of course I want to do business, but today, I have a distinguished guest; with them here, I can’t do any business even if I wanted to.”

Feng Feiyun glanced at the sixteen armored guards and nodded his head. It seems like the Yin Gou Ward really can’t have guests today.

The sixteen armored guards were meant to escort the esteemed guest?

Who could be worthy of such a formal reception from Manager Zheng?

“Then tomorrow, I will visit again.”

Although Feng Feiyun was disappointed, he didn’t want to make it difficult.

“Young Master Feng, please wait one minute.”

Zheng Dongliu was standing inside the main door of the Yin Gou Ward. His body slightly bowed forward, seeming to be listening to someone speak, in a respectful manner.

Feng Feiyun stopped, his curiosity was piqued. Zheng Dongliu, as the manager of the Yin Gou Ward, his position in Spirit State City could not be underestimated. Even San Ye or Feng Wanpeng, the two dominant rulers, would only be on equal footing with the manager. Ultimately, the Yin Gou Clan was behind Zheng Dongliu, no one dared to offend such a monster.

The identity of the guest must not be simple to make Zheng Dongliu act so respectfully.

Zheng Dongliu was still bowing, and then he nodded. A while later, he stood up straight, turned his gaze towards Feng Feiyun and smiled:

“Young Master Feng, my words earlier were mistaken. A businessman should

always value business as the first priority.”

It seemed like the esteemed guest had said something to him, causing his change of heart.

However, the esteemed guest’s abilities must be great. Even with Feng Feiyun’s current cultivation, he couldn’t hear what the guest had said to Zheng Dongliu.

Feng Feiyun’s sleeves slightly fluttered with the direction of the wind, and he smiled:

“My business is absolutely lucrative, earning full pots and full scoops. The important thing is if Manager Zheng is daring enough?”

“There is no business in the world that the Yin Gou Ward wouldn’t dare to do.”

Zheng Dongliu confidently beat his chest and said.

“Young Master Feng, let us go inside to the inner chamber and talk.”

Feng Feiyun calmly walked in between the sixteen armored guards in an indifferent manner, as if he couldn’t feel their killing auras. He entered the Yin Gou Ward’s inner chamber under the guidance of Manager Zheng.

This wasn’t Feng Feiyun’s first time to the inner chamber of the Yin Gou Ward. It was particularly quiet here, not even a servant was around. Manager Zheng personally escorted the genuinely important guests himself to this place.

Feng Feiyun was now one of those esteemed guests.

Feng Feiyun sat on an ebony chair to the left side. Holding a jade cup, his eyes inadvertently, or purposely, glanced at the surrounding area. It seemed that there were no major changes compared to a few days ago.

On the wall was an ancient nature painting, below the painting was a back door, and the door’s curtain had been put down. There seemed to be a person sitting behind the curtain, but there was not a trace of life, as if it was just a statue.

This was the true esteemed guest, even Zheng Dongliu had to be respectful to this person.

When Feng Feiyun's eyes focused on the person behind the curtain, an enormous coercive pressure, heavy like a mountain, appeared before him.

This was an invisible pressure from the guest, with an overwhelming divinity.

"Bang!"

Within his body, his organs and bones were startled and shoved. It made a strange cracking noise, as if everything was crushed.

This was just an invisible energy, but it was strong enough to completely crush Feiyun without any chance to defend. Was it because he looked at the person once and that made them angry, wanting to kill Feiyun?

Anyone who was powerful would have an unusual temper.

This old expert's temper was too weird! The cultivation of the guest was too high, so it made Feng Feiyun naturally think that he was an old expert.

Feng Feiyun practiced the Immortal Phoenix Physique, his body was many times stronger compared to other intermediate Spirit Realm cultivators; but right now, his blood was boiling, his vessels were about to burst open.

If he was a normal person, he would have been squeezed into a pool of muddy blood.

"Bang!"

The shadow of the spirit vessel in Feng Feiyun's right palm started to rotate rapidly; an even more powerful aura came out of the boat, and shot towards the outside.

"Boom!"

The pressure of the whole space suddenly disappeared without a trace, as if the rough sea had suddenly calmed down.

Behind the curtain came a light sound, and afterward, the silence was restored.

With the pressure gone, Feng Feiyun felt that he was just in a masterful battle; his robe was soaked in cold sweat. If the spirit boat didn't help, maybe he would have been gravely injured by the pressure.

There were too many masters in this world!

Zheng Dongliu sat on the opposite side, his face still contained a smile. It was clear that he didn't notice any pressure, and didn't know that Feiyun and the esteemed guest already had one round of battle.

"This Zheng has already seen that Young Master Feng is a person who does great things, how big will this business be?"

Zheng Dongliu smilingly said.

Feng Feiyun took a deep breath, converged his mind and stopped looking at the curtain, then smiled:

"Murdering business, I'm not sure if the Yin Gou Ward is up for it?"

After the words were said, the smile on Zheng Dongliu immediately froze. He thought for a moment, then dignifiedly said:

"Murdering business always has a big risk, ah!"

"Big risk!"

Feng Feiyun replied.

"How big?"

Zheng Dongliu further inquired.

"One Blood Eagle Mansion."

Feng Feiyun firmly fixed his gaze on Zheng Dongliu's eyes.

"Hee!"

Zheng Dongliu took a big breath, his eyes were filled with surprise and panic, then said:

"You want to kill San Ye?"

"Not only San Ye, but the entire Eagle Claw gang!"

Feng Feiyun suddenly stood up and said:

"I've already gotten a military order from the governor. Within one month, I will lead five thousand city guards to raze the Blood Eagle Mansion, slay San Ye, and destroy the Eagle Claw gang."

“Five thousand city guards can destroy the Eagle Claw gang, but they can’t kill San Ye.”

Zheng Dongliu said.

Feng Feiyun smiled:

“I naturally cannot kill San Ye, but the Yin Gou Ward has so many masters, if you want to kill an intermediate Immortal Foundation cultivator like San Ye, perhaps difficult, but it is absolutely not impossible. As long as the Yin Gou Ward dispatches some experts to kill San Ye, then the wealth accumulated by the Eagle Claw gang will all belong to the Yin Gou Ward; I will not even take a coin. This business is definitely lucrative, does manager Zheng dare to partake?”

Feng Feiyun, again, pressed the question.

Each year, the Eagle Claw gang gathered more than fifty thousand gold coins. After a decade, this accumulation was definitely a huge number, it would be strange if Zheng Dongliu wasn’t tempted.

But to kill an intermediate Immortal Foundation expert, he would have to mobilize a large number of experts; this big business could not be conducted just by Zheng Dongliu’s command.

Feng Feiyun noticed that the expression on Zheng Dongliu’s face kept on changing, he knew the manager was tempted. He did not care about the money gathered by the Eagle Claw gang, he only wanted the quasi-spiritual treasure from San Ye’s hand.

Zheng Dongliu rose up from his chair and went toward the curtain. He kneeled down to the floor and bowed his head:

“Master, how do you see this?”

Chapter 16 : Birthday Party

Feiyun's eyes, once again, were projected towards the curtain. Zheng Dongliu called this person master, maybe this person was someone from the upper echelons of the Yin Gou Clan.

If the other party was really a higher ranking member of the Yin Gou Clan, then even if Feng Wanpeng was here, he would have to kneel down in front of this person.

After all, the Yin Gou Clan was one rank higher than the Feng Clan!

The person behind the curtain stood up, their lips seemed to gently move a little; no sound came out. Then, they sat back down again.

Voice transmission!

This person gathered the sound waves into a sound transmission, and directed it into Zheng Dongliu's ears.

This person's cultivation greatly exceeded Feiyun's expectation, definitely a master; maybe higher than both Feng Wanpeng and San Ye.

Zheng Dongliu nodded, then turned towards Feng Feiyun and smiled:

"My master said that Young Master Feng is too young, afraid that you won't be able control thousands of people fighting, and does not have too much confidence in you. Unless you can prove that you have enough courage, charisma, and intelligence; otherwise, this money losing business, the Yin Gou Ward will surely not do."
(TL: Weird sentence, especially the usage of afraid, but it is so common that if you accept this afraid usage, my tl life will be easier instead of morphing it so much. Same with the Yoda like talk in the last sentence.)

Feng Feiyun smiled:

"How does your master want me to prove it?"

Zheng Dongliu nodded:

“If you can answer three questions from my master, my master will personally kill San Ye. If master was to personally make a move, San Ye’s death is certain.”

Feng Feiyun’s eyes lingered in the air and smiled:

“Senior has such rhetoric, it seems like your abilities are formidable. Please start your questions!”

The person had an unparalleled cultivation, exceptional aura, and powerful mind spirit; Feng Feiyun assumed that it was an old expert that had been cultivating for more than a hundred years. Their hair must be white; otherwise, it would be impossible to reach the “ancient well without waves” state.
(TL: Meaning that the expert wasn’t fazed by anything, always calm like the water surface in a well.)

Of course, this was just a speculation from Feng Feiyun. The guest’s real age, he had no way of seeing through at the moment.

The wind caused the curtain to slightly move, a voice resonated from within.

The silhouette behind the curtain became even more ethereal; others wouldn’t be able to see her clearly, or determine her age. She wore a white spotless robe made from woven silk chiffon, delicate and elegant; she held a red lute in their hand, but wasn’t playing it.

This was an elegant old woman, Feiyun thought this in his mind!

Their voice was very hoarse, like the desert wind, dry and harsh.

“The first question, Eagle Claw gang members are separated throughout Spirit State City. To destroy it completely, they must all be in the same place; how will you gather a few thousand gang members together?”

This voice sounded like an old woman around the age of eighty, there was a sense of maturity within the deep voice.

However, Feiyun concluded that this is not her real voice, it was changed by a special method.

The other side did not want him to know her identity!

“In eight more days, will be the birthday of San Ye. Then, the entirety of the Eagle Claw gang will be there; it would be the opportune time to catch them all.”

She nodded, and continued:

“Second question, the gang members numbered more than four thousand. Even if they are disorganized, to kill them all, you would have to pay a heavy price. Have you taken into account the future casualties of the city guards?”

Feng Feiyun smiled:

“Of course, I have calculated it. If I were to take command, then the casualties would not exceed one hundred people.”

“Would not exceed one hundred?”

Zheng Dongliu interjected:

“Even under the command of the eighteen dukes of the Jin Dynasty, the casualties wouldn’t be just one hundred; Young Master Feng shouldn’t boast in front of my master’s presence.”

Feng Feiyun replied:

“This Feng has never boasted before; if Manager Zheng doesn’t trust me, you can come with me, eight days later, to the Blood Eagle Mansion?”

Zheng Dongliu furrowed his brows:

“With the exception of the Eagle Hawk members, no one has ever stepped inside Blood Eagle Mansion and made it out alive.”

“In order to deal with the Eagle Hawk gang, I have to embark into the Blood Eagle Mansion once.”

Feng Feiyun arched his body, the clear words gave the impression of a tremendous amount of confidence.

A long silence.

Behind the curtain came a gentle applause, she smiled and said:

“I never thought that, in the small Spirit State City, I would encounter such a bold boy. What is your name?”

Feng Feiyun was ecstatic in his heart, and said:

“This is your third question?”

“Correct.”

Her voice was still old and hoarse.

“Surname Feng, given name Feiyun.”

She said:

“Feng Feiyun, it seems like the descendants of the Feng Clan are indeed talented; this name, I will remember. You are still young and have promising talents, you should not be buried in this small Spirit State City; you need to go out to see the wider world.”

Feng Feiyun replied:

“I believe that that day will not be far from now.”

“This will conclude our business; not for anything else, but for the three words Feng Feiyun, the Yin Gou Ward will kill San Ye for you. We want the wealth of the Blood Eagle Mansion, not a coin less.”

She continued:

“This is the deal; after eight days, there will be blood in Spirit State City.”

After the business was settled, Feng Feiyun bought three more Blood Spirit Seeds before leaving to return to the mansion, his heart felt a lot more emboldened.

With the Yin Gou Ward tied to his chariot, this move that Feng Feiyun had decided to use against San Ye had been completed.

However, that old woman never came out, he was feeling very curious; what was her status?

When Feng Feiyun had left, the curtain was gently put to the side. A white jade hand stretched out; it was as if the hand was made out of ice, like a flawless blue lotus, blooming on the lake.

Zheng Dongliu saw the white hand moving outside, he quickly kneeled down on the ground and buried his head fiercely, nearly touching the floor.

Like a faithful hound seeing his owner!

This girl at the Yin Gou Clan had an extremely high position, he didn’t dare to

neglect his manners.

“Butterfly er, Butterfly er, follow him!”
(TL: er here is an endearing suffix to add to a name. Xiao Yu Er is an example, except Er was actually part of her name.)

In her jade-like palm, many large white clouds appeared. Clouds of fog shrouded the surroundings and they turned into a white crystal butterfly.

In the beginning, this butterfly was motionless, but it slowly came to life. Its wings started to flap, and from her palm, it flew outside of the Yin Gou Ward and chased towards Feng Feiyun.

This white crystal butterfly was formed with spirit energy. It had its own sentient thoughts, comparable to a half spirit beast.

“Master, your identity is supreme; for a small person such as Feng Feiyun, why waste eight days in Spirit State City?”

Zheng Dongliu appeared to be puzzled, and he humbly inquired.

The mysterious woman’s voice was no longer hoarse, but crisp like an oriole, and said:

“That person is not simple, he even withstood thirty percent of my coercive aura; his cultivation is very strange. This is the first reason.”

“Second, a little intermediate Spirit Realm cultivator, dared to go against an intermediate Immortal Foundation enemy; I can’t help but to admire his courage.”

“If he was able to exterminate the Eagle Claw gang, and with casualties not reaching one hundred, then he surely is a rare talent; I would not hesitate to become friends with him.”

Zheng Dongliu said:

“If Feng Feiyun could become your friend, then he will be renowned all over the world, rising in ranks will be just around the corner. Even if he had cultivated during his past eight lives, it would not warrant such a blessing.”
(TL: This phrase meaning that he had good karma from cultivating in his past life. Cultivation here means being a monk and does good deeds, not actual

cultivation.)

Zheng Dongliu knew the exact status of this master and how unbelievable it was. Even the current patriarch of the Feng Clan would have to bow towards her when they met; the governor Feng Wanpeng in front of her could only be considered an ant.

Her words were enough to mobilize ten million soldiers!

If Feng Feiyun could get her approval, then his future would be almost limitless. However, her eyes are so high, normal people couldn't get into her good grace.

Time flew by fast, and eight days would soon be over.

Feng Feiyun had only entered the military encampment of the city guards once. Having met the old woman in the Yin Gou Ward, he knew just how lacking his personal cultivation was. In the past few days, he had been using the Blood Spirit Seeds to raise his blood purity.

He used a total of eight Blood Spirit Seeds in the last eight days. Now, he could withstand the potency of the seeds without having to use the water pressure beneath the pond.

His blood became a bit darker, the speed of his blood flow had also improved.

These last eight days, Feng Feiyun had come to the Yin Gou Ward twice, but he didn't see the mysterious old lady, let alone the eighteen heavenly armored guards.

Feng Feiyun jumped on top of a crimson tiger, holding the reins and laughed:

"Elder Liu, today we go to a birthday celebration, no need to be so alarmed."

Housekeeper Liu was wearing a black robe, but he didn't look comfortable. With a stiff smile he said:

"The Blood Eagle Mansion might be the most dangerous place in Spirit State City, but I am not nervous one bit. I am only worried about young master! Eight days had past out of the one month limit, but you haven't made a move?"

Housekeeper Liu couldn't predict Feng Feiyun's thoughts, he didn't show even a sign of worry.

He had obviously vowed to send San Ye to the heavens, but now he is going to San Ye's birthday celebration with great fanfare, so which song was he singing in the end?
(TL: Meaning what the heck is he thinking?)

Feng Feiyun mysteriously smiled and said:

"Maybe I will make a move tonight."

Housekeeper Liu didn't believe that he would make a move tonight because the five thousand city guards were not mobilized. Was he planning to go with one hundred servants to kill a few thousands Eagle Claw members? It was simply a joke.

These one hundred servants were only carrying the birthday gifts; dozens of gift carriages were not something that could be carried by a few people, so Feng Feiyun brought along one hundred servants with able bodies to handle them.

This was the first time Feng Feiyun was going to San Ye's birthday party, so he was naturally very generous. The birthday gifts included twenty eight big carriages, each had four large metal chests that were filled with gifts not light of weight; the servants were cruelly worked and tired.

Feiyun was humming songs while leading this mighty crew to the birthday celebration.

Chapter 17 : Soul Suppressing Blood Formation

An ancient white carriage, that was around the corner, entered the street. The wheels grinded against the ancient street made from blue pebbles, creating a repetitive sound. The driver was an old man with a black veiled hat on his head.

“Master, the kid Feng Feiyun just left, will he make a move tonight or not?”

Zheng Dongliu lifted a part of his veil, revealing a pair of old eyes.

In the ancient carriage came a hoarse voice:

“Feng Feiyun has already started.”

“Has already started?”

Zheng Dongliu seemed quite puzzled and asked:

“But the five thousand city guards are not mobilized, what will he use to combat the Eagle Hawk gang?”

“His move is called 'during war, never stop deceiving,' the five thousand city guards were only a trick to fool San Ye. The true attack force is the one hundred and thirty six servants pushing the gift carriages. If I am not mistaken, these one hundred and thirty six servants were hand-picked from the absolute best of the city guards’ elites. They are the sharp knife aiming towards the heart of the Eagle Claw gang.”

The master responded.
(TL: A strategy in China. Literal translation would be War Never Tired Deceiving)

Zheng Dongliu was still skeptical and asked:

“He wants to use one hundred people to kill the entire Eagle Claw gang? Is Feng Feiyun crazy or not?”

"He is not crazy at all, the one hundred and thirty six elites are only the vanguard. They serve as a knife to disrupt the Eagle Hawk gang, the other five thousand city guards would be the real force."

Zheng Dongliu became even more confused and said:

“But you just said that the five thousand city guards were only a trick to confuse San Ye; plus, they are still in the barracks outside of the city – they are simply not mobilized.”

“Heh heh, but Spirit State City has a total of ten thousand city guards, where did the other five thousand guards go?”

The master responded.

Having heard the remark, Zheng Dongliu’s heart suddenly jumped, and yelled:

“Replace the beams with rotten timbers!”
(TL: A strategy from Sun Tzu’s 36 stratagems)

“Come! Feng Feiyun did not let me down. I would like to see if he could give me any more surprises.”

The master was a highly intelligent woman. Any actions from Feng Feiyun could not delude her eyes.

Zheng Dongliu controlled the ancient white carriage and slowly headed towards the Blood Eagle Mansion.

The Blood Eagle Mansion was located to the east of Spirit State City; it was made from piling up blue boulders, like a huge castle.

The thirty feet tall walls had towers and battle stations, just like an impregnable fortress; the defense was formidable.

If Feng Feiyun actually led five thousand city guards to attack the Blood Eagle Mansion, he most likely wouldn’t make it through the door before his entire troops were annihilated.

Now, the sun had set in the west mountains. The sunset was like a crimson flower on top of the peak outside of the city, illuminating the few last sun rays.

Feng Feiyun jumped down from the Crimson Tiger’s back and landed firmly on the ground. He squinted his eyes towards the front gate; the blood in his eyes started to flow, like many small rivers.

Gently inhaling the air, one could smell a pungent stench of blood.

The thick walls were engraved with ninety nine skeletons, each of them were

hideous. If it was night time, this place would turn into a ghost castle — simply frightening.

Feng Feiyun took out two fingers and gestured in the air. His eyes became more focused, and mumbled:

“Clearly, this is the Soul Suppressing Blood Formation; San Ye is, indeed, truly capable!”

As soon as the words left his mouth, a group of giant red eagles flew out from the Blood Eagle Mansion. With feathers as red as fire, their beaks had a symbol on them and were stiff like steel pincers.

They numbered around one hundred with claws as big as the human hands; they flew straight out from the green wall towards the carriages led by Feng Feiyun.

“Whoosh Whoosh!”

The flapping wings of the blood eagles caused the wind to roar, it tore the air apart; they caught all one hundred servants carrying gifts, like an eagle catching a small chicken, and brought them all inside the Blood Eagle Mansion. Then, all of them disappeared behind the castle walls.

What was left was only Feng Feiyun and Housekeeper Liu, as well as the twenty eight large carriages.

This was clearly the first blow, it seemed like Feng Suiyu had passed the message to San Ye that I wanted to deal with him.

Then… Very good, this was all part of the plan.

Feiyun’s face still had a faint smile, and he laughed loudly:

“San Ye is a renowned person, is this the hospitality of San Ye?”

An old hoarse voice came out from the mansion, extraordinarily loud and far reaching:

“This was because of all of my naive animals, they didn’t know better and caught all of Young Master Feng’s servants; these beasts are too bold.”

San Ye’s voice reached to almost half of Spirit State City. His cultivation was

really powerful, each of the sound waves turned into large sonic bells, heading towards Feng Feiyun.

It was like a crazy hurricane coming without restraints!

“Bang!”

Housekeeper Liu suddenly stood in front of Feiyun and knocked all of the sound waves away with one fist.

There was still a faint smile on Feiyun’s face. He naturally understood the ridicule in San Ye’s words, and replied:

“These animals are indeed very bold, San Ye must be very lax in your daily disciplining! It seems like I have to discipline them in place of San Ye.”

Feng Feiyun gave a small signal and Housekeeper Liu became a black shadow, flying away. Within the blink of an eye, he was already inside the Blood Eagle Mansion. Ordinary people wouldn’t have been able to see his shadow.

“Rumble!!”

A series of loud noises occurred as well as the screams of the eagles. A moment later, more than one hundred blood eagles became dead eagles; their carcasses were piled in one place.

Housekeeper Liu wiped the blood on his palms and stood in front of the Blood Eagle Mansion.

A long silence ensued!

An unknown amount of time had past, then the voice of San Ye resonated in the air once again:

“I had heard that Young Master Feng is different from the past; today, it seems like I have to look with a different pair of eyes. Boss Wu, don’t linger any longer, go bring the gifts from Young Master Feng in here.”
(TL: Look with a different pair of eyes is a saying from The Three Kingdoms, meaning a person had changed and can’t be judged with an old perspective)

Boss Wu, who only had one hand, brought with him a group of muscular men wearing red belts and came out from the Blood Eagle Mansion; they coldly stared at Feng Feiyun, then grinned.

His right hand was dismembered by a single blade from Feng Feiyun; with great hatred and grievances in his heart, he was anxious to rip apart Feiyun's muscles and flay his skin.

Naturally, Feiyun didn't consider them worthy in his eyes, and let them bring the twenty eight carriages into the Blood Eagle Mansion while following them at the back of the line.

***

"Master, it seems like San Ye isn't stupid, he had seen through the small tricks of Feng Feiyun; now with his one hundred and thirty six elites captured, what will Feng Feiyun do to defeat the enemy?"

Zheng Dongliu maneuvered the carriage to the small woods outside of the Blood Eagle Mansion and stared into the far distance.

His master was still comfortably sitting in the ancient carriage, and calmly said:

"Has Feng Feiyun entered the Blood Eagle Mansion?"

"He entered just now."

Zheng Dongliu replied.

"Within three shi chen, the Eagle Claw gang's name will be erased from Spirit State City."

His master's words were accompanied with a smile.
(TL: Shi chen = ancient chinese hours using the zodiacs, divided into twelve hours each day. One shi chen = two modern hours)

"What?"

Zheng Dongliu considered himself a wise man, but the events unraveling in front of him made him feel like he was a fool. Right now, Feng Feiyun did not have a single soldier, how could he destroy the many thousand men of the Eagle Claw gang?

But this master seemed to have the same perspective as Feng Feiyun; any moves from Feng Feiyun were not concealed from her.

She lifted the curtain; her fingers were out in plain sight again. The five delicate

fingers appeared to look like jade*, a white butterfly flew back and landed on her finger. Then, it became a strand of spirit energy and disappeared into her palm.
(TL: This is a chinese expression that is a lot more poetic, describing something looking like jade, but I didn't want to inaccurately embellish the raw to make it more English friendly.)

The corner of her lips revealed a smirk, as if she had learned something. A pair of perfectly clear and beautiful eyes, filled with intelligence, looked towards the Blood Eagle Mansion located a few thousand meters away. She saw the blood qi from the grand yard begin to move; the magical runes shuttled back and forth, this was a formation created from spirit energy as well as blood.

Her finger made a small symbol; her pretty eyes squinted, then smiled:

"The Soul Suppressing Blood Formation, it seems like Feng Feiyun will be in big trouble this time."

What was the Soul Suppressing Blood Formation?

Zheng Dongliu's experience was vast throughout the years and could be considered to know quite a few things regarding the cultivation world, but he had never heard of the Soul Suppressing Blood Formation.

The master let the curtain down, then she held her red lute in her hands; the fingers gently flicked the strings, then came a beautiful voice:

"The Soul Suppressing Blood Formation is a forbidden formation from the Sen Luo Temple. Rumour has it that it requires ninety nine male virgins and ninety nine female virgins in order to create a complete formation. The engraved patterns of blood makes up the runes, and the white skeletons create the foundation."

"Once the Soul Suppressing Blood Formation has been activated, it will wake up the Soul Eater Skeletal Beast from hell, and it will call on the Soul Suppressing Skeletal Sword; if god is in the way, slay god, if Buddha is in the way, slay Buddha. In the entire Grand Southern City, only three or five people could break this Soul Suppressing Blood Formation. Each of these few were all powerful giants, enough to frighten the four directions and eight spheres."

Having heard the remarks, Zheng Dongliu's expression greatly changed and

exclaimed:

“Even a thousand year spirit beast from the 'Beast Taming Camp' wouldn’t necessarily be able to fight against a Soul Eater Skeletal Beast, let alone the spirit energy from the Soul Suppressing Skeletal Sword; this time, with Feng Feiyun rashly going into the Blood Eagle Mansion, he will surely be dead nine times out of ten.”
(TL: Original raw would be, ten parts nine dead)

“Unfortunately, this Soul Suppressing Blood Formation is simply not completed. With San Ye’s cultivation, he had no chance of forming a real Soul Suppressing Blood Formation. This one is only a corner of the real formation. Even if the Soul Eater Skeletal Beast was to be awakened, its battle power is at most one percent of the real thing, not enough to cause fear.”

In this world, there didn’t seem to be anything that could be hidden from her eyes; wise and deep, akin to a grand sage traveling the mortal world.

***

When Feng Feiyun had stepped into the Blood Eagle Mansion; Feng Wanpeng, Feng Suiyu, and Strategist Ge were all standing on top of the castle wall, gazing towards the Blood Eagle Mansion.

Feng Suiyu secretly sneered in his mind: “Feng Feiyun ah, the Blood Eagle Mansion will be your grave. You probably didn’t know that I had already sent the news of your attack to San Ye. The moment you step inside the Blood Eagle Mansion is the moment where you jump head-first into a net-to seek your own death.”
(TL: Jumping head first into a net is another common Chinese expression)

Strategist Ge gently swayed his feather fan and furrowed his brows:

"This child Feng Feiyun is too rash, how could he go alone into the Blood Eagle Mansion. Even with Housekeeper Liu’s protection, how will they resist the entire few thousands of gang members of the Eagle Claw gang? This chess move is such a failure!"

Feng Wanpeng’s face also became dignified: “Did I make a mistake? I simply shouldn’t have let him deal with the Eagle Claw gang. Ultimately, he is too young

in age; plus, he didn't cultivate. There is simply no way out from rushing into the Blood Eagle Mansion."

Feng Wanpeng's heart was filled with regrets. If San Ye was determined to kill Feng Feiyun, then, even he, wouldn't be able to have the chance to save him. If Feng Feiyun truly died in there, then how could he be worthy of Feiyun's mother's exhortations?

Thinking of Feiyun's mother, Feng Wanpeng tightly gripped his fists and shivered:

"Feiyun, you better not let me down!"

Chapter 18 : A Song That Wrenches The Heart

Feng Feiyun slowly walked into the legendary and most dangerous place inside of Spirit State City – the Blood Eagle Mansion.

The twenty eight large carriages, with the chests, had been brought by Boss Wu, and they were taken into the backyard.

The one hundred and thirty six servants, that were captured, were all tied to a pillar, and they had lost their ability to act.

Feng Feiyun didn't look at these tied up servants, only at San Ye, who was sitting in the grand chamber. Rumour had it that San Ye had lived past one hundred. He was indeed an old — an undead monster.

San Ye sat comfortably on a large chair made from ivory as the mysterious black robe, on his body, fluttered in the wind; his scarred and boney left cheek was completely bloodless, and this made him look like a ghost in the night – very grim.

One had to pay a large price to cultivate the Heaven Restoration Evil Eyes!

Why must he turn himself into someone that doesn't look like a human or a ghost? Why does he bother with such torture?

Feng Feiyun sighed heavily, stood up, and he then said, in a reasonable manner: "Today was supposed to be a good day that celebrated San Ye's birthday. And yet, this is your way of treating your guests?"

Feng Feiyun pointed towards the servants that had been roped to the pillar, his words filled with dissatisfaction.

"Keke! Go offer some tea to Young Master Feng!"

San Ye, as if he didn't notice the implications behind Feiyun's words, wore a calculating smile on his face; he gently touched a black ornamental ring on his thumb. The black ornamental ring exuded a black glow, and, on the body, there were seven tiny ancient runic words; it was as if there were seven grimaces that gave off a mysteriously profound aura.

San Ye had stolen this black ornamental ring from the Sen Luo Temple; it was a quasi-spiritual treasure, and it was extremely hard. Even the sharpest sword couldn't leave the tiniest of marks on it; even if one put it in spirit fire in an attempt to melt it, the shape of it wouldn't even warp.

Sixty years ago, because of the theft of this Infinite Spirit Ring, San Ye had to escape from the Sen Luo Temple to Spirit State City, that was, many thousands of miles away.

However, after he'd successfully stolen the Infinite Spirit Ring, he was filled with regrets. The Infinite Spirit Ring, outside of its power that was many times greater than a regular magical treasure, didn't have any other functions. It could only be considered a powerful quasi-spiritual treasure.

Just because he had the quasi-spirit treasure, he had to hide from the experts of the Sen Luo Temple for sixty years; it hadn't been worth it.

"The Infinite Spirit Ring was a top secret treasure from the Sen Luo Temple. I've heard from a Sen Luo elder that its origin was extremely mysterious; it was dug up from an ancient burial ground filled with great dangers – it couldn't simply be just a quasi-spiritual treasure. It must have a hidden ability that I haven't figured out yet."

San Ye stared at the seven ancient runes on the body of the ring, and he felt that the ghostly eyes were also staring back at him. If he could figure out the truth behind the seven runes, then he could unravel the secrets of the Infinite Spirit Ring.

His heart certainly thought so!

Feng Feiyun's eyes also noticed San Ye's thumb on the black ring, and thought it was probably the quasi-spiritual treasure that was in San Ye's hands.

A quasi-spiritual treasure's effect is powerful, it must be handled with caution. Feiyun wondered: had the experts of the Yin Gou ward arrived yet?

Feng Feiyun was acting calm and indifferent, but he'd started to worry in his heart. If the experts from the Yin Gou ward didn't appear, then, the entirety of his strategy would be wasted.

To confront a master like San Ye, Housekeeper Liu wasn't enough.

Today was San Ye's birthday, and the head figures of Spirit State City should've come to celebrate; even as the night curtain was slowly pulled down, not a single guest had appeared. Only Feng Feiyun and Housekeeper Liu were sitting in the grand chamber.

The party was quite deserted!

Men dressed in black, with red belts around their waists, patrolled the hall; their gazes were filled with danger, sneers were on their faces, and exceptionally dazzling grand sabers were held their hands.

A chilly wind blew over, causing Feng Feiyun to be chilled to the bones. He lifted his head up, and saw a pair of serious eyes that were filled with evil energy from San Ye.

The eyes were filled with an evil aura, and felt similar to a bloody knife stabbing into Feng Feiyun's soul. If it was a normal person, his soul would've already been dissipated from this glare.

However, Feng Feiyun carried the soul of a phoenix; his soul was extremely powerful. Even if San Ye's cultivation was ten times stronger, he still wouldn't be able to damage Feiyun's soul.

"Oh? This kid is quite strange. Even my Heaven Restoration Evil Eyes didn't have any effect… Could he be wearing a spiritual treasure that can withstand the evil pressure of my evil eyes?"

San Ye's heart became more alarmed. He naturally didn't believe that Feiyun could use his own strength to combat the power of the Heaven Restoration Evil Eyes; he assumed that he was using an external tool to block his invisible attack.

After all, the Heaven Restoration Evil Eyes was one of the twelve evil techniques of the Sen Luo Temple. Even though San Ye hadn't reached the grand completion stage with it, its power was still extraordinary.

San Ye's eyes became bright as he got ready to use his full power — intending to kill with his eyes.

Feng Feiyun naturally wouldn't wait for his death, he stood straight up. He didn't take a single step backwards, but he went forwards instead. With two hands gracefully, behind his back, he went straight towards San Ye and said:

“San Ye, your hospitality today has left me greatly disappointed, ah!”

Feiyun’s clear eyes and his black pupils gazed straight back at San Ye’s Heaven Restoration Evil Eyes, and he didn’t even try to avert the glare; instead, he wore a smile on his face.

To use mortal eyes to confront the Heaven Restoration Evil Eyes!

However, San Ye couldn’t smile even if he tried — this was really bizarre! Even with a spirit treasure on his body, there was no way that Feiyun could stop his Heaven Restoration Evil Eyes in this circumstance this close in proximity!

Plus, he was even staring straight back into the Heaven Restoration Evil Eyes!

What was this situation?

San Ye’s heart was filled with fear. This crazy child couldn’t be left alone, lest, in the future, he would certainly become a calamity.

“Bang!” San Ye’s fingers destroyed a corner of the table, turning it into dust, and a scary smile appeared on his decomposed face: “Feng Feiyun, you’re considered my guest? Don’t think that I don’t know the reason that you’re here. Even your father, Feng Wan Peng, wouldn’t dare to destroy my Eagle Hawk Gang, yet, you, a yellow small child, thinks that you can accomplish this?
(TL: Yellow (Huang Kou) xiao er or a yellow small child. A derogatory term meaning others as young and foolish)

San Ye suddenly stood up and signaled with his hand. There were one hundred black clothed men that came from all four directions, and all were holding black steel sabers filled with heavy killing intent. They surrounded Feng Feiyun and Housekeeper Liu.

Housekeeper Liu flew upward, and he then stood in front of Feng Feiyun in an attempt to protect him; his face became very solemn.

Feng Feiyun’s expression remained the same, and he slowly stepped forward from behind Housekeeper Liu, who was in front of him. His face had a hint of a smile, and he said, “You’re already over one hundred years old, yet you still can’t maintain your composure? You shouldn’t lose your head like this.”

Feng Feiyun didn’t try to hide the contemptuous smile in his eyes, making

everyone present realize how insidious he was.

“What do you mean?”

San Ye’s eyes squinted, as a bad premonition formed in his mind.

“Boom!”

A monstrously loud sound erupted from the Blood Eagle Mansion, along with a destructive force capable of annihilating everything.

“Rumble!”

Even the ground started shaking as many deafening explosions occurred. The house collapsed, pillars went flying, and a huge fire was started. This caused the entire Blood Eagle Mansion to be engulfed in a sea of flame.

The black clothed and domineering men from earlier were all frightened, and they had deathly pale faces; they escaped in the midst of the disaster. There were also those with piercing cries of despair that screamed like pigs being butchered.

“In the end, what’s happening?”

San Ye screamed loudly, but he still stood there, standing in the middle of the spreading flames as a black aura consumed his face like an evil ghost.

“San Ye, that bastard Feng Feiyun hid some elite troops inside the twenty eight large carriages, as well as some fire oils and thunder explosive crystals. Now, the entire Blood Eagle Mansion has been destroyed.”

Boss Wu stumbled from the flames, and he kneeled in front San Ye; his face blackened by the fire, and a large chunk of his hair was burned off. His mouth exhaled smoke – words couldn’t describe the patheticness of the scene.

“Useless waste!”

San Ye’s entire body shook from rage, and a heavenly palm came out, turning into dark black clouds, tearing Boss Wu into pieces — blood and flesh scattered across the floor.

The twenty eight large carriages had four chests each, and each chest had two men hidden inside; thus, the total was two hundred and twenty four hidden

elites from the city guard.

These two hundred and twenty four guards were truly the real elite; in one shot, they fractured the Eagle Claw gang to the core.

They appeared to repair the gallery roads, but they actually made secret advances through Chencang!
(TL: A strategy by Han Xin, meaning to perform an elaborate ruse)

Fire continued to spread and burned even more rigorously.

With the bright fire's light, that night in Spirit State City was particularly bright.

The Blood Eagle Mansion's walls were big and fortified, even thunder explosive crystals weren't certain of destroying them. It used to be an impregnable fortress, but now, it became the burial ground for the few thousand gang members of the Eagle Hawk Gang — they couldn't escape even if they tried.

San Ye broke into a long laugh, and he wore an especially gloomy smile, saying: "Feng Feiyun, I underestimated you. However, if you want to kill me, I'm afraid that this isn't enough weight."

"Boom!"

San Ye stomped once, and his whole body invertedly flew into the sky, directly to the top of the wall that was tens of meters high. He spread his hands, and two strands of black spirit energy came out of his fingers, like two giant black suns floating in the sky.

Two magical divine runes and ghost spirits were wrapped around the two black spirit energies. One was "Ghost Manual" and the other was "Battle Sword."

It created a terrifying force that stirred the souls of the spectators.

"Oh! San Ye wants to activate the Soul Suppressing Blood Formation; if we let him activate the formation, we'll all die here."

Feng Feiyun flew out from the sea of flames with the Crimson Dragon saber in his hand, his hair standing up from anger. He headed towards the top of the walls, wanting to stop San Ye from activating the Soul Suppressing Blood Formation.

At this moment, Housekeeper Liu was fighting with a few hundred black

clothed fighters, and his attention couldn't be divided. Feiyun could only count on himself.

Right now, Feiyun's cultivation was in the intermediate Spirit Realm stage, where one step could travel five zhang, almost to the stage where each step he took would be the same as taking flight.
(TL: One zhang = 3.33 meters. Each step taking flight describes someone so fast that his walking was like flying)

San Ye stood on top of the wall that towered tens of meters high; his eyes filled with disdain. With both of his folded hands positioned in front of his chest, he yelled: "Soul Suppressing Blood Formation, open!"

His white hair stood straight up as the two magical runes in his hands fused together, creating a power capable of destroying the heavens and earth. At this moment, he was like an evil god descending.

The two magical runes and their spirit energies became a huge human head, that was as big as a black hole. It seemed as if it could devour the world.

"Boom!"

The force became ten times more powerful; like a wild tornado screeching, like a wild beast roaring, and like the wide sea turning itself into a tsunami. Even the earth began to crack open, and it created a small opening. It was as if something was emerging from underground.

Feng Feiyun was unable to move from the pressure. He could only insert his blade into the ground and grip it heavily so that the energy wouldn't blow him away.

The blade's body in the crevice started making "crack crack" sounds from the friction as his body was slowly pushed backward.

San Ye originally was in the intermediate Immortal Foundation stage, and that was three stages higher than Feiyun's. Plus, the Soul Suppressing Blood Formation, indeed, had the strength to rebel against the heavens. Too powerful, one couldn't resist!

"A song that wrenches the heart, O where do I find knowing ears!"

A person was playing the lute, and the beautiful sound of the lute touched their hearts.

A loud lute sound vibrated from above the heavens, and it pierced the expansive sky. A ray of sonic waves came from above like a sharp blade.

San Ye's body was suddenly startled and became motionless; it was as if he had been petrified.

"Slash!"

San Ye's body split in two like there was an invisible double-edged sword that had cut him from above.

Fresh blood flew everywhere, staining the walls red.

San Ye's body fell from the wall down to the ground, and shattered into pieces.

An intermediate Immortal Foundation expert died from just one sound of a lute?

Everyone was shocked. Just who was the person who'd played the lute in the end?

Housekeeper Liu was frightened! In the distance, Feng Wan Peng was also shocked!

Feng Feiyun, with the Crimson Dragon saber in his hand, was also filled with surprise. He rubbed his cold palms together, looked towards the outside of the Blood Eagle Mansion, and he said: "Wow, this old grandma's cultivation is truly horrifying. It's surely gone beyond the realm of Immortal Foundation. Not simple, truly not simple."

"Boom!"

Just as Feng Feiyun finished speaking, a loud crumbling noise occurred.

The thick stone walls started to crack, and then they collapsed, becoming thick powder covering the ground.

Everyone took a deep cold breath. This lute sound was too extraordinary; it had killed San Ye, destroyed the Soul Suppressing Blood Formation, and it had broken the walls.

This… This was the power of a human?

Chapter 19 : Infinite Spirit Ring

The flame inside the Blood Eagle Mansion soared to the heavens; the fire crackled, and it was unknown as to when it would be extinguished.

The servants, who were originally tied to the pillar, had long been rescued and the five thousand city guards carrying black banners had long been in an ambush outside the mansion.

“Kill!”

“Tonight is the night of the Eagle Claw gang’s demise!”

“Young Master Feng is wise with heavenly might; he beheaded San Ye, destroyed the Eagle Claw gang, and he protected the people from evil!”

“Kill them without leaving even a scrap of armor behind!”

***

Five thousand city guards were adorned in black armor with long spears in hand, and they were riding red tigers; they were truly as fierce as a black dragon flying to this place. Wherever the black dragon touched, bodies would drop to the ground one by one.

The sound of their chants shook the earth.

It was already determined that tonight would not be peaceful; the whole Spirit State City was shrouded in smoke as it became a battlefield filled with soldiers possessing morale as high as a rainbow.
(TL: Describes the spirit is extremely high, extremely heroic spirit)

“San Ye is dead, and anyone who surrenders will be spared!”

Someone brought the bloody clothings of San Ye on top of a spear head, and that person yelled at the top of his lungs. The gang members of the Eagle Claw gang, who were already scared, became even more frightened; their morale was completely shattered, and they lost the will to fight against the city guards.

In this war, Feng Feiyun didn’t have to waste too much effort. Even though the

Eagle Hawk gang had a few thousand members, they crumbled in the end. First, he used the five thousand city guards left outside the city to confuse San Ye's eyes, then he hid a group of elites inside the treasure chests on top of the gift carriages brought into the Blood Eagle Mansion; the whole attack caught the enemies with their hands behind their backs, and he later used the expert from the Yin Gou Ward to slay San Ye and completely destroy the rest of the enemy's morale.

Sieging the castle was secondary, sieging the hearts was essential!
(TL: Originally from the Sun Tzu, rephrased by Ma Su)

Making the enemy lose their confidence, that was half the battle.

This perfect battle had demonstrated Feng Feiyun's courage and excellent planning; he risked himself to infiltrate the enemy's nest. Using himself as bait to attract San Ye's attention, this was the key to defeating the enemy.

Within only one hour, the battle had concluded. The Blood Eagle Mansion was left with more than one thousand corpses, and the remaining gang members had all surrendered; they were escorted by the city guards to Spirit State City's prison.

When the battle ended, Feng Wanpeng, Feng Suiyu, and Strategist Ge all rushed over. A row of black clothed men were squatting along the street, signaling their surrender with both hands in the air — a few thousand people surrendered.

This was the Eagle Claw gang that was always terrorizing the people?

Feng Suiyu couldn't believe his own eyes. He clenched his teeth, both eyes were red, and his heart was filled with rage:

"Feng Feiyun is just an idiot, how could he have such strategies? Let alone such courage? This is absolutely impossible!"

However, the were facts laid in front of him; he had no choice but to admit that Feng Feiyun was indeed an expert at military strategy. He had exceptional intelligence, and he was definitely not a mediocre person.

As Feng Feiyun became more and more like a genius, Feng Suiyu felt an even greater crisis; his eyes flashed with hints of obscured killing intent.

In recent times, Strategist Ge had witnessed the intelligence and the instantaneous growth of Feng Feiyun. In his heart, he was ecstatic; sighing:

“Good and well hidden schemes; a strong heart and mind; sieging the castle; deceiving the enemy; even I couldn’t lay such a perfect plan. Governor, the future of Young Master Feng is without limits. If Young Master participates in the Military Strategy Iron Council, he will definitely make a big wave. He will be suddenly renowned like a phoenix flying in the nine heavens.

Feng Wanpeng’s mind, at the moment, was even more agitated. His eyes were accompanied with a myriad of feelings, and his fingers tapped on his armor again and again; he lifted his head, looking in the far distance, and he bitterly said:

“Feng Xuan, do you see? Feng Feiyun has truly grown up. If you could see this, would you smile just once?”

Feng Wanpeng’s throat motioned up and down and his watery eyes had tears running freely, but they were clear tears of happiness.

He was too excited! He couldn’t try to not be ecstatic!

***

The night was like a delicate silk pattern, swallowing the entire heaven and earth.

Feng Feiyun flew out from the sea of flames, passed the high walls, and disappeared into the small forest outside of the mansion. In his hand was a black ornamental ring, and on it was six or eight engravings of ancient runes.
(Nahct: It’s clearly 7 but the author uses “6 or 8” to be poetic)

The black ornamental ring was taken from the hand of San Ye’s dead body.

Even though it was only an ornamental ring, it weighed more than ten pounds; the density, compared to black steel, was greater by the tens.

“A quasi-spiritual treasure cannot be underestimated; however, outside of the heavy weight, I can’t feel any other mysteries that could be hidden within it.”

Feng Feiyun held the black ornamental ring in his hand; whether it was injecting spirit energy or placing blood on it, there was no sign of change. It was as if it was indeed an ordinary stone pebble.

“These seven ancient runes… Quite mysterious!”

His eyes noticed the seven ancient runes on the body of the ornamental ring; each of the words were as big as a fly’s leg. With the eyesight of an ordinary person, one wouldn’t be able to identify these runic words. Even with Feng Feiyun’s current cultivation, he could barely see them; however, he couldn’t recognize them or their meaning.

The seven runic words were truly ancient; it was as if they were seven symbols from an old age.

“Oh!”

Feng Feiyun lightly mumbled. When he put the ornamental ring in his right palm, he felt the spirit vessel, hidden in his hand, become startled. It started to jump around; It was like the spirit vessel had hopped into his blood vessels and decided take a stroll.

Maybe there was a connection between the Infinite Spirit Ring and the Bronze Azure Spirit Vessel?

Right now, Feiyun was both surprised and scared. The spirit vessel was truly mysterious; to be able to merge with the body was definitely something only a Holy Saint Spirit Treasure could do. If the Infinite Spirit Ring could be connected to the spirit vessel, then it couldn’t just be a simple quasi-spiritual treasure.

Feng Feiyun, full of excitement, brought the ornamental ring onto his right palm, on top of the spirit vessel, and a magical event happened.

The seven ancient runes on the Infinite Spirit Ring slowly rotated like they were seven fishes swimming in a river.

“Phoosh!”

“Phoosh!”

From the Infinite Spirit Ring came a black blooming brilliance; it was as if they were strings of evil black ghosts, causing the dark night to become even more gloomy and sinister.

The remnants of the Bronze Azure Spirit Vessel in Feiyun’s palm, that had disappeared in his bloodstream, also emitted a bright azure light like a heavenly

blue lamp.

The black aura and the bright azure light appeared at the same time within the palm of Feng Feiyun!

“Hghhh! Hghhhh! Hghhhh! Hggh… Hggh!”

The seven ghosts from the Infinite Spirit Ring wouldn’t stop flying. They turned into different shapes becoming seven mysterious pictures: “Dragon Horse River Diagram”, “Eight Trigrams Mysterious Language”, “Four Yang Ancient Cauldron”, “Netherworld Spirit Pagoda”, “Heavenly Flying King”, “Hundred Ghosts Banquet”, and “Ten Thousands Lights”.

It was fortunate that Feng Feiyun’s knowledge was vast, otherwise he would be extremely frightened by this scene; all seven paintings created a divine pressure, and the ideas behind them were profound. Only a simple strand of their power would have given people difficulty in breathing.

The seven ancient runic words turned out to be seven different paintings, no wonder why no one had figured it out. Without the help of the spirit vessel in waking them up, Feng Feiyun would most likely not have been able to solve the secret of the Infinite Spirit Ring using his whole lifetime.

“Boom!”

The seven ancient paintings hovering in the air, shattered. They turned into small strands of black smoke, and they flew back into the Infinite Spirit Ring; they became the seven tiny ancient runic words engraved into the ring.

Feng Feiyun didn’t have time to think about what exactly happened; inside his body was another sky shattering and earth shifting change.

The spirit vessel’s remnants also sunk into the body and its imprint, from the palm, disappeared without a trace.

At the same time, Feiyun’s blood seethed with excitement. There was a blue light within his blood vessels, and his blood started becoming jet black like ink; hidden with a magical shining aura, enumerating dazzling black mysterious rays.

“Boom!”

Feiyun’s dantian exploded, the spirit pathway in his dantian quickly expanded,

and the spirit energy in his blood frantically poured inside.

Inside the spirit pathway, each strand of spirit energy was like a small river converging into a sea as big as the Yellow River.

The spirit pathway that connected the heart to the dantian caused his breathing to increase by nine times in a short span of time; it was as if a divine waterfall had taken over his bloodstream.

This was a sign of Spirit Realm grand completion!

Feng Feiyun had stepped into the peak of the Spirit Realm.

Everything had not ended as the Bronze Azure Spirit Vessel, which was smaller compared to a grain of rice, kept on moving through his bloodstream. Each of its full revolutions doubled the spirit energy inside the body of Feng Feiyun.

The spirit vessel was like a pool of spirit energy for him. It continuously streamed throughout Feiyun's circulation; when it would stop was unknown.

Feng Feiyun's cultivation continued to rapidly grow; little by little it increased!

The spirit pathway in his dantian, that connected to his heart, also had a new subtle change; it slowly condensed into the form of an immortal plant sprout. This was the process of going from the "Spirit Realm" into "Immortal Foundation."

Many practitioners who cultivated for decades were blocked by this blockade, but Feng Feiyun borrowed the strength of the spirit vessel; thus, it was possible for him to break this blockade. His body would now begin forming its immortal foundation.

Once the immortal foundation was condensed, then he would be at the first step onto the true road of cultivation. One could practice many magical and unbelievable methods such as: "Target Seeking Sword", "Wind Pressure Saber", "Thousand Miles Seeing Eyes", "All Hearing Ears", "Water Treading Steps", and "Spatial Traversing Grasp".

Once one reached the Immortal Foundation rank, they could obtain spirit beast as slaves, excavate mysterious spirit stones, search for spirit plants, and refine spirit pills…

The strength of an Immortal Foundation cultivator was ten times that of a Spirit Realm cultivator.

The second level of the cultivation world was Immortal Foundation; Immortal Foundation was the beginning essence of becoming an immortal.

Reaching the Immortal Foundation rank allowed for one to become a governor of one city and dominate a region, just like a true master. In a few cultivation sects, once this rank was reached, one could leave his apprenticeship and freely roam the world.

Chapter 20 : Dongfang Jingyue

People possessed an Intelligence Foundation, so people were wise; people had a Life Foundation, so there was life; people, along with the intelligence and life, must also have an Immortal Foundation, to set foot on the road of cultivation.

This was the process that each cultivator had to experience. They had to cross the Spirit Realm to refine the Immortal Foundation, and then, they had to build the God Base.

The Spirit Realm was the cultivation inheritance method of one's master; with it, the body became a place to nurture spirit energy.

For example, Feng Feiyun's inheritance was the cultivation method of the Demon Phoenix Race, and his Spirit Realm was also the Phoenix Spirit Realm.

As for Feng Wanpeng's and Feng Suiyu's method, it would be the Vigorous Gale Method. Their inheritance belonged to the Feng Clan, and their cultivational Spirit Realm was the Vigorous Gale Spirit Realm.

Above the Spirit Realm was the Immortal Foundation.

When the Spirit Realm had enough conscious spirit energy, it would form into an Immortal Foundation's plant root in the dantian of the cultivator, absorb the natural spirit energy of the world and grow stronger.

Once the Immortal Foundation's plant matured, another metamorphosis would occur; the plant would turn into the God Base.

The God Base was the first building block in the cultivational world. Once the God Base was formed, the cultivator would then be considered to have the qualification to become an immortal; his dantian would become as hard as a boulder. The spirit energy would become restrained and hidden, and even an opponent in front of him wouldn't be able to recognize him as a cultivator. This was the most frightening type of person!

Spirit Realm, Immortal Foundation, and God Base are the three ranks that all cultivators must go through, and each rank was divided into three levels: early, intermediate, and peak.

Of course, there were ranks above God Base, but the cultivators that belonged to those ranks were above the mortal world; even a great clan, like the Feng Clan that ruled one direction, did not have many people reaching such a rank.

Once one had surpassed the God Base rank, his longevity would be above five hundred years; they would obtain supernatural techniques, and they would even compete for the heaven's fate.

"Bang, bang!"

Feng Feiyun's boiling blood became as black as ink, and for a long time, it could not calm down. The Azure Bronze Spirit Vessel crossed the blood vessels into the heart, and it then passed through the spirit pathway, without stop, into the dantian.

This Azure Bronze Spirit Vessel was like an ancient heavenly boat, lingering in the sky, within the dantian. In the azure radiating light, there were many different colors,and each mysterious magical Dao rune intertwined above, it seemed mythical.

The eighteen steel pillars on top of the Azure Bronze Spirit Vessel had rusted, and the open sails were also tattered; the amount of time that had passed was unknown. Even the holy saint spirit energy had begun to dissipate, becoming depleted.

Even so, there was still a lingering presence that could strike fear into the hearts of people, flashing in eternal brilliance.

This was the first time where Feng Feiyun took a careful observation of the ancient spirit vessel. This was the thing that escorted him from the Yellow Springs River, to this place. In it, must be an exceptional mystery.

He felt like he was controlled by an unknown person on this twisted path, and he had no choice but to take this route.

Seemingly, behind the spirit vessel was an invisible hand, changing Feng Feiyun's Fate Mark; it even went around the natural rules of the heaven and earth in order for him to reincarnate and merge with the soul of Young Master Feng.

In the end, certainly, there were terrible unknown secrets hidden behind the

scene, shrouded to all. Who could have such supernatural power?

The spirit vessel must be somehow related to the black ornamental ring!

Once the Azure Bronze Spirit Vessel had become silent in the dantian, the natural world energy stopped crazily coming in; the Spirit Realm had almost reached the Immortal Foundation, only missing a single step.

“I did not expect to reach the peak of the Spirit Realm so soon.”

Feng Feiyun opened his eyes, and two rays flashed from his black pupils; a smirk then appeared at the corner of his lips.

Each small level was a hurdle, and many people took years to break through such a small level. Even the genius, Feng Suiyu, had taken one year to break through from intermediate Spirit Realm to peak Spirit Realm, and now, he was stuck at the peak level without being able to take an additional step.

Practicing daoism was difficult, and practicing daoism was bitter.

One had to be able to withstand the loneliness, the trials, and the torture in order to succeed and become a cultivator that could fly through the sky and traverse the earth.
(TL: Raw text is dig through the earth but it sounds less cool in English)

Feng Feiyun put away the black ornamental ring into his robe; he planned to research it at a later date. Suddenly, his neck became cold from a chilling aura coming from above his head; it caused half of his body to be frozen.

Danger!

His body tumbled to the ground, and he moved twenty meters away!

“Boom!”

From the dark sky came a black shadow, causing the ground that Feng Feiyun had stood on to become a two meter deep crater.

Smoke and flame billowed, leaves in the forest scattered everywhere.

“Whoosh!”

Feng Feiyun turned around. The Crimson Dragon Saber was unsheathed, and with the blade in his hand, he designated his gaze towards the black shadow.

When the smoke had cleared, the shadow gradually began to reveal its true shape; it was a white ancient carriage, covered with transparent crystals. It was as if they were uncarved diamonds.

There were nine spirit nails on top of the carriage, emblazoned with runic words; however, because of the dark sky, it was difficult to tell what the words were.

The driver was an old man wearing a dark hat. Feng Feiyun was able to guess that the man was old because on the top of his head was a portion of white hair; they were dry and not shiny, and only the hair of an elder would have this appearance.

This ancient carriage came from the sky, but there was no accompanying flying beast to pull it; this meant that the handler was quite powerful, and his cultivation was enough to ride the spirit energy in the sky.

Such experts, not even mentioning Spirit State City, would not be easily found in the whole Bai Ling County.

This old man of course did not have such a cultivation, so then, the person controlling the carriage must be the mysterious person inside.

Feng Feiyun held his saber horizontally even though he knew how formidable his opponent was. However, he was not afraid; his heart was calm and ready to strike at any moment.

Silence, a long silence!

An unknown amount of time had passed, and the ears of the old man driver slightly moved. It seemed like the person inside was telling him something. He nodded his head, and he slowly got out of the ancient carriage; with both hands behind his back, he contemplatively stared at Feng Feiyun. Even though his black hat covered his face, Feng Feiyun felt a familiar presence from the old man.

This old man he definitely had met before.

This was a spiritual sense; with the spiritual sense of a phoenix, he definitely couldn’t be wrong.

However, he couldn’t continue his analysis. The ancient white carriage

suddenly flew away from the ground, and it aimed straight towards Feng Feiyun, along with the roar of the wind.

Without any indication, the ancient carriage, with the speed of the wind, the curtain's corner was lifted and, inside, a sweet smell escaped like it was a smell from a certain blossoming spirit flower.

Feng Feiyun continued to pay attention to this ancient carriage; thus, when the ancient carriage made a move, his Crimson Dragon Saber also moved. Two hands gripping the blade, and one strike through the air.

The blade pierced the air, creating a sound.

"Bang, bang."

"Boom!"

Today, Feiyun's cultivation had reached the peak of the Spirit Realm and the force of his hands were amazing. In addition, with the sharpness of the Crimson Dragon Saber; he could even destroy the sturdy steel gate of Spirit State City with one strike.

This strike was also accompanied by a crimson aura, as well as a destructive force, that was met with the opposition, akin to a heavenly mountain; the pressure from the blade's body spread to the handle, and it rendered Feiyun's hands completely numb.

"Bang, bang!"

The blade and the ancient carriage collided, and sparks flew everywhere!

Feng Feiyun returned his blade to his back; his hands shook to the bone by the collision, feeling splitting pain.

"Who the hell are you! And why are you making a move against me?"

Feng Feiyun's face was filled with anger. He wasn't an emotional man, easily triggered, but the opponent didn't know right from wrong, and suddenly attacking him. Anyone who met such a situation would be easily enraged to the point of shouting profanity towards the person's mother.

"Only a few days of effort to actually break through to the peak of Spirit Realm; you have such superior talents."

From the ancient carriage came an old and hoarse voice!

“Ah, it is the predecessor from the Yin Gou Ward!”

The voice of the opponent made Feng Feiyun recognize that it belonged to the old grandma from the Yin Gou Ward.

This old grandma’s cultivation was deep beyond imagination as one sound of the lute from her was enough to kill San Ye. Her power, compared to the current Feng Feiyun, was a hundred times greater, so he naturally was very respectful to her; in the end, she was still an old grandma.

Of course, Feng Feiyun had never seen her face, and he only speculated that she was an old grandma; maybe she was a beautiful woman of peerless talents and grace.

“Predecessor… Kek kek!”

The other side seemed unhappy and her voice was a bit strange.

Feng Feiyun couldn’t handle such a strange cynical voice, and he said:

“If predecessor doesn’t like to be addressed as such, maybe I should call you old lady?”

“How bold. Feng Feiyun, do you know who you are speaking to?”

Zheng Dongliu took off his black hat and angrily spoke with a maddened expression.

Feng Feiyun appeared to have guessed that it was him. Without any surprise, he gently smiled:

“My calling her an old lady, that is to give her face for being an elder; if the Yin Gou Clan wants to pressure me, this young master will not tolerate this.”
(TL: Original text was eat instead of tolerate, must be a chinese expression)

In Feiyun’s past life, he was the patriarch of the Demon Phoenix Race and he had seen many grand characters. If this old lady didn’t behead San Ye for him, he wouldn’t have been so respectful towards her.

“Dear young lady, please cease your anger; there is no need to quarrel with this white-silk ignorant playboy dandy!”

Zheng Dongliu was extremely alarmed. He kneeled down to the ground directly; he feared that the girl in the carriage would become angry, and then, the consequences would be disastrous beyond the imagination.

Dear young lady?

Feng Feiyun suddenly became stupefied. An eighty year old grandma was called a “young lady”? His mother! This Zheng Dongliu was too nauseating!

Feng Feiyun considered himself to have sufficient mental bearing, but it was not strong enough to call an old grandma a young lady; Zheng Dongliu’s flattering skill was not bad at all!

Feng Feiyun bitterly looked towards another direction and spat on the ground; right now, he was truly nauseated!

“Clap clap!”

A crisp applause came from the ancient carriage.

Next, a slender soft hand lifted the curtain, revealing the lotus white arm, and then a slim figure in a white robe appeared.

Dongfang Jingyue came out, and her face was covered with a white veil that was embroidered with a small blue butterfly; it was so vibrant that it was as if it had its own life. Her jade-like hand held a red lute, her slender fingers gently slid up and down the strings. With crystal clear white eyes and a smile, stared at Feng Feiyun like she was thinking about something.

This was definitely a breathtakingly beautiful woman; even though the veil covered her face, it couldn’t hide her beauty. This was truly a magnificent girl, inside and out, with a holy and noble atmosphere.

Her identity was definitely not simple, and this aura wasn’t something that a girl from a common household could learn.

Feiyun’s eyes widened, his stiff body stared at Dongfang Jingyue as she stepped down from the ancient carriage. It was like he was seeing a ghost, and his body began to shake. His clenched fists couldn’t help to not make a crackling sound.

His heart felt as if it was twisted with a knife, and the blood in his body seethed

with excitement!

How could there be two women with such similar auras in this world? Dongfang Jingyue, in front of his eyes, truly resembled Shui Yueting as if they came from the same mold; they were as equally ethereal and holy, like the other.

Hatred fermented in his heart, quickly becoming huge floods that submerged the sky, drowning his eyes and covering his reason.

Feiyun strongly grinded his teeth and his chest was contorted from the pain; he loudly screamed:

“Shui Yueting, don’t think that wearing a veil would render me unable to recognize you; the previous life’s love and hatred, and this life’s scores, there will only be death for one of us. Slut, die for me!
(TL: A lot of flowery languages here, hopefully it sounds okay in English)

Dongfang Jingyue was surprised by Feng Feiyun’s scream, and her mind was slightly startled; she could feel the endless hatred of Feng Feiyun that was accompanied by sadness and sorrow.

How much does one have to hate someone to have such an unforgettable feeling, to lose one’s mind completely?

But… Who was Shui Yueting?

Dongfang Jingyue, with her immortal soul and bones of dao, focused her gaze like a goddess coming down to the mortal world; her heart was filled with confusion: why was Feng Feiyun’s hatred directed towards her?
(TL: The first sentence doesn’t mean that she is an actual immortal, it is just a description of how godly she appears)

The wind created from Feiyun’s punch was like a sword, heading straight for her!

“Boom!”

Dongfang Jingyue lifted her beautiful eyes; she had not reacted to Feng Feiyun’s death-risking strike. One fist connected, then another from the right, causing her to fall down to the ground. The lute in her hand was kicked far away by Feng Feiyun.

This first was too unexpected, and it even caused Zheng Dongliu’s jaw to drop to the floor!

It is over, it is over! A major catastrophe had happened!

Chapter 21 : There Is No Road To The Sky, Nor Door Into The Earth

If a man died in their favorite woman's hands, then all that person's love would be transformed into hate.

Feng Fei Yun originally thought that he would never be able to see Shui Yue Ting again, in this life, but he didn't expect to meet her again so soon; this scenery was almost identical to their meeting before.

Shui Yue Ting rode her ancient Fragrant Moon carriage, and flew down from the sky gently. She put aside the carriage's curtain, from the Fragrant carriage; she gently stepped down, and she stood in front of him. Her wide and round almond-shaped eyes were like the beautiful bright moon.

At that moment, Feng Fei Yun felt that, for the first time, he could hear his own heart beat.

Dong Fang Jing Yue was also the same, the imaginations in their eyes were the same, their temperaments were also the same, and every inch of their eyes or each of their eyelashes were exactly the same.

How could there be such similarities between two women in the world?

Fei Yun's heart was both engulfed with intense love and hate towards Shui Yue Ting. Otherwise, he would not be so hysterical when he saw Dong Fang Jing Yue, or, in this case, recognize the wrong person. He knew once Dong Fang Jing Yue started to hunt him, there would be no road to the sky nor door into the earth for him.

Feng Fei Yun had to escape for three days and three nights; even his eyes had not been closed, his legs, especially, never stopped even for a bit, and right now, he was tired, sleepy, thirsty, and hungry; however, he still couldn't stop. Dong Fang Jing Yue was definitely right behind him, and once he stopped, it would be likely that she would catch up.

Once she caught up, Feng Fei Yun was afraid that he would die in the hands of

a woman one more time; this would be such a shameful thing!

For the past three days, Feng Fei Yun fled day and night, without breaks. With the speed of his legs, it was likely that he had ran more than one thousand miles. An ordinary person would never catch up to him, but Dong Fang Jing Yue was not an ordinary person; she had cultivated the “Thousand Miles Seeing Eyes”, and she could channel her spirit energy to see for a thousand miles. Even if two ants were fighting a thousand miles away, it would not elude her eyes.

“Fuck, this woman’s personality turns even faster than turning the pages in a book. I didn’t want to mistake her for a different person, I didn’t want to punch her head, I didn’t want to call her a slut, and I didn’t want to do anything! Who is to blame for her and Shui Yue Ting to be so similar?!”

Feng Fei Yun didn’t know where he had escaped to, but he knew it was outside of the Spirit State city’s boundary; there was a snowy mountain peak and before his eyes, there was a large and fast flowing river. Chasing the sound of the water, Feng Fei Yun went to the river bank; seeing his reflection in the water was unbearable because there was not a distinguishable difference from a beggar.

He almost didn’t believe that this person was him.

Escaping on the road for three days had made Feng Fei Yun’s fancy clothes become ragged, and his tied up hair was spilled, disheveled, and full of dust and leaves.

The gold engraved boots on his feet had been missing for an unknown amount of time, and his extraordinary handsome face right now was covered with black dirt and mud; it was as if he had just climbed out from a pit.

“Clang clank!”

Feng Fei Yun threw his Crimson Dragon saber to the side, then crouched down on the ground. He clasped a palm full of water from the river, crazily drank from it, and he then cleansed the dirts off his face. He then picked up his Crimson Dragon Saber and stood straight up.

Right now, the night was dark, the foggy water on top of the river was wide, and a plume of blue smoke that rose from the river made it difficult for others to see the other side.

“Whoosh!”

A clear slashing wind rang from the sky above, and, even though it was still a hundred miles away, it could be heard along with the killing intent; this caused the atmosphere to suddenly became as cold as ice.

A round jade plate from the moon, above of the mountain, flashed a sparkling brilliant light. No, this was not the moonlight, this was a mirror flying in the air.

“Haotian Spirit Mirror! Dong Fang Jing Yue is catching up!”

This was a mirror of the spirit treasure rank, and the light was a spirit technique used by Dong Fang Jing Yue; once the light of the mirror reached him, she would immediately be alerted as to the whereabouts of Fei Yun.

Even if one escaped a thousand miles away, she could still catch up.

This was the reason why Feng Fei Yun didn’t have a way of escaping the hunt of Dong Fang Jing Yue; facing this Haotian Spirit Mirror accounted for a large reason.

This was a genuine spirit treasure that had its own sentience!

One spirit treasure could kill the opponent; it could sweep high, low, and in the four directions once a spirit treasure was completely awoken. Then, with one blow from it, it could destroy an ancient city with a few hundred thousand people.

Dong Fang Jing Yue stood on top of a white peak covered by snow. Her hands carried her red lute, her white robe gently floated about, her slender fingers gently moved, and, from it, came many strands of white spirit energy making the power of the Haotian Spirit Mirror awaken a little bit more. Even though it was just a hint of the mirror’s true vestige, it was enough to overpower the fierce beasts and caused them to kneel; the swimming fishes to freeze in the river.

This was the power of a spirit treasure; even though it was just a trace, it could still destroy mountains and suppress tens of thousands of existences from moving.

“What is happening? I was leading the people to destroy the Eagle Claw gang! I should be the hero of Spirit State city! The anticipated heroic young man,

becoming one of the ten outstanding youths in all of Grand Southern City… Keke, all of these titles should be mine. However, unfortunately I messed with Dong Fang Jing Yue. This time, I have a home that I cannot return to. It seems that I can only meet my end in a far corner of the world."

Dong Fang Jing Yue was a big character of the Yin Gou family, and the Yin Gou family was one of the four great family of the Jin Dynasty. To mess with the Yin Gou family was like messing with the king of hell.

The Feng family was powerful, but it could only reign in the Grand Southern city. Essentially, it could not be compared to the Yin Gou family. If Feng Fei Yun wanted to return to the Feng family to seek asylum, then, to put it simply: "idiotic nonsense; lunatic ravings."

Once the Yin Gou family started to pressure, then maybe, the upper echelons of the Feng family would send experts to hunt Feng Fei Yun. After all, the older generations of the Feng family wouldn't dare to offend the Yin Gou family. To them, sacrificing a young child to please the Yin Gou family was entirely doable.

Moreover, Dong Fang Jing Yue's personal cultivation was already frighteningly strong, and her fingertip alone was enough to annihilate all Immortal Foundation experts. If she wasn't absent minded at that time, then it would be impossible for Feng Fei Yun to punch her down to the ground.

This was simply a great shame, ah! To be beaten to the ground by a hedonistic young master at the peak of Spirit Realm rank. Even though Dong Fang Jing Yue's emotions had seen through the profound Dao, she was still angry to the point of almost puking blood. She swore on her life to destroy this shameless Feng Fei Yun; only this would allow the shame in her heart be cleansed.

In the cultivation world, there were two things that could turn friends into enemies in the blink of an eye; one was benefit, and the other was face.

As long as one had fame, they considered their face to be more important than even their lives; the higher the fame, the more valuable their face was.

Even though Dong Fang Jing Yue didn't care so much about her reputation, but to be punched in the head by Feng Fei Yun without a valid reason was enough to drive her mad.

The Haotian Spirit Mirror was hanging in the sky. It was flying high up in the air, like a moon, radiating light through an area within a radius of one hundred miles; it was bright just like it was during the daytime.

Feng Fei Yun knew to not be shined on by the Haotian Spirit Mirror no matter what. When the light of the spirit mirror came down, he immediately leapt to the river, creating a big bubbly splash. He then sunk into the bottom of the river that was bone chillingly cold.

“Splash!”

His body completely disappeared in the water.

“Phwoosh!”

A beautiful white shadow came down from the sky, standing on a patch of green grass next to the river bank. One hand held a bright red lute, and the other hand held the Haotian Spirit Mirror. She stared intently at the billowing flow of the river with eyes filled with coldness.

Dong Fang Jing Yue fluttered in the night sky, like the wings of a white butterfly, while she made a cold howling sound.

“Feng Fei Yun, you won’t get away with this!”

Before Dong Fang Jing Yue noticed that Feng Fei Yun was an apex talented person, she wanted to take him under her command; however, after the big unexpected mishap, Dong Fang Jing Yue’s heart viewed him with contempt. She only wanted to dismember his body into ten thousand pieces.

Her tall slender figure was softly feminine, hovering in the sky on top of the wide foggy river. She strolled; the footsteps, leisure in appearance, but she, with each step, took her a dozen of zhang; she was mystical, and she exuded the feel of infinite beauty.

This was the technique “Water Treading Steps”. Even the expert predecessors that had cultivated for a lifetime wouldn’t necessary be able to reach such a stage.

Dong Fang Jing Yue was regarded as the absolute top talent within the younger generation. As for someone like Feng Sui Yu, this sort of trash wouldn’t even

match a single hair on her body.

This large river that crossed through the entire Grand Southern city was named “Tong Liang river”. It was also the largest river of the Jin Dynasty; it ran through nine counties, and it was eighty thousand li in length. Even at its narrowest part, it was more than ten miles wide, and the other side of the river was not in view.

Tong Liang river, under the night curtain, was like a coiling dragon. The unending waves issued angry dragon roars.

“Bahh!”

The waves hitting the river bank made a splash. A black shadow emerged from the water, and it slowly crawled to the shore.

“After this experience, it completely demonstrates that it is better to not offend women in the future.”

Feng Fei Yun channeled the spirit energy in his body, drying the wet clothes on his body. He was ecstatic. If he was a half step late in escaping earlier, maybe Dong Fang Jing Yue would have caught up.

This woman’s cultivation was too high, and on top of that, she also had a spirit treasure. Even the predecessors from the last generations would most likely be beaten by her into many little pieces.

“It seems like I’ll have to quickly extract the spirit energy and spirit conscience from the Crimson Dragon saber and insert it into the Infinite Spirit Ring, turning it into a spiritual treasure. As long as I possess a spirit treasure in my hands, then maybe there is a chance of me being able to challenge Dong Fang Jing Yue.”

Feng Fei Yun had this thought.

However, Dong Fang Jing Yue didn’t give him a chance to refine his spirit treasure; the Haotian mirror, once again, rose to the sky just like the bright moon.

She came again!

“This woman doesn’t mind fatigue; she has lost her wits!”

Feng Fei Yun stomped his feet twice, and he then hid in the trees, fled

alongside the river bank, and escaped for more than ten miles away. On the wide river, suddenly, came – loud and clear – human voices. There was also a green lantern burning brightly in the middle of the river.

It was a red ship made from steel; it was a few hundred zhang in length, and it towered at around eighteen zhang. Slowly, it moved on top of the river's surface. On top of the big ship were numerous lanterns, and on the lanterns were the two huge words "Feng Tian".

While the lantern brilliantly shined like wild fires, on top of the ship was joyous singing and dancing; one could vaguely hear the sound of the lute as well as the bells resonating together, causing spectators to not help but think about the type of person the owner of this huge ship was?

Feng Fei Yun stopped running for his life, and he stared intensely at the huge ship in the middle of the river; his face had a happy expression.

Chapter 22 : Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess

After nightfall, the thick mist appeared, and all the boats on the cold Tong Liang river were traveling with a very slow speed; after all, there were many dangers above a big river. If there were ships rushing at night, then, an accident was likely to occur.

This giant ship was also no exception; it slowly moved forward, in the water, but, even so, it still gave away the feel of a majestic atmosphere, like a huge steel monster, madly playing on the water surface.

This was a red ivory warship, crafted by the hands of a grand blacksmith master. He spent ten million pounds of rare soul metals to make, and it took many hundreds of years to finish it completely.

It could carry almost ten thousand people, and it absorbed the mysterious quintessence yang energy of the sun so it could travel thirty thousand li in one day.

Searching the entire Grand Southern city, one wouldn't be able to find ten red ivory warships like this. This was not to say the big families couldn't craft a red ivory warship; after all, a family like the Feng family could spend ten million pounds easily, but the Feng family still didn't have a single one.

Crafting a red ivory warship wasn't hard because of the material requirement; however, it was hard to find a grand blacksmith master to forge it.

Blacksmith masters could be considered one of the most famous professions in the Jin Dynasty, along with beast taming masters, pill masters, treasure seeking masters, and wisdom masters – these were called the five grand mysterious masters.

In other words, after becoming one of the five grand mysterious masters, one could go anywhere and still always have food to eat. Powerful cultivation sects and cultivation clans would always respect the five grand mysterious masters, and they would gladly make them guest elders.

For instance, the current national teacher of the Jin Dynasty was a third rank

grand pill master; even the Jin Emperor would refer to him as a high master. The great status of the five grand mysterious masters could be seen from this.

Blacksmith masters were divided into three ranks: blacksmith apprentice, blacksmith master, and grand blacksmith master.

Each rank was also divided into nine levels.

The requirements to become an excellent blacksmith master were very harsh; not only did it require a high cultivation, but you also need an even higher degree of formation mastery, spiritual materials, and infernal fire.

Becoming a grand blacksmith master was even harder; one had to successfully create a spirit treasure before one's abilities were accepted by the Wanxiang Tower. Once that happened, they were granted the title of grand blacksmith master. This gate had prevented countless blacksmith masters from advancing, so, even though the entire Grand Southern city accounts for millions of mountains and rivers, with a population in the billions, it only had two grand blacksmith masters.

Because of the few grand blacksmith masters, there was a low amount of red ivory warships as well.

To be able to ride a red ivory warship, the status of this owner couldn't be anything but high.

"Dong Fang Jing Yue is strong, but she will not necessary rush into a red ivory warship."

Feng Fei Yun, once again, jumped into the cold-as-ice river and inched towards the red ivory warship in the middle of the river.

Even though Dong Fang Jing Yue carried a spirit treasure with great battle power, enough to suppress one direction, a red ivory warship's strength was also formidable. It had eighteen offensive arrays and eighteen defensive arrays, and each of these formation arrays were comparable to the power of a cultivator; their power was not lower than a spirit treasure, and their defensive power was even more frightening. Even a spirit treasure wouldn't necessarily be able to break through.

On the red ivory warship, there weren't any sails; however, in front of the bow

was a huge spirit rune, lingering in the air, creating an eight trigrams formation. In the middle of the formation was a spirit compass, leading the way for the red ivory warship. Each time there were multiple branches on the river, the spirit compass would shine brilliantly, then change the direction of the ship.

“Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng, have you found the position of the Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess?”

A muscular man, three meters in height and wearing a thick black steel armor, was kneeling behind the legs of Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng – very respectful in manner.

An old man with a black robe was standing on the bow of the ship, he was three meters tall, skinny as a stick, had yellow wrinkly skin, and a crumpled face with a pair of bright eyes like the stars in the night sky.

His eyebrows, hair, and beard were all white. His long white hair extended straight down to the ground; his white eyebrows were also three meters long, swaying in the air, while his white beard, on his chin, was like a stallion’s tail, rocking back and forth.

His skinny hands were holding a magical basin made from a kiln firing workshop, and it was square shaped; on top, there were engravings of calligraphy runes and mysterious symbols. In this world, only this grand master could read these.

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng’s old eyes were filled with a light of wisdom, and he seemed to be able to see through everything in this world; he stared at the magical basin for a moment, his pupils flashed a hint of excitement, and he said:

“The heaven blesses my Feng Tian Bu, but where is the Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess?”

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng waved his black sleeves, and a black light came out of his finger like a meteor piercing the sky; this finger pointed towards a direction in the middle of the wide sky.

“In that direction… The location of Spirit State city is in that direction, maybe… Maybe the Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess was born in Spirit State city?”

The expressions of everyone on the red ivory warship were ecstatic; with a respectful demeanor, they all kneeled on the bow of the ship and kept on kowtowing towards the direction of Spirit State city.

“Boom, boom, boom!”

The sight of a few thousand people kneeling on the ground and kowtowing was an absolutely magnificent sight!

These people were all three meters tall, and their hands were as big as water buckets – much more powerful compared to an ordinary person. These characteristics belong to the “Ancient Jiang” race.

Ancient Jiang race was a huge race, located in the western Ancient Jiang city of the Jin Dynasty. Ancient Jiang city was similar compared to the Grand Southern city; they were both one of the eight grand cities of the Jin Dynasty, and the Ancient Jiang city was one hundred thousand miles away from Spirit State city.

The Ancient Jiang people worshiped the Heavenly Witchcraft god. They lived in a prehistoric setting, making fire by drilling wood, and eat raw meats and fowls. Even though they were born with human appearances, their strength was extremely powerful; they possessed a mighty body. Many great families were specialized in traveling to the Ancient Jiang city to capture the Ancient Jiang people, domesticating them into slaves.

One could say that the Ancient Jiang race was a branch of humanity, plus, they were gifted with powerful strength; however, there were numerous Ancient Jiang slaves in the Jin Dynasty because they were tamed by the great families and nobles into combat slaves.

The Ancient Jiang race possessed one city as their main stronghold, with the following three large tribes within: Feng Tian Bu, An Yu Bu, and Tian Wu Bu.

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng was the spiritual leader of the Feng Tian Bu, and he had lived for four hundred and eighty four years. Not many years from now, he would become weak and go to heaven with his hands laying down; thus, before this, he was determined to find a successor; one that could lead the Feng Tian Bu to continue to have a successful future.

And this person was the “Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess.

In the mythical legends of the Ancient Jiang people, the Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess was a girl; every ten thousand years, she was able to reincarnate again. The birth of a Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess would usher a new era for the Ancient Jiang people.

The Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess had a mission of educating and spreading witchcraft heritages.

Once a Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess reached the age of fourteen, her body would birth a Witchcraft tree within; one that could be felt by the tribal wisdom masters.

Ten days ago, the wisdom masters of the three large tribes of the Ancient Jiang people felt the presence of the Witchcraft tree at the same time, so they all led many experts to find the Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess.

This huge news had alarmed the entire cultivation world of the Jin Dynasty. All the great families and sects sent many experts to secretly follow the masters of the three tribes in order to find out what exactly they were looking for.

Feng Tian Bu had a red ivory warship, so in one day, they could travel three thousand miles. Plus, Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng, with his exceptional knowledge, had led the Feng Tian Bu to this place, he and found the exact location of the Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess.

The Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess was in Spirit State city!

Feng Fei Yun utilized the dark night to go alongside the warship. He secretly climbed on top of the red ivory warship, and was immediately frightened by this scene. Fuck, a few thousand people kneeling at the ship’s bow, facing a far direction and kowtowing, what was this situation?

These people were kneeling, their lips were also mumbling something without breaks. Luckily, they were kneeling towards the other direction; otherwise, when Feng Fei Yun had climbed up the ship, he would have been caught red-handed.

Fei Yun ignored what these people were doing, and, from their back, he gently flew by and infiltrated into a steel door; he then hid inside a warehouse stacked with food.

Escaping for three days made Feng Fei Yun really tired; even when his spirit

was exhausted, he didn't dare to rest. He sat in a dark corner of the warehouse, took out the Infinite Spirit Ring and the broken Crimson Dragon saber, and he held them in each hand.

Old grandma Dong Fang Jing Yue was very astute, sooner or later she would come to the red ivory warship. Feng Fei Yun couldn't sit still and wait for death; he could only extract the spirit awareness and spirit energy from the Crimson Dragon saber and put it into the infinite Spirit Ring in order to make the ring into a real spirit treasure.

Only with a real spirit treasure, in his grasp, could he have a chance of protecting his life!

Chapter 23 : Dragon Horse River Diagram

The heaven and earth was enveloped by the dark night, and the cold waves of the Tong Liang river continued to slap the hulls of the red ivory warship, creating a rhythmic sound.

In Fei Yun's dantian, was an azure light with the shape of an ancient azure ship – as big as a fist, floating in his navel.

Inside the ancient azure ship, was a strand of spirit energy, invoking a holy saint aura!

The Crimson Dragon saber that was on Fei Yun's right grasp, suddenly quivered; an originally slumbering spirit energy in the blade became active, and a red spirit energy flew out from the blade's body.

"Thud!"

The Crimson Dragon saber, weighing at two hundred and forty pounds, was broken, once again, into two halves. A crimson dragon, of a hand's length, rushed out.

This crimson dragon was formed by spirit energy and spirit awareness merging and mixing together; it was ethereal like smoke, its head was only as big as a finger, and its eyes were glaring angrily.

"Rawrr!"

The crimson dragon roared softly; its muffled voice was like a mosquito's, so it didn't alarm the Ancient Jiang soldiers outside at the front of the ship.

It flew around Feng Fei Yun's body three times, then suddenly, it entered the Infinite Spirit Ring in the palm of Feng Fei Yun.

"Ba!"

The roar of the dragon eventually dissipated, and it disappeared in the Infinite Spirit Ring.

"Bang!"

After the spirit energy and spirit awareness had entered the Infinite Spirit Ring, a red brilliance from the inside bloomed outward. Next, the seven ancient runic words engraved on the ring's body, once again, started to move; it bursted out large lights, and the seven ancient paintings appeared again: "Dragon Horse River Diagram", "Eight Trigrams Mysterious Language", "Four Yang Ancient Cauldron", "Netherworld Spirit Pagoda", "Heavenly Flying King", "Hundred Ghosts Banquet", and "Ten Thousands Lights".

"What the hell is this? Why are there only seven paintings in the Infinite Spirit Ring."

In his past life, Feng Fei Yun was the patriarch of the Demon Phoenix Race, and his knowledge was broad; however, he couldn't see through the seven paintings. This could only mean that the seven paintings did not originate from the hands of an ordinary person, and they could be the Holy Saint High Records in the ancient legends.

Holy Saint High Records, even a corner was enough for a cultivator to ponder for millenniums. Not to mention, there were seven complete ones, here; each painting represented a different charm.

If one could not see through them, then it was better to temporarily pause here.

Feng Fei Yun decided to turn the Infinite Spirit Ring into a spirit treasure first.

In his palm, a red spirit energy appeared; it moved sharply, creating a crackling sound.

"Bang!"

The spirit energy turned into infernal flames, and the flames began to refine the Infinite Spirit Ring!

This fire was the "First Dark Origin Flame", and it was the most common flame used by cultivators from burning the spirit energy. The temperature, compared to a regular fire from wood burning, was higher by the dozens; it could easily melt steel into molten iron.

Pill masters and blacksmith masters, within the five grand mysterious masters, were experts at playing with fire, and the more skillful ones were able to create

the “Second Dark Hell Flame” or even, the “Third Dark True Flame” that could burn the heaven and boil the sea in the legends.

The Infinite Spirit Ring was refined by the First Dark Origin Flame; the seven ancient paintings were also distorted by each of the little embers within the flame, and they jumped around playfully.

The shadow of the crimson dragon, loitering on the Infinite Spirit Ring, eventually turned into a crimson dragon engraving that surrounded the ring, coiling one full rotation.

“Ha ha! Finally, both spirit energy and spirit awareness are merged into the Infinite Spirit Ring. Now, it only needs a little more to complete the fusion. Even though it is still a bit weaker than a regular spirit treasure, but right now, it still can be considered a spirit treasure. I really want to try to see the power of the Infinite Spirit Ring right now!”

Feng Fei Yun was ecstatic; after all, he now grasped a spirit treasure. Even if Dong Fang Jing Yue arrived, at least he could have the strength to strike back.

Suddenly, something unexpected happened!

The seven ancient paintings on the Infinite Spirit Ring started to turn, and the Azure Bronze Spirit Vessel in Fei Yun’s dantian also started moving, by itself, along with one of the paintings; they started to resonate with each other.

“Dragon Horse River Diagram!”

The “Dragon Horse River Diagram”, in the seven paintings, was able to create intricate movements with the Azure Bronze Spirit Vessel, and these motions were like the calling of the origin; it became more and more intense.

The Azure Bronze Spirit Vessel turned even faster in the dantian, and, eventually, it exerted a powerful force that pulled the “Dragon Horse River Diagram”, that was originally engraved in the Infinite Spirit Ring, over to itself.

“Whoosh!”

The Dragon Horse Diagram flew into the dantian, and it floated around the Azure Bronze Spirit Vessel, slowly rotating.

To be able to merge with the body, it was really a painting made by a Holy

Saint of the past.

This was a winding river, the water raged turbulently; it was filled with immortal fogs. A dragon horse lifted its head, turned and looked up at the moon, and, in its mouth, was an eight-legged immortal tortoise; it seemed solemn and majestic, indescribable by words.

On the dragon horse's back were eight times eight, sixty-four vortexes; they were positioned by a mysterious formation that made others feel like they resonated with one another – like the rhythm of the heavens, along with the arrangement of nature.

Even though it was just a painting, it gave the sense of being profound and vast; it contained millions and millions of ancient knowledge and hidden potentials.

The painting was now suspended in the dantian of Feng Fei Yun.

The Azure Bronze Spirit Vessel was floating beneath the Dragon Horse River Diagram, and, between these two things, there was a mysterious connection that attracted and refined each other.

This was a fantastic scenery: the River Diagram and the Spirit Vessel existing at the same time – in the dantian.

As Fei Yun was about to curse, another mutation suddenly happened!

"Boom!"

Afterwards, the speed of the spirit pathway in the dantian and the heart were stimulated by the Dragon Horse River Diagram and the Spirit Vessel; it began to shrink, change, and radiate lights.

This was the sign of the Spirit Realm breaking through to the Immortal Foundation.

The Dragon Horse River Diagram also brought a large amount of ancient spirit energy to him when it merged with Fei Yun's dantian; this caused a chain reaction.

Judging by a normal cultivation speed, Feng Fei Yun needed at least three more months before he could reach the Immortal Foundation rank; however, right

now, this process had advanced greatly before the due time.

Tonight was when Fei Yun broke through to the Immortal Foundation rank!

Immortal Foundation was a gate that, if cultivators did not reach, they would only be considered a half-baked cultivator. At best, they could rule the mortal world. However, without the immortal foundation, they couldn't even be considered a true cultivator.

This Immortal Foundation hurdle had blocked many cultivators outside of its gate; ten cultivators at the peak Spirit Realm stage wouldn't necessarily have one that could successfully form an immortal foundation.

Once successful, one's strength would be comparable to a governor of an ancient city, and they could be considered an expert in the cultivator world, like the governor of Spirit State city. Feng Wan Peng, who took thirty years to cultivate, was only at the intermediate stage of the Immortal Foundation.

Feng Fei Yun was only fourteen years old, and at this age, a person that entered the Immortal Foundation would definitely be considered a genius; one in tens of thousands. With this aptitude, if the older generations of the Feng family were to find out, they would be grinning from ear to ear.

Feng Fei Yun fully activated the spirit energy in his body, and the crazy spirit energy was coming non-stop; his blood boiled even more.

So fierce! Many powerful explosions, within him, happened one by one.

"Bang, Bang!"

A cry of a phoenix rang in the head of Feng Fei Yun. The second step of Blood Purification had reached grand completion, and the rank of his blood had, once again, increased; it became as black as ink.

Feng Fei Yun's constitution, once again, ranked up, and the endurance of the body greatly increased. His bones were hard, just like steel; his muscles and meridians all contained black blood energy.

Now, even if Feng Fei Yun was cut anywhere on his body, as long as it was not a dangerous place, then the wound would be healed within an hour; no scar would remain.

Even before, when his physique was not completed, he could still have defeated a cultivator one small level above him; if he could reach the early stage of Immortal Foundation tonight, then, his true power would be comparable to an Immortal Foundation expert in the intermediate stage.

This was the result of completing the second stage of Blood Purification. Such a strong body could only be attributed to the Immortal Phoenix Physique's heaven defying effect. This was a heavenly method only available to the patriarch of the demon phoenix race.

If Feng Fei Yun could successfully complete the third level of Blood Purification, his blood would become sentient and a silver aura will radiate in the four directions. His constitution would be even more formidable, and he would be able to defeat opponents two levels higher than him; however, Feng Fei Yun still had a long road ahead of him.

The cultivation of the "Immortal Phoenix Physique", in the later stages, would become increasingly challenging.

"Condense the Spirit Realm, break it, and form the Immortal Foundation!"

Feng Fei Yun clapped his hands together in front of his chest, and a spirit aura exploded out of his skin; his body became an ancient immortal statue.

Chapter 24 : Chaotic Battle

A red seedling; it was just like a flame that was suspended in the dantian. It was born and grew on top of the “Dragon Horse River Diagram”.

There were two long leaves with the shape of flames; tiny and delicate. It was as if they were just newly grown teeth – filled with spirit.

This was the Immortal Foundation, it was formed with the transformation of the Spiritual Realm!

The first step of condensation for the Immortal Foundation was successful. The inside was filled with spirit energy. The purity and density of this spirit energy were many times greater than the spirit energy inside the body of a Spiritual Realm cultivator.

“Early realm of the Immortal Foundation; however, if I use all of my might, then I wouldn’t be at a disadvantage; even against an intermediate Immortal Foundation expert.”

Feng Fei Yun opened his eyes, and he slightly smiled.

An unknown amount of time had passed; the cabin still remained dark without any light. The outside was tranquil, and there were only the footsteps of three or five Ancient Jiang soldiers on patrol.

Feng Fei Yun slightly opened the door of the cabin. Outside, the night was encompassing; only the clear and bright moonlight was shining down, and this left a reflection in the water akin to a silver fish’s scales.

“Within the radius of one hundred miles, one could only hide inside this red ivory warship. With the intelligence of Dong Fang Jing Yue, she wouldn’t be able to guess that I was hiding here!”

Feng Fei Yun naturally didn’t hope that Dong Fang Jing Yue would chase him to this point, but he didn’t want to think about the other anomalies within; thus, his heart had doubts!

I wonder; since she couldn’t find me, would she go to kill my father?

Feng Fei Yun's body shook when he had this scary thought. If Dong Fang Jing Yue truly didn't spare any schemes, and she made a move with Feng Wan Peng; then there was nothing else Feng Fei Yun could do.

In the end, both the cultivation and background of this damned old grandma were quite frightening.

"If that was the case, then I could only run back to Spirit State city and fight her to the bitter end."

With this thought in his mind, Fei Yun's eyes became cold and solemn. Suddenly, a blinding light from the far distance reached the ship. A spirit aura came down repeatedly; it was definitely the huge mirror flying to this place.

Within the mirror, a bright silver light was hidden; it came down in ripples, like a bright moon, and it caused the red ivory warship to be enveloped in the light.

I just thought about her, and now she is here!

"This woman could be considered somewhat magnanimous since she is only chasing me and not causing dangers to my family!"

Feng Fei Yun couldn't help but to think a bit more highly of her. In the end, not everyone could distinctly see through their gratitude and grudges like this.

Many people, once angry, would seek revenge. Once they were truly irritated, they would massacre the entire family of their opponent. However, Dong Fang Jing Yue was aware; if she caught Feng Wan Peng, then she could force Feng Fei Yun to obediently show himself. She didn't do so.

At least, it proved that she was not a person who would employ any underhanded methods.

Even though he was being chased by her, Feng Fei Yun's view of her, on the contrary, had improved. Of course, it was only just a little.

"Whoosh!"

Dong Fang Jing Yue rode the wave like a "butterfly that flew gracefully on the water surface"; each step gently touched the large surging waves as she caused small ripples on the large river.

Her long black hair fluttered in the cold river wind. The white veil slightly

covered her peerless beauty, only a pair of bright eyes like black pearls was revealed. Inside her eyes was a deepness without any emotions, giving others an enigmatic feel.

She was holding her ancient red lute, and her slender and soft fingers gently held the strings. She hadn't started to flick the strings, but it already gave off an unlimited pressure. Once she started to play, then one note of her lute could destroy a heavenly army and ten thousand horses.

"Dragon lake spans three thousand li like a white jade hung from the silver river."

"Sun sets on the sacred bird monument, Haotian mirror rose from the moon!"

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng stood above on the high platform, and he lifted his head towards the Haotian Spirit Mirror in the sky. While his wrinkly face had a serious expression, he quietly mumbled; he then raised his voice:

"I don't know which expert from the Yin Gou family you are?"

The amount of spirit treasures in the Jin Dynasty was a lot, and each of them all had their own legends. When the Haotian Spirit Mirror arrived in the sky, it was instantly recognized with one glance from Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng.

The Ancient Jiang people had always been in conflict with the big families of the Jin Dynasty. The other side was one of the Four Grand Families of the Jin Dynasty, an expert from the Yin Gou family, so the Grand Wisdom Master took heavy precautions. This was also a crucial period to find the Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess, so there couldn't be the slightest mistake.

All of the Ancient Jiang warriors on the red ivory warship were alarmed. Each wore their iron armor, with weapons in their hands. Rushing out, their bodies were radiating a battle aura, and the heavy pressure made the atmosphere frozen.

Even though Feng Fei Yun hadn't entered his battle condition, he still felt the frightening aura from these soldiers. The battle power of these few thousand Ancient Jiang soldiers were truly scary, they must be more than ten times stronger than the Spirit State city's guards.

Dong Fang Jing Yue hugged her lute, and she rode the big waves. Her eyes

gently glared at the red ivory warship once, and she then replied without any emotion in her voice:

“This little girl’s status is humble, and she does not dare to state my name in front of Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng!”

“How do you know I am Wisdom Master Jing Feng?!”

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng smiled.

Dong Fang Jing Yue said:

“On top of the red ivory warship hangs the flag “Feng Tian”; this is the symbol of the Ancient Jiang city’s Feng Tian Bu. There are only three people of Feng Tian Bu that could control the red ivory warship. One is the Feng Tian general, the other is Grandma Gu Yu, and the last is Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng. With predecessor’s appearance and age, naturally, you are not the mighty Feng Tian general, Ling Geng, and you are definitely not Grandma Gu Yu. The only person left is Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng.”

“Ha ha, this little girl’s mind is meticulous. If I didn’t have an important matter to do, then I really want to make you a disciple.”

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng smilingly said.

The number of wisdom masters compared to blacksmith masters, pill masters, and animal taming masters were less. Each wisdom master was worth the price as they were respected and courted by all the major powers, let alone a grand wisdom master.

If one could become the disciple of a grand wisdom master, it would definitely be an extremely great honor.

Dong Fang Jing Yue was still serene, and she said:

“Many thanks for Grand Wisdom Master’s kind affection, but this time, this little girl is only here to catch a little thief. I am sorry to intrude Grand Wisdom Master’s convenience. However, would you please be willing to let me board to force his appearance?”

“This person is onboard of the red ivory warship?”

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng asked.

“I am absolutely not wrong.”

Dong Fang Jing Yue’s eyes brilliantly shined; they looked around the red ivory warship, wanting to find Feng Fei Yun.

This old grandma was like a haunted apparition that won’t move on. Not good; if she steps on the red ivory warship, then I would have no road for survival – Feng Fei Yun thought this in his mind.

His eyes looked in the direction where Dong Fang Jing Yue was staring at; the corners of his mouth revealed a cunning smile. He already had calculated a top-level ruse in his mind.

Feng Fei Yun decisively stepped out from the cabin, from behind the backs of the Ancient Jiang soldiers, and he quickly flew by. His speed was as fast as a ghost’s shadow, and he did not allow others to see him.

Dong Fang Jing Yue’s eyes angrily sank; having found Feng Fei Yun, the anger that was initially in her heart was burned once again. Her fingers motioned on the lute’s strings as she created a light sound.

“Hmmgg!”

The lute had just rang, and an invisible killing light immediately flew outward.

“Phoosh!”

An Ancient Jiang solder yelled out and then fell to the floor. He rolled down the warship, and then he stopped moving!

“Oh heaven! The demon girl from the Yin Gou family is killing people!”

“Everyone, join together to fight her since this woman is so vicious and merciless!”

“This is a provocation to us Ancient Jiang people. If we don’t repay this blood feud, then our Ancient Jiang people shall perish.”

Feng Fei Yun, with extremely fast speed, was constantly changing directions. The loud shouting of the few thousand Ancient Jiang soldiers increased the hatred in their hearts; the murderous atmosphere intensified. Two Ancient Jiang soldiers wearing iron armor, with fingers the size of a cup, jumped out of the red ivory warship and headed towards Dong Fang Jing Yue.

“This demon girl is pushing us too far. She actually killed my people for no reason. Let us see if this grandpa today will kill you for your murderous crime?”

These events happened way too fast and this was outside of Dong Fang Jing Yue’s expectations. Earlier, her Murderous Calm Sound Wave clearly headed for Feng Fei Yun, so how could it kill an Ancient Jiang soldier?

That Ancient Jiang soldier naturally wasn’t killed by Dong Fang Jing Yue’s Murderous Calm Sound Wave but by of Feng Fei Yun’s fist. At the moment that Ancient Jiang soldier had stood up, his hand rubbed his neck, as he did not understand what had just happened.

However, right now, no one payed attention to him because the Ancient Jiang soldiers were maddened; many of them left the red ivory warship to vanguard their lives against Dong Fang Jing Yue.

The situation became crazy, and all kind of attacks began. Their power caused loud explosions on the river’s surface.

“The price for murder is death; a life for a life!”

“If we don’t kill this demon girl, where will we show our Ancient Jiang’s face?”

“Today, we will fight for equality and fairness.”

The Ancient Jiang people were candid and frank; plus, they were frequently oppressed by the big families. With just a little provocation from Feng Fei Yun, all of them became angry; all of them turned into fierce murderous devils, and they lost their minds like wild beasts.

At this moment, Dong Fang Jing Yue was annoyed and depressed. Naturally, she knew that Feng Fei Yun had done some scheming behind the scene; however, even if she had one hundred mouths, she couldn’t explain herself at the moment. She could only use and activate the Haotian Spirit Mirror to block these barbarians.

Feng Fei Yun was sitting at the highest point of the red ivory warship, looking at the flustered expression of Dong Fang Jing Yue, and he loudly laughed:

“Dong Fang Jing Yue wants to fight with this young master, you are still too young!”

As Feng Fei Yun was happily smiling, an old noise came from behind his back:

“The person she wants to catch is you!”

Feng Fei Yun could no longer continue laughing. He turned his stiff expression to directly look at the old wrinkly face, and he nodded and smiled.

Chapter 25 : Unbeatable Slut

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng's eyes were surrounded with wrinkly lines. Even though he was of old age and feeble strength, he made others feel a deep mysterious vastness.

He stood behind Feng Fei Yun.

It was as if he had stood in this place for a long time; a smile was always on his face.

Is this old man a human or a ghost? His footsteps didn't make any noise!

"Heh Heh!"

Feng Fei Yun forcefully laughed twice.

"Dong Fang Jing Yue treats human lives like trash; predecessor doesn't want to stop her?"

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng shook his head, and he smiled:

"In this world, there does not exist a person who could fool me. Lying in front of me is something you shouldn't do. Tell me the truth; where is the Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess?"

The intelligence of Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng was exceedingly high, and he was perspicacious. These little tricks of Feng Fei Yun could fool the Ancient Jiang soldiers, but he could not fool him.

"Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess? Who is that?"

Feng Fei Yun was confused; his mind was full of questions.

He was not intentionally pretending. He had never heard of anyone who spoke about the Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess, but, looking at the old man's confident face, he was seemingly very serious.

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng frowned, and he once again observed Feng Fei Yun; he slowly said:

"On your body, I could feel the presence of the Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess;

you have clearly made contact with her. You came from Spirit State city?”

“That’s right!”

Feng Fei Yun said.

“Then do you know a young girl around the age of fourteen?”

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng said with a slightly nervous expression.

“About this…”

Feng Fei Yun does know girls in Spirit State city, and not just a little amount. On top of that, they were mostly around fourteen to eighteen years of age, plus… Cough cough, the majority of them had been forcefully taken by him; he had many unforgettably passionate and romantic one-night stands.

At least, that was what Feng Fei Yun thought; as for how the girls were feeling, he did not know.

If there was indeed a Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess in this matter, then he definitely had used devious means to forcefully take them. Oh god, could it be that he had already XXOO’d with the Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess? That would not be good; it would be strange if he wouldn’t be chased by the whole Ancient Jiang tribe, ah.

The expressions on Feng Fei Yun’s face was constantly changing, and it became increasingly ugly. He was praying that he would be lucky, and he eventually said with difficulty:

“What is the origin of the Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess?”

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng carefully observed the emotions on Feng Fei Yun’s face, and he gently stroked his white beard; then he sighed:

“The Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess is the daughter of the Heavenly Witchcraft Grand God; every ten thousand years, she would come back through reincarnation. Once she comes into this world, she will represent the birth of the ‘Witchcraft Scripture’ and the Heavenly Witchcraft Spirit Tree.”

“The Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess will unite the three largest tribes once more, and she would become the supreme leader of the entire Ancient Jiang tribe.”

“Ten days ago, the Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess awakened; she has, once again, descended. Our tribes naturally have the obligation and responsibility to welcome the return of our Goddess.”

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng’s face was filled with a pious aura as if he viewed her as a true goddess.

This was a belief; a belief that existed in the hearts of every Ancient Jiang person.

However, having heard this, Feng Fei Yun had cold sweat throughout his body. Just Dong Fang Jing Yue wanting to kill him alone was enough to make him unable to escape to the heaven that had no door to hell; if there were powerful cultivators of the Ancient Jiang tribe chasing him as well, then the consequences would be unimaginable.

This Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess was so unfortunate; the Heavenly Witchcraft Spirit Tree in her body was defiled by the low-life Feng Fei Yun – this was simply sadness! Feng Fei Yun couldn’t stopped sighing in his mind.

Even though it was young master Feng doing the good deeds, but, essentially, Fei Yun couldn’t escape the responsibility.

“Cough cough! I have never known who the Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess is.”

Finished with his words, Feng Fei Yun immediately threw his palm the ground and ejected his body up above. His legs forcefully stepped once, and it was enough for him to fly straight out.

If he didn’t escape at this time, then how would he be able to in the future?

As long as he could get out of the red ivory warship and jump into the deep turbulent river, all the way to the base of the river, then, no matter how great Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng was, it still wouldn’t be easy to capture him.

On Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng’s face, there was a profound smile the whole time. Seeing Fei Yun’s escape made him even more certain that Fei Yun had met the Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess. As long as he could capture him again and force him to lead the way, then it was definitely possible to find the Goddess in the shortest amount of time.

“Phoosh Phoosh!”

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng lightly lifted his black robe, and he slowly fanned out his hand into a giant palm image; this one hand wanted to grab Feng Fei Yun from the sky.

The pressure of the palm image encompassed the sky, isolating the spirit energy and making it looked like the whole heaven was about to collapse.

Feng Fei Yun’s speed slowed down as if he had fallen into a quagmire. He knew that continuing to run ahead would allow him to escape the red ivory warship, but he would be caught by the large palm image.

“The cultivation of this old man could be stronger than Dong Fang Jing Yue.”

Feng Fei Yun had broken through to the early Immortal Foundation stage; naturally, he was not a depleted oil lamp. Both of his legs went into the horse stance. He rapidly channel the immortal foundation energy in his dantian, then threw out a punch into the middle of the sky. Next, was a second punch, then a third… He continuously threw out nine fists.

These nine fists represented nine Dao paths that synergized together and amalgamated; these nine fists lingered in the air before stopping, and they did not disappear for a long time.

At this moment, it was as if Feng Fei Yun had nine long hands; these nine fists directly impacted the palm image that was covering the sky, creating a gap.

“This is the time.”

Feng Fei Yun withdrew his fist, headed towards the gap that was just opened, and he ran.

“Oh!”

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng was a bit surprised, this little boy was not simple. The nine fists just now was truly profound with the rules of the heaven; this is definitely not something a person a bit older than ten could understand.

Even though he was just in the Early Immortal Foundation stage, he was able to exert the power of an Intermediate Immortal Foundation stage cultivator – truly not so simple.

To be able to jump a level higher and battle, this was a heavenly aptitude!

“Young friend, this old man simply wants to give you a path, you don’t have to struggle and hurt yourself. Even if you escape the red ivory warship, you still absolutely cannot run from the palm of the Yin Gou family young miss!”

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng was in no hurry to catch Fei Yun. He only stood still at the highest position, and, on his face, there was still the same old smile.

Feng Fei Yun had only taken two steps forward and then immediately stopped. Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng was not wrong; even if he could escape the red ivory warship, he would still be pursued by Dong Fang Jing Yue.

Feng Fei Yun lifted his eyebrows, he turned his body, and he loudly asked while smiling:

“Predecessor will show me a path of light?”

Grand Wisdom Master seemed to have guessed that Feng Fei Yun would stop trying to escape, and he smiled:

“The Yin Gou family is considered one of the Four Grand Families of the Jin Dynasty; powerful, not just in the country boundary, but also in the cultivation world. The young lady had the Haotian Spirit Mirror so one could see that her status in the Yin Gou family cannot be underestimated. Since you have offended her, even if you ran to the far sky or the corner of the sea, it would still be useless.”

Feng Fei Yun nodded his head; he naturally endorsed the words of Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng.

“However, if you agree to help me find the Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess, then you will be considered a friend of the Ancient Jiang tribe. Since you would be our friend, of course I would show you a path of light.”

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng smiled and said.

This old man was worthy of being called a Grand Wisdom Master; he indeed had some talent. There was no way for Feng Fei Yun to refuse his request.

Feng Fei Yun stared at the battle between the Ancient Jiang soldiers and Dong

Fang Jing Yue. This woman was not bad; on one hand, she was activating the Haotian Spirit Mirror, the other was playing her red lute. Standing on top of a large wave, her body was naturally standing on top of the vast and seemingly alive river.

The Ancient Jiang soldiers were strong and experienced in battle. Each of them possessed mighty power. Some of them were fierce men that could move the mountains and drain the sea, but none of them could get within ten steps of her.

This woman's cultivation was truly high!

Feng Fei Yun realized that even with the Infinite Spirit Ring, he wouldn't be able to withstand three of her moves. If he was chased again by her, then he would be ten parts dead – without a path of survival.

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng was an old sly fox. Seeing Feng Fei Yun's expression, he immediately added oil to the fire; he said:

"Young friend, the Yin Gou family's influence is so great, no one in this world dares to offend them. To be her opponent, death is certain. If your family was brought into this, it would be so unfortunate. You need to rethink this carefully!"

Feng Fei Yun looked at the beaming smile on Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng's face; even though it looked kind and graceful, he felt that it was a very treacherous smile.

Escape this calamity first, then think later. Once he could get away from this damned grandma Dong Fang Jing Yue and get back to Spirit State city, then it would become his world. Afterward, he could escape with no one to stop him. This was what Feng Fei Yun was thinking in his mind.

"Fine. Since Predecessor is so straightforward, then I won't be so roundabout either. However, I do have my own condition, if you do not agree… He he, the Spirit State city has more than one million people; in order to find the Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess, I'm afraid Predecessor would have to spend another half a year!

Feng Fei Yun smiled, and he said.

Of course, Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng heard the threats hidden in Fei Yun's words, but Fei Yun's eyes were very serious. He would, indeed, have to

waste a large amount of time. If the experts from the other two tribes were to get to Spirit State city as well, then things would become problematic.

In recent times, the three major tribes of the Ancient Jiang people were divided. Within their relationships, there were both competitions and cooperations. All three wanted to welcome the Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess because the tribe that gets the honor would have their status, within the Ancient Jiang tribe, take precedence over the other two major tribes.

This was a competition, and the first to find the Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess would be the winner.

“What is your condition?”

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng asked.

Feng Fei Yun coughed twice, and he then sighed loudly:

“This… the slut Dong Fang Jing Yue is unreasonably tyrannical and craves for my beauty. It was because she saw me in a sea of people, she became enamored with my pretty face and talented smile. She lusted and had forbidden thoughts about me, and then she chased me for three days and three nights without letting go. Hmmph! This Feng Fei Yun, living between the heaven and the earth, is a proud man; I wear the heaven on my head and trample the earth below my feet; how could I let her defile my body? I beg predecessor to make a move, so that she could know that the matter is difficult; then leave.”

“Sighhh! Tell her that romance isn’t something that could be forced! I already have someone I like in my heart, so get her to let go of strange thoughts!”

Chapter 26 : Reversed Chase

Grand Wisdom Master was surprised from observing Feng Fei Yun. He only saw a lonely vagrant who was covered in mud and had messy hair. The depressing part was that his naked feet were as white as snow; how could this man have anything to do with appearing beautiful and heroic?

It would be strange if the noble Dong Fang Jing Yue had eyes for this person!

Regarding the words of Feng Fei Yun, Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng naturally didn't believe half a word. However, since he wanted to rely on Feng Fei Yun, at this moment, his only option was to first send Dong Fang Jing Yue away.

After half a day of plotting, Feng Fei Yun and Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng looked at each other, smiling. The one old fox and one little fox seemed to have reached an agreement.

"Stay your hands!"

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng stood on the high platform with his black robe fluttering in the wind. One large shout suppressed the unresting waves in the curtain of the night.

The angry Ancient Jiang soldiers, at this moment, stopped their attack, and they withdrew back to the red ivory warship. Of course, there were some stubborn soldiers who didn't listen, and they still enclosed Dong Fang Jing Yue; their red eyes still showed their will to fight.

When Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng shouted once more, the arrogant ones – that did not listen the first time – finally and reluctantly retreated.

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng was skinny like a bamboo stick; he stood straight as he said:

"Little miss Dong Fang, even if you are the noble descendant of the Yin Gou family, once you have murdered a person from my Ancient Jiang tribe, you shouldn't even dream about this matter being settled easily."

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng naturally knew that Dong Fang Jing Yue didn't kill anyone; however, since he had a secret pact with Feng Fei Yun, he formulated a plan to take care of her.

Dong Fang Jing Yue elegantly and gracefully stood under the moonlight. Her toes stepped on the clear water, that was gleaming with the reflection of the moon, like a slender and elegant lotus tree. Her spirited eyes, like the stars under the veil, were faintly discernible like the mist, and she indifferently smiled:

"This Dong Fang Jing Yue, from the past till now, has only killed evil people that has commited heinous crimes; I have never indiscriminately killed an innocent person, there must be a misunderstanding."

Even though she was just in a big battle, she showed no sign of fatigue or weakness. It was easy to see that she did not use her full power as there was not even a drop of sweat present on her forehead.

The corner of Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng's mouth slightly angled. He glanced at the hiding spot of Feng Fei Yun, and he let out a dry chuckle:

"So anyone that little miss Dong Fang chases is an evil villain that has committed heinous crimes?"

Feng Fei Yun's heart was laden with sorrow, this old man was truly contemptible. He dared to call me an evil villain. I do want to see what Dong Fang Jing Yue will say to sully my good reputation though.

Dong Fang Jing Yue hated me to the bones and marrows. Naturally, there would not be clean words out of her mouth. It would be strange if this damned old grandma didn't slander me, ah. In his mind, Feng Fei Yun had already began to curse Dong Fang Jing Yue.

Dong Fang Jing Yue contemplated for a moment; she remembered the scene where Feng Fei Yun used one fist to knock her down to the ground. Suddenly, an anger surged within her heart, but, to say that this Feng Fei Yun was an evil heinous villain, was out of the question. In the end, this little boy led people to kill San Ye. Regarding courage, intelligence, and character, he was the best of talents. Of course, this was because Dong Fang Jing Yue didn't know about the past of young master Feng; she only evaluated the current Feng Fei Yun.

If she knew that the previous young master Feng had committed a myriad of evil deeds in Spirit State city, maybe the killing intent in her heart would be even stronger; she would want to cleanly kill this son of a bitch to her heart's content.

Dong Fang Jing Yue's expression became a bit unnatural, and she said:

"On the contrary, he is not a heinous villain who is wicked beyond redemption. Regarding his character and aptitude, he would be considered to have apex talent. It is just that he and I have a personal vendetta; I cannot let him go."

Huh!

'Apex talent… personal vendetta… Empress? Male slave? Fuck, could it be that the words of the little boy was true? That this little miss actually favors him? This was a quarrel within their emotional entanglement! Too much trouble, too much trouble!'

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng had observed the subtle changes in Dong Fang Jing Yue's eyes; plus, her words, after careful analysis, confirmed that the little boy Feng Fei Yun did not lie. It was really because he was too handsome; thus, she couldn't forget about him. This was why she chased him until he had no road to the heaven nor door to the earth.

Feng Fei Yun, at this moment, was very touched; standing in his dark corner, as he stared at Dong Fang Jing Yue on top of the far water, his eyes had a surprised expression:

'This… Dong Fang Jing Yue, even though she is a bit hot headed, she still could be considered rational regarding her gratitudes and grudges. On the contrary, I am the despicable man with the heart of a nasty person. Even though she and Shui Yue Ting resemble each other immensely, her moral character is not just one hundred times greater than Shui Yue Ting's.'

"Ah! A woman's heart is like a salty egg; on the exterior, it is naked and clean, but god knows how many flavorful flowers are inside."

Having had an emotional experience with Shui Yue Ting, Feng Fei Yun had been deeply wounded. His heart had completely lost its trust regarding women; no matter how much he favored Dong Fang Jing Yue, there would always be a gap in his heart.

“Sigh! Little miss Dong Fang, these types of things cannot be forced, ah!”

Grand Wisdom Master sighed. His heart was lamenting, these youngsters are too vigorous. For someone they like, they could chase them for three days and three nights. This spirit was worthy of admiration.

Dong Fang Jing Yue coldly scowled:

“If he dared to do it, he must take responsibility. This isn’t a matter of force or not; today, I must capture him and make him give me a reasonable answer!”

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng’s eyebrows twitched; this little boy Feng Fei Yun had an illicit sexual relation at first, and he then discarded her away. This had became even more complicated! Oh heaven, why did I have to meet such a complicated matter?

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng considered himself to be highly intelligent, but regarding the matter of romance between men and women, it gave him a feeling of confusion.

“This little boy Feng Fei Yun is such a bastard. If I knew this was a lover’s quarrel, then I wouldn’t have accepted; however, since I have already agreed, then there is no road to turn back.”

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng gently fixed his beard for a little bit, then he said:

“Ahem, I’ll clarify once again: the person you are chasing is not on the red ivory warship. If you want to intentionally cause trouble again, then I won’t be so reserved with you. Murder must be paid with one’s life, a blood debt must be repaid by blood.”

The Ancient Jiang soldiers were also shouting together:

“Murder must be paid with one’s life, a blood debt must be repaid by blood!”

“Murder must be paid with one’s life, a blood debt must be repaid by blood!”

***

Feng Fei Yun was laughing in his mind, but he also waited in eager anticipation. He wanted to see how Dong Fang Jing Yue would deal with this matter. This girl’s intelligence or cultivation were extremely capable. Her temperament was not

comparable to an ordinary person; if she made a move, then the earth would shattered and the sky would be frightened.

The clear jade fingers of Dong Fang Jing Yue began to move on her red lute. Her heart was wavering; Feng Fei Yun was most likely hiding on the red ivory warship. If she wanted to catch this bastard, she could only go through the gate of Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng, as well as the few thousands of powerful Ancient Jiang soldiers.

“Hmph! If Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng wants to shield him, then this little girl can only offend.”

Dong Fang Jing Yue’s beautiful eyes shot out two rays of indigo spirit flowers that headed straight ahead. The temperature between the sky and the earth immediately dropped; the waves on the large river surfaces that were rampaging were suddenly turned into a thick layer of ice.

“A song that wrenches the heart, O where do I find a knowing ear?”

Dong Fang Jing Yue used three of her fingers to play continuously, each finger was as fast as lightning treading the water, the lute strings fluctuated; her silhouette was like a white butterfly flying in the sky.

“Bang bang!”

This one tune’s momentum was terrifying; the frozen water below was shattered into thousands of ice edges, like a mountain of sabers or a rain of swords, which hissed and flew towards the front.

“Two songs that wrench the heart, don’t reminisce the gentle feather that flew away!”

A pair of white heavenly wings were born from the sound of the lute. They appeared behind her back, and were around three zhang in length. Holy and beautifully pure, they dispatched many divine white lights that covered the long river.

With one flap of her wings, she was already on top of the red ivory warship.

“Three songs that wrench the heart; flowers fall from the rain as I become sorrowful!”

“Whoosh whoosh!”

Black clouds gathered, along with thunder, above in the heaven curtain; the sky was frozen by the power of the lute and naturally became many black flower petals which rained down like the rain in a dark night.

Feng Fei Yun stared at the beautiful black petals in the sky and the ice mountain of swords and sabers; his heart became alarmed. The cultivation of this little miss Dong Fang was much stronger than he imagined, maybe she had reached the grand completion stage of the Divine Foundation.

“Break!”

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng remained motionless, and he only opened his mouth to gently say this one word. From his mouth, came five mysterious dark streams of air, like a turbulent flood; the bright brilliance filled up the vast sky.

“Boom!”

The rain of flowers became dust in the sky that fell down into the river. Even the frozen swords and sabers were instantly shattered into drops of water.

The night became bright again, and the clouds that covered the sky were dissipated, revealed a bright full moon.

“Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng is just like the legends; today, this little girl finally has learned.”

The voice of Dong Fang Jing Yue slightly filled the air, moving farther and farther away. When it couldn’t be heard any longer, she had already traveled dozens of miles away.

Just by listening to her voice, it was clear that she was seriously wounded. Her breath was lacking vitality, and most of the spirit energy in her body had disappeared.

This was the best moment to thoroughly beat a drowning dog; Feng Fei Yun couldn’t let go of such an opportunity.

Heh Heh! Dong Fang Jing Yue, this day finally had happened to you! If this young master doesn’t pursue you for three days and three nights, then it would be strange!

Feng Fei Yun took advantage of Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng's inattentiveness and jumped down from the red ivory warship. He quickly took cover and then stepped onto the water bank to chase towards Dong Fang Jing Yue's direction of escape.

Chapter 27 : Was A Trap

"Dong Fang Jing Yue, you won't be able to get away!"

Feng Fei Yun's feet stomped on the grass, and he rode the wind. He leapt a long distance over the long river's precipice to the other side, and he released a fist.

Dong Fang Jing Yue was indeed injured. Her white robe was stained with blood, and even her speed was far below the past; however, her shadow was still elegant. It was at ease, like the mist traveling in the forest, and her beautiful face was still as relaxed as ever.

Feng Fei Yun anxiously chased after her as the unrestrained fist energy destroyed an isolated ancient tree near by.

"Feng Fei Yun, even if I am wounded, you are still no match for me."

The shining moonlight seemed to immerse the faraway mountain ridges in a pristine state.

"Whew!"

Dong Fang Jing Yue suddenly stopped, and she eminently stood on top of the mountain peak. Even though she was in a hurry a moment ago, but at this time, she stood still – she quickly turned around; her fingers began to pluck the strings, and the lute quivered.

A destructive sound wave, from the strings, flew out like a blade.

The power from the sound of Dong Fang Jing Yue's lute was extremely frightening. An intermediate Immortal Foundation cultivator from a hundred zhang away would still be killed by it. Feng Fei Yun naturally couldn't block it; his body moved to dodge the sound wave, and he then, step by step, stomped on the ground to escape away.

Both of his open palms continuously threw out nine strikes; each vigorous and destructive strike carried along a red flame!

This was the First Dark Origin Flame; many expansive heat waves flew out.

“Boom!”

Dong Fang Jing Yue stood under a red maple tree, her sleeves lightly fluttered, and her fingers quickly plucked the strings to play a beautiful sad tune. Each musical note was like a deadly blade; when all the notes intertwined, it became a battle space. Killing intent loudly screamed and flew forward, causing the all the vegetation on the ground to become dust.

“Bang, Bang..”

The nine fists of flames were shattered by the sound wave.

Although Dong Fang Jing Yue was wounded, her cultivation was still as strong as before. She steadily repressed Feng Fei Yun. Each time she made a move, it was enough to cause Feng Fei Yun to run around in circles. In the end, her cultivation was essentially strong enough.

Feng Fei Yun became increasingly alarmed as the fight grew longer. His heart had a bad feeling: ‘Is this damned grandmother really injured? Why do I feel like she was pretending to be wounded and intentionally lured me here to kill me in the wilderness?’

“Haotian Spirit Mirror!”

Dong Fang Jing Yue stepped on a spiritual white cloud. A pair of bright white wings grew from her back, her silky white sleeves barely motioned, and a white heavenly aura, from her hand, turned into a blinding white jade mirror.

She didn’t even look a little bit like an injured person; on the contrary, she was full of vital energy. Her pressure frightened others. She directly exerted her spirit energy to the outside, and it floated one hundred zhang in the sky; a shining brilliance came down from above.

The spirit power of the Haotian Spirit Mirror was activated, a powerful momentum that destroyed the hearts of others covered the heaven and earth; even the ground was rended from the pressure, and heavy boulders – weighing thousand pounds – were smashed into pieces.

“Rumble!”

Heavenly thunders were brought down by a large hand, coming from the

Haotian Spirit Mirror, and they headed towards the direction of Feng Fei Yun.

She actually called for the thunder spirit energy? Fuck, where would an injured girl get the strength to do something like this? I have fallen into her trap.

Feng Fei Yun was enraged; before, he thought he had rused her, but now, she got him back. It was clear that she wasn't injured; however, she pretended to be so that she could lure Feng Fei Yun away from the red ivory warship and discipline him after.

Feng Fei Yun, of course, wouldn't lower his arms and wait for death. Both of his feet were grounded to the floor, one hand pointed towards the sky, and with the Infinite Spirit Ring that he wore on his finger, a bright black light infinitely turned into many black clouds as if it was a heavenly shield, wanting to stop the thunders in the sky.

The Infinite Spirit Ring was also a spirit treasure; with renowned power from it, a distinctive dragon roar transmitted outward, causing the mountains to vibrantly tremble.

"Rumble!"

The thunder that covered the sky fell down and attacked the black clouds. Between the two, a destructive and terrorizing noise broke out; it sounded like the mountains were collapsing.

"Roar!"

Suddenly, a huge white fox – around three zhang in length – rushed out from the Haotian Spirit Mirror. On its body were white scales, two round eyes that look like crystals, and in its mouth, it carried two long sharp swords.

The eyes of the white fox was filled with life, hinting a sign of intelligence. It spat out a white flame.

"Second Dark Hell Flame!"

Feng Fei Yun's expression greatly changed. This white fox was formed from the spirit energy inside the Haotian Spirit Mirror. It has its own independent thoughts, its body, and even more palpable, it could exert an unthinkable force.

This was something the Infinite Spirit Ring couldn't compare to; the soul of the

Infinite Spirit Ring was the Crimson Dragon, but it was only a strand of dragon energy. It couldn't materialize into a physical body, so naturally, it couldn't compete with the Second Dark Hell Flame of the white fox.

It must be said that, although the Infinite Spirit Ring was of the spirit treasure rank, it still needed time to be nurtured before it could compete with true spirit treasures.

"Escape!"

The power of the Second Dark Hell Flame was much more powerful than the First Dark Origin Flame. Even Immortal Foundation experts would be heavily injured if they were slightly touched; thus, Feng Fei Yun naturally didn't want to throw an egg at a rock. He recalled the power of the Infinite Spirit Ring and quickly ran away.

"Feng Fei Yun, weren't you very arrogant earlier? Why are you suddenly such a coward now?"

Dong Fang Jing Yue seemed to be calm while pursuing, but her heart was a little surprised; this despicable kid, Feng Fei Yun, could actually stop the Haotian Heavenly Thunder attack; the Infinite Spirit Ring in his hands was certainly a spirit treasure.

Where did this despicable kid get a spirit treasure from?

One has to know that even the entire Feng family only had three spirit treasures. Each was a secret protector of the family's fate. With Feng Fei Yun's current status at the Feng family, there was absolutely no way that he could have a spirit treasure; the only explanation was that this spirit treasure was personally obtained by him.

As Feng Fei Yun escaped for his life, his speed was absolutely first class; he was like a wild hare in the valley. Even if the cultivation of Dong Fang Jing Yue was higher than him by many levels, she still couldn't instantly catch him.

"Little girl Dong Fang, if our rank is equal, then I could defeat you with just one hand. You are not worthy to be my opponent."

Feng Fei Yun said while fleeing.

“Hmph! Even if the rank was the same, you still wouldn’t be my opponent. To tell you the truth, from the beginning till now, I had only used three layers of my cultivation. If I had exerted all of it, then I’m afraid I would have turned you into smithereens with one move.”

Dong Fang Jing Yue, with her feet on top of the Haotian Spirit Mirror, her colored ribbons flew freely, and the blood stains on her robe were gone; she looked as if she wasn’t tainted with the mundane dust. She was pure and holy, as well as elegant, like a goddess arriving to earth.

Two people, one chasing and one running; the pursuit had been going on for a few hundred miles, and it was unknown what boundary they had came to.

“Roar!”

Suddenly, above in the horizon, there was a black shadow coming down like a large mountain in the sky; the wind breaking sounded like a fierce beast’s terrifying roar.

This was the red ivory warship; it truly knew how to fly!

The formation on top of the ivory warship began to motion with the compass controlling the direction. The formation let out a frightening power, allowing the huge warship – weighing millions of pounds – to fly from the water and head towards Spirit State city.

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng, standing on top of the high platform of the warship, twirled his fingers on his beard; he smiled at the one boy one girl fighting below, and the smile became increasingly profound.

“Whoosh!”

His black sleeve waved downward, and then a wind came upward, bringing Feng Fei Yun to the red ivory warship. He then smilingly said:

“Little friend Feng, I had said earlier, ‘even if you were to escape from the red ivory warship, you wouldn’t be able to escape the palm of young miss Dong Fang.’ How could you not listen to me?”

Feng Fei Yun, just now, was almost captured by Dong Fang Jing Yue. Right now, he was still in fear; looking at the smile on the face of Grand Wisdom

Master Jing Feng, with his mind still upset with the matter, he said:

“This old grandpa; you already knew all along that she wasn’t injured, right?”

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng declined to comment; he only smiled, and he said:

“Let us go! Come back to Spirit State city and help me find the Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess. Then, naturally I will show you a path of light. If you help me find this person, then I will definitely solve your problem ahead.”

“Is there even someone in the world that is able to withstand this savage girl, Dong Fang Jing Yue?”

Feng Fei Yun was skeptical; perhaps even a senior expert from the Feng family wouldn’t be able to suppress her.

“Dong Fang Jing Yue has an older brother named Dong Fang Jing Shui. Dong Fang Jing Shui, fortunately, is a sworn brother of mine. As long as you help me find the Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess, then I will take you to Dong Fang Jing Shui and reveal the matter between you and Dong Fang Jing Yue to him. Of course, he will consult his sister to not pester you any further.”

Feng Fei Yun was surprised:

“Nao Dai Jin Shui?”

“It is Dong Fang Jing Shui!”

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng angrily glared at him. Dong Fang Jing Shui was a natural talent of a whole generation, and his aptitude was even above Dong Fang Jing Yue’s. He was considered to be one of the eight Grand Historical level of geniuses in the Jin Dynasty, and no one had dared to call him a water kettle head before.

“Dong Fang Jing Yue still has an older brother?”

Feng Fei Yun’s heart shivered; if her older brother knew that I punched her head once, who knew if this “older brother water kettle head” would join the hunting rank, pursue me as well, and cut me into ten thousand pieces?

Feng Fei Yun felt his heart beating faster; what path of light was this? This was truly a path of death.

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng mischievously laughed:

“Dong Fang Jing Shui, whether it is his aptitude or character, is the best; you can rest assured. As long as the whole story is told clearly, he will – of course – take your side; he will do his utmost to convince his little sister. After all, romantic feelings can’t be forced.”

Even though Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng’s intelligence was above the rest; however, regarding the feelings between men and women, it didn’t enter a single aperture of his head. He still thought that Dong Fang Jing Yue was truly in love with Fei Yun, and that was why she was chasing him.

“Is that right?”

Feng Fei Yun, with a bitter face, sighed once. His heart was defeated; if he truly met the older brother of Dong Fang Jing Yue, then what was he going to do?

Heaven! Kill me with a single lightning bolt!

“Boom!”

From the sky, a heavenly lightning came down and struck the area adjacent to Feng Fei Yun, turning an Ancient Jiang soldier into charcoal; he fell to the ground, causing a loud thump, and he immediately became unconscious.

Feng Fei Yun took a deep breath to maintain his composure. He saw that, in the far distant sky curtain was a shadow of a beautiful flying and gentle girl. The lightning strike must have came from her hand.

Dong Fang Jing Yue hovered in the air, her hand held the Haotian Spirit Mirror while she stared at the red ivory warship flying away with a blazing speed; her eyes were filled with coldness, and she scowled:

“Feng Fei Yun, even Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng’s protection will be useless; no one can save you!”

The pair of white wings on her back flapped once, and she immediately pierced through the grand forest, heading toward the red ivory warship to continue her pursuit.

Chapter 28 : Who is the Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess

Each strand of grass on the sideroad was bent downward from morning dew. A big dog ran out from a small alley, with a bone in its mouth, and ran into a bush; it then rolled up and ate the bone.

The Grindstone Alley began to bustle with noise and excitement, the street vendors had already pushed their carts to the great streets and small alleys, and the sound of wheels rolling created a rhythmic sound “kuang kuang ta ta” like the bellowing of the wind.

Everyone was heavily shouting in order to guarantee their survival.

This was their way of life; peaceful and ordinary.

However, in this world, there were always some people who wanted to be ordinary, but they were destined to embark on an extraordinary road.

“Come drink tea, come drink tea! Each bowl, one bronze coin! Hua Mao Feng, Zhu Jian Cui, Jing Tou Ya Zi! one bronze coin for one big bowl!”

A clear youthful voice came out from the tea house.

One could see a little girl that wore a little hemp dress. She leaned against a wooden pole, her bright blinking eyes stared at everyone who passed by the teahouse, and she yelled:

“Uncle, uncle, come drink a bowl of tea! One bowl one bronze coin!”

“Grandma, come drink tea!”

***

Xiao Yu Er perched her little lips, and her fingers pinched her sleeves; she had a face full of disappointment. It wasn’t even six o’clock, and she had already woken up to brew the tea, but she still hadn’t sold a single bowl once the sun had risen.

“Yu Er, are you tired?”

Old Man Luo asked lovingly with some pity in his heart.

The old man stepped forward with a staggered pace, and used a towel to wipe the sweat off her forehead.

“I’m not tired, not tired! Yu Er is not even a little bit tired!”

Xiao Yu Er hastily provided support for the old man with her hands at once.

Old Man Luo couldn’t help but to heavily sigh after seeing her strong, yet stubborn, expression. He said:

“Sometimes businesses will have on and off seasons; the business is no good today, but it will slowly get better.”

“Grandpa, don’t be too worried. Last time, young master Feng had left behind fifteen gold coins, and they are enough to last us for more than ten years. Even if business is bad, we won’t have to worry about being starved to death.”

Xiao Yu Er said.

Old Man Luo was a bit alarmed and furrowed his brows. His eyes, with a touch of curiosity, stared intently at his granddaughter. He hesitated for a moment, then said:

“Since you reminded me, young master Feng, outside of his romances, is a real hero. He was able to lead the soldiers to destroy the Eagle Claw gang; even the villain, San Ye. They all had to pay for their crimes on the spot. Now, the entire Spirit State city is clamoring all about the deeds of young master Feng. I heard from Ma Ban Xian, from the Cheng Huang Temple, that young master Feng was the reincarnation of Xiao Yao Jade Emperor Bodhisattva. His first-born child would be heavenly blessed with the body of an immortal; in the future, young master Feng will accomplish many great things, complete the Dao, and become a celestial – this matter was written in the stars.”

After Feng Fei Yun’s destruction of the Eagle Claw gang, he became the grand hero of Spirit State city; the number one character. All of the evil things, like oppressing males and bullying females in the past, were now considered as bold romanticism and heroically straightforward.

Of course, there were even some busybodies that boasted Fei Yun to be a grand immortal; a buddha who came down to earth in order to accumulate merits and spread the religious scripture – there were all kind of different

comments.

In any case, young master Feng's achievement was being exaggerated even more by the people. Some said that his foot stepped on a Seven Star Lotus, and the top of his head was engraved with an Eight Jewel Seal. In the future, he was bound to be successful with promotions, marry one hundred thousand wives, and live for three thousand and five hundred years as a carefree immortal, vacationing in this world.

"Yu Er, right now, everyone is saying that the reason young master Feng became enlightened to all things was because of your influence. Could it be… that you are the reincarnation of a certain Buddha?"

Old Man Luo's pair of eyes became apprehensive. He stood up straight and observed Yu Er with a serious and solemn gaze.

"Grandpa, people will always continue to change. Although, in the past, young master Feng had committed many evil acts, and he was slothful and lazy; however, recently, he had repented and changed in order to start from the beginning and learned how to properly act towards others. However, this person does not have anything to do with Yu Er."

Xiao Yu Er's fingers lightly touched her chin. In her head, appeared the image of Feng Fei Yun killing for the first time because of her. At that moment, young master Feng was extremely stylish.

"I had only met him twice; why did he stand up for me? Maybe it was just like everyone else was saying; he was changed by me, or maybe, maybe it's because he… he likes me. Not only cutting off the hand of brother Wu, but he also led people to destroy the Eagle Claw gang; could it all be because of me? Bah! Bah! Silly girl, have you no shame! His eyes must be so high, he is the… the reincarnation of Xiao Yao Jade Emperor Bodhisattva. With such a high status, how could he favor a foolish little girl like you?"

"Yu Er, Yu Er…"

Old Man Luo saw that she was lost in thought, and he continuously called for her.

"Uhh… what? Grandpa, what is the matter?"

Xiao Yu Er’s slender face blushed brightly with a vacant expression.

Old Man Luo saw that she was thinking about something; he smiled and said:

“The tea is cold now, go reheat it in case there are guests coming. We can’t let them drink cold tea, right?”

Xiao Yu Er’s expression darkened, and she said:

“I’m afraid that no one is coming to drink tea today.”

“Clank, Clank!”

“Thud! Thud!”

Outside the tea house was the sound of armor colliding; it was as if there was a heavenly army and ten thousand horses approaching. Countless footsteps echoed in the air, and their stomps caused the ground to slightly shake.

Immediately afterwards, many large black armored men surrounded the tea house; there were about a few thousand of them. Each of them were three meters tall, and they had war spears in their hands. Their cold aura caused others to not be able to breath.

Old Man Luo and Xiao Yu Er were frightened to death at such a scene.

“This… Everyone… What is going on?”

Old Man Luo, in horror, kneeled directly to the ground.

A roar was let out and a path was made from the yielding armored soldiers. Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng and Feng Fei Yun walked to the front of the crowd; both of their gazes were on Xiao Yu Er’s body. However, they had nothing in common with each other.

In Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng’s eyes was respectful piety and happiness!

However, Feng Fei Yun’s eyes was filled with surprise; it was indeed this little lady!

“I can sense the Heavenly Witchcraft Tree growing in her body; she is indeed the Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess.”

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng was extremely excited.

Feng Fei Yun had led Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng and his people to seven or eight places already. The young girls around the age of fourteen, in those places, were all denied by Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng. It was only until they got to the Grindstone Alley that Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng felt a resonation with the Heavenly Witchcraft Tree, and he confirmed that the Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess was nearby.

At that moment, Feng Fei Yun thought about Xiao Yu Er selling tea at this place, so he brought them running here.

“Jing Feng pays my respects to the Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess. Your Highness Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess’ power is vast and mighty; your eternal glory will never be forgotten!”

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng, with both hands crossed on his chest, kneeled down to the ground in front of the frightened Xiao Yu Er – who had lost her wit; He kowtowed until his face was next to the floor.

Even the spiritual leader Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng was kowtowing, so the other Ancient Jiang soldiers naturally had to kneel to the ground; they faced forward towards the tea house, and they kowtowed.

“Boom, Boom, Boom…”

Their faces were filled with reverence and solemnity; it was as if they were worshipping a god in a temple.

From their perspective, this was a very sacred matter.

“Your Highness Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess’ power is vast and mighty; your eternal glory will never be forgotten!”

“Your Highness Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess’ power is vast and mighty; your eternal glory will never be forgotten!”

***

The voices of these Ancient Jiang soldiers were louder than ordinary people; all of them were emotional, and their blood boiled with excitement. One could imagine that if Xiao Yu Er was to nonchalantly tell them to die, then they would definitely follow the order without furrowing their brows.

This was the power of faith!

Feng Fei Yun was struck by this scene! He didn't know about the others, but the old grandpa, Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng, was an old monster that had lived for four hundred years. He had an unimaginably high cultivation, he completely capable of moving the winds and calling for the rains, yet he was now kneeling on the ground. One could easily see how important the Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess was in their hearts.

Old Man Luo was entirely shocked. Afterwards, he immediately kneeled down to the ground as well, and he yelled:

"Her Highness Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess' power is vast and mighty; your eternal glory will never be forgotten! Xiao Yu Er, what are you waiting for? Hurry up and kneel down before the Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess. The goddess could be nearby, so we shouldn't offend her. Hurry up and kneel, hurry up and kneel!"

Xiao Yu Er hesitated for a moment, then she also kneeled down to the ground:

"Young master Feng, are these people are worshipping you?"

Only Feng Fei Yun was still standing in his place, so Xiao Yu Er naturally thought this would be the case.

"Poof!"

Feng Fei Yun almost fainted from the comment, and he angrily said:

"Do you not have eyes, ah? They are kowtowing towards the Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess? Do I look like a goddess in any way?"

"Then how come you aren't kneeling down before the Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess?"

Xiao Yu Er tilted her head and thought, and then she curiously asked.

Feng Fei Yun's expression was frozen stiff. He took a breath to calm his temperature, and he looked at her for a while; he then forcefully smiled twice without saying anything else.

Chapter 29 : Uncertainty

"I have already sent a Flying Jade Scroll to inform Dong Fang Jing Shui. You bring this letter to Violet Firmament Ancient City and find him there; naturally, he will help with your romantic quarrel with Dong Fang Jing Yue."

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng gave a piece of jade paper to Feng Fei Yun. On the paper was a brilliant moving light; it was like a surface of crystal clear water with calm waves. One could faintly see the handwritings that floated up and down.

It seemed like the only way to completely deal with this matter was to find Dong Fang Jing Yue's older brother. In the end, to truly fight against the Yin Gou family was the same as courting death.

Feng Fei Yun didn't hesitate to take the jade paper, and he stored it away.

Grand Wisdom Master's one hand gently grabbed the slender arm of Xiao Yu Er. While smiling, he tapped Fei Yun's shoulder. He said:

"Little friend Feng's extraordinary aptitude is accompanied by a courageous and carefree attitude; Dong Fang Jing Shui's favorite thing is to become friends with heroes like you."

Xiao Yu Er's big eyes curiously blinked while she hid behind Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng's back; she secretly stared at Feng Fei Yun intensely.

When this young girl had found out that she was the Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess, she was startled frozen for half day; it was like she had lost her soul. No matter who called out to her, she didn't give a single response; only when Feng Fei Yun went in front her face and give a smile, did she get frightened to the point where her soul immediately came back. She covered her chest with her hands; she then continuously back pedaled as if she was afraid that Feng Fei Yun would ** her again.

This was a nightmare in her mind, how could she quickly forget it?

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng definitely had to welcomed the Heavenly Witchcraft Goddess back to the Feng Tian Bu. Under Feng Fei Yun's intimidation,

Xiao Yu Er and Old Man Luo were quickly convinced. Xiao Yu Er earlier had still thought that the kowtowing scene earlier was meant for Fei Yun; one could say that our young master Feng had greatly contributed to their acquiescence to this departure!

If Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng was allowed to be the one to do the convincing, then maybe even three days and three nights wouldn't necessarily be enough for this grandpa and granddaughter to obediently follow the plan.

This successful intimidation method was contributed to the frightening past reputation of Feng Fei Yun. After all, Xiao Yu Er was very afraid of him, and Old Man Luo was even more afraid; the threat of Feng Fei Yun at Spirit State city was without rivals.

Even now, with Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng's protection, Xiao Yu Er, towards Feng Fei Yun, was still extremely afraid and could only stare at him while hiding at the side.

Feng Fei Yun, although he smiled on the outside, his heart was solemn; he said:

"I dare to ask, in the end, what type of person is Dong Fang Jing Shui?"

Feng Fei Yun was a big benefactor to him, and Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng was naturally an upright person; thus, with a serious demeanor, he answered Feng Fei Yun:

"Three years ago, when I was pursuing a fierce villain on the way to Dense Fog Ghost Forest, I had accidentally entered the Ten Thousand Ghosts Forest Grand Formation. Coincidentally, Dong Fang Jing Shui was also trapped in this formation. This person's cultivation was outstanding, and his innate talent was breathtaking. He was trapped inside the formation for three months without dying; his willpower and perseverance truly made me gasp with admiration."

"It was senior who saved him from the Ten Thousand Ghosts Forest Grand Formation?"

The Ten Thousand Ghosts Forest Grand Formation was one of the top killing formations of the Sen Luo Temple, and it was renowned alongside with the Soul Suppressing Blood Formation. No matter how talented Dong Fang Jing Shui was, once he rushed inside, don't even think about escaping this formation. To be

able to last for three months without being dissipated by the ghosts, this was already quite extraordinary.

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng nodded and said:

“Dong Fang Jing Shui is definitely a hero garnered with both talents and characters. If little boy, if you were equal to one part of him, then the elders of your Feng family will definitely nurture you like a treasure. Hah hah!”

Feng Fei Yun didn’t think this was correct, and he said:

“Even if Dong Fang Jing Shui’s aptitude is exceedingly high, you still don’t need to embellish it so much! I don’t believe that I am not equal to his one tenth!”

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng heavily sighed, and he said:

“I had long used the Witchcraft Eyes to check your innate talents. The purity of the blood, the intricacies of the skeletons, these innate talents within the nine grades could be considered to be first class. In Spirit State city, your talents would definitely be number one; however, if we throw you into the Bai Ling county, then the teenagers with the same talent as you would number by at least ten people. In the entirety of the Grand Southern city, the same talents as you would be even more – eight hundreds if not one thousand. Heh heh, if put into the entire Jin Dynasty, then talents like yours would be at least numbered in the ten thousands!”

“However, Dong Feng Jing Shui is different. In the Jin Dynasty he is considered the top tier of talents. The people that could compare with him is only a few, like the eldest disciple, Li Xiao Nan, of the Spirit God Palace, or the current crown prince, Long Shen Ya… Only these people could be considered the world’s top figures. As young as them but to be so talented and handsome, this is naturally them blooming too brilliantly!”

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng shook his head while smiling. Even though he does kind of like Feng Fei Yun and was optimistic about his talents, but he still didn’t think that Feng Fei Yun had the qualifications to be compared with Dong Fang Jing Shui.

One was a, historically, a grand genius, and the other was an ordinary genius – completely incomparable.

Even though Feng Fei Yun was a little surprised, he was not discouraged. After all, he was cultivating the “Immortal Phoenix Physique”; each time it increased in rank, his talents and physique would also jump forward by a huge step. Currently, he only had successfully cultivated the second level of Blood Purification. If he could complete the third level, then both his cultivation and talents would increase greatly in quality. He would have the chance to catch up to the group of Dong Fang Jing Shui, or even beyond them.

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng noticed Fei Yun’s constantly changing expressions, and he smilingly said:

“Little friend Feng, don’t be so discouraged; geniuses like Dong Fang Jing Shui are all heavenly defying existences, in the world there are only a few of them. You don’t need to force yourself to compare with them. The pursuit for excellence is noble, but too high of a goal would just normally be a detriment to one’s self.”

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng’s voice carried a consoling tone.

Feng Fei Yun modestly said with a smiled:

“These principles; this boy naturally understands.”

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng looked at the blinding sun above; the red ivory warship had absorbed enough solar essence of the sunlight, and it was slowly heading towards the sky’s curtain.

Old Man Luo had earlier been invited to the red ivory warship. Right now, it was only Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng, Xiao Yu Er, and Feng Fei Yun saying their goodbyes.

“I have something that I don’t know whether to say or not?”

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng originally wanted to board the flying ship; however, in the end, he couldn’t hold it back and had to ask.

“Senior just go ahead, don’t be so reserved!”

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng lowered his voice, and he said:

“This girl, Dong Fang Jing Yue, whether it is her willpower or talents or beauty, it is one of a kind in this world. If she truly wants to commit the one hundred

years love with you, then it is a good thing; you should really reconsider. In the end… if you could climb to the top, to the high branches of the Yin Gou family, your future developments would truly open; it would be one hundred benefits and not one hindrance.”

In Jing Feng’s eyes, there were flashing lights of wisdom; no one knew what he was currently scheming in his mind.

Feng Fei Yun was dumbfounded. First, judging from Dong Fang Jing Yue’s attitude towards him; if she didn’t cut him into eight pieces, then she wouldn’t be able to let go of the hatred in her heart. Second, even if her head was struck and she turned out to truly have feelings for Feng Fei Yun, he still definitely wouldn’t be able to accept her.

Because her figure and Shui Yue Ting’s were too similar!

Of course, both of these possibilities had almost no chance of happening. Even though Dong Fang Jing Yue was a bit prideful, this little amount of pride was not enough to compare to Shui Yue Ting. Regarding this, Feng Fei Yun was confident in knowing her character.

“This matter, senior does not have to worry about.”

Feng Fei Yun smilingly said.

“Ha ha! It seems like little friend Feng’s heart already has its own universe; it seems like this old man had wasted my breath again! However, regarding the matter between you and Dong Fang Jing Yue, I had already informed Dong Fang Jing Shui through the Flying Jade Scroll. He currently knows that his young sister is brazenly in love with you; regarding this, you need to mentally prepare yourself a little bit, ah!”

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng was laughing so hard that his normally kind smile became insidious.

“Poof!”

Feng Fei Yun almost fell to the ground. He glared with his eyes toward Jing Feng, and he yelled:

“This old man and your nonsensical words, who gave you such a long tongue

like this?!”

Fei Yun had originally planned to meet Dong Fang Jing Shui and come up with a different story. He didn’t expect this damned old man Jing Feng to be such a gossipy scoundrel, and he had already long informed Dong Fang Jing Shui!

Imagine for a little bit; if an older brother suddenly heard that his cold-as-ice little sister has a lover, what expression would he have?

Would he be emotional? Or would he be surprised? Or would he be extremely happy?

Only his mother would know! After all, Fei Yun was mercilessly thrown into the pit again by this grand wisdom master.

“Feng… Young master Feng, will we have the chance to see each other again? I heard that Feng Tian Bu is a very far away place, an ordinary person wouldn’t be able to get there, even if they travel for a lifetime.”

Xiao Yu Er shyly asked her last question.

On the contrary, Fei Yun didn’t want to think too much. He immediately said in a nonchalant manner:

“If I don’t die in the hands of Dong Fang Jing Yue or in the hands of Dong Fang Jing Shui, then maybe we’ll meet again another day.”

“Oh.”

Xiao Yu Er gently replied, and she lowered her head again to follow Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng to fly to the red ivory warship.

“Rumble!”

The formation of the red ivory warship began to rotate; this caused the entire crimson ship to be encompassed and the surrounding air to form a huge vortex. With the help of the wind and the solar energy, the red ivory warship made a huge “Phoosh” sound, and then it flew towards the far curtain of the sky.

It was at this point that Feng Fei Yun was suddenly startled. Seemingly, it was only now that he was able to react to the words of Xiao Yu Er. He looked towards the direction of the red ivory warship and yelled:

“Later I will definitely go to Feng Tian Bu to find you. I gave you fifteen gold coins, you still owe me fifteen tea bowls; each bowl must be given in full to me!”

Feng Fei Yun didn’t know whether she could hear him or not. After all, the red ivory warship had already disappeared behind the clouds, becoming a red dot, and then it completely disappeared in the end.

Chapter 30 : Childhood Sweethearts

Young master Feng disappeared for three days in a row without any news, so the governor of the city sent out three different official documents ordering the nearby towns to help search for him, but there was no useful information.

Young master Feng seemingly had dissipated from this world.

The happiest person in this matter was of course Feng Sui Yu!

Today, he wore a feather scarf, his hand held a paper fan made from rosewood while he leisurely enjoyed the flowers in his garden.

“Oldest master, this little boy Feng Fei Yun showed off his ability too much; he must have offended someone he shouldn’t have, so he was murdered.”

A servant standing respectfully to the side, wore a devious smile on his face.

Feng Sui Yu, without showing his emotions, gently touched a flower and said:

“Feng Fei Yun! Hah Hah! His disappearance is quite opportune. This saves me time from having to do it personally.”

After Feng Fei Yun led the city guards to destroy the Eagle Claw gang, Feng Sui Yu felt a great threat. If he didn’t quickly get rid of Feng Fei Yun, then he would not be able to eat well and sleep tight.

However, who would have guessed that this little Feng Fei Yun just suddenly disappeared? He seemingly vanished from this world. This was the result that Feng Sui Yu had truly wanted, so naturally his heart was very pleased; he thought that even the heavens was helping him out.

“Big brother, you are in a good mood today, ah! What are you smiling about?”

Feng Fei Yun, from the outside the main door, came in openly, with a happy smile on his face.

Feng Sui Yu couldn’t smile anymore after hearing this voice. He turned around, and he saw that Feng Fei Yun was walking toward his front.

“Fei Yun, where did you go for these last couple of days? Foster father and I

were very worried about you.”

Although Feng Sui Yu was disappointed inside, he quickly controlled his emotions. A caring smile appeared on his face.

“This matter… ah, I was only strolling around in a circle. Right! Where is father? I have an urgent matter for him.”

Feng Fei Yun said.

“Foster father is in the main hall discussing important business with an esteemed guest, maybe you shouldn’t disturb them.”

Feng Sui Yu stared at Feng Fei Yun intensely, his face began to become serious. After all, he felt that with this return, Feng Fei Yun was not like the past; this gave him a deep and unfathomable feel.

How could a playboy that only fooled around and awaited his own death have such a shattering transformation within just a few days? Could he have met an immortal’s fortune or something?

Matters such as meeting an immortal’s fortune was not impossible, but it was exceedingly rare. Only people with extreme luck would be able to find an immortal’s fortune, and they would then soar to the heaven with just one step.

Feng Sui Yu naturally didn’t believe that Feng Fei Yun had found an immortal fortune, so he intended to test him to find out his true worth.

Feng Fei Yun was always worrying about that damned grandma Dong Fang Jing Yue’s pursuit of him to Spirit State city; thus, he was in such a rush so he didn’t pay attention to many things. He quickly headed toward the main hall.

Feng Sui Yu’s eyes followed Feng Fei Yun’s shadow, and his fingers picked out a white flower petal, secretly adding his spirit energy to it. The originally white flower was quickly covered by a blue grey color.

“Whoosh!”

Without any warning, this petal from Sui Yu’s finger flew out in a beautiful arc which aimed straight towards the Ji Liang meridian of Feng Fei Yun.

Currently, Feng Sui Yu was at the peak of the Spirit Realm; it could be considered an outstanding cultivation. He was confident that his little plan

would not be detected by Feng Fei Yun.

“Ba!”

The spirit energy of this petal turned into a deathly aura that penetrated the Ji Liang meridian of Feng Fei Yun, and it disappeared without a trace.

Feng Sui Yu’s eyes, from beginning to end, had been concentrated on the petal. It was only until the spirit energy had infiltrated the Ji Liang meridian of Feng Fei Yun that he breathe easily; in his heart, he secretly smiled:

“It seems that I was too cautious. This little boy is only this much. With the spirit energy infiltrating the Ji Liang meridian, his cultivation, in this lifetime, will never take another step forward. It will stagnate forever in the same place at the early level of the Spirit Realm.”

Feng Sui Yu assumed that Feng Fei Yun’s cultivation was still at the early level of the Spirit Realm like before. He didn’t know that within the last couple of days, Feng Fei Yun had underwent multiple adventures, and he had soon broke through to the Immortal Foundation. Currently, maybe Feng Wan Peng was not his match; as for someone with the cultivation of Feng Sui Yu, he only needed one slap to kill him completely.

Feng Sui Yu’s petty maneuver was naturally sensed by Fei Yun, but he didn’t stop his steps. His mouth let out a little smirk, and he secretly channeled his energy inside his body. In the blink of an eye, the spirit energy of Feng Sui Yu that had infiltrated his meridian was scattered and expelled out of his body.

“This little boy has a lot of underhanded schemes. I need to find an opportune moment to deal with him.”

Feng Fei Yun continued walking at a fast pace, and he didn’t inform anyone before coming directly to the lobby. At any moment, that damned grandma Dong Fang Jing Yue could show up, so Feng Fei Yun didn’t have time to wait around.

“Father, Fei Yun has an important matter that requires your attention.”

As he spoke these words, he had already made it to the main hall. He lifted his head and saw that in the main hall, besides Feng Wan Peng, was another middle-aged man.

This middle-aged man was around forty years old with slightly dark skin, but it didn't hinder his elegant aura. He was very well groomed with not a single strand of hair on his face. His body was rather slender, and his clothes were clean and tidy. It was evident that he was from a royal upbringing and lived like a prince.

Besides Feng Wan Peng and the middle-aged man, Adviser Liu and Housekeeper Luo were were divided to the two sides. When they saw Feng Fei Yun intruding into the main hall, they didn't become angry; they turned ecstatic instead.

As long as one could return safely, then it was already a good thing!

Even though Feng Wan Peng's expression was serious, inside, he was very happy; he gleefully asked:

"Fei Yun, where did you go these last couple of days?"

Feng Fei Yun naturally couldn't tell them that he had offended a big character from the Yin Gou family; otherwise, all the people here would be frightened to the ground.

"Honorable father, these last couple of days I was in isolated cultivation in order to research military strategies, and I was actively preparing for the Military Strategy Iron Council that is coming up soon. I am hoping that I could show my talents in this assembly, so that father could be proud."

Feng Fei Yun clasped his hands together, and he respectfully answered.

The middle-aged man, from beginning to end, had been observing Feng Fei Yun; seeing his calm and appropriate response, he couldn't help but to nod his head and smile:

"I can't believe that after three years, this boy Fei Yun had improved so much. So young, but he has already asked for a military order to level the Eagle Claw gang. Even the ninth great-grandfather is aware of this, always praising this talented boy in front of me. If this was three years ago, even if you beat me to death, I wouldn't believe that he would have such an achievement like today."

Feng Fei Yun's grandfather had three sons; Feng Wan Peng was the youngest. He was ranked third.

This middle-aged man was the second blood brother of Feng Wan Peng; his name was Feng Wan Li. He was also the second older uncle of Feng Fei Yun.

Feng Wan Li was also a person with extraordinary talents, a hero. Twenty years ago, during the last Hidden Dragon War of the Feng family, he was placed in the top fifty. Currently, he was situated in the main Feng family house with the minister of affairs position, and he could be considered to have had some modest success.

The relationship between Feng Wan Li and Feng Wan Peng was quite close. Wan Li frequently visited Spirit State city as a guest. He had seen Fei Yun at a young age, so he naturally knew what type of person this little boy was – a wasteful pervert and a foolish party fiend. From the past till now, he had never placed high hopes in Fei Yun; however, the current Fei Yun gave him a new sensation. It was as if he was a completely changed man.

Could this little boy truly become a prodigal son and become a genius?

Feng Fei Yun smiled, he and said:

“Second uncle, are you praising me or wanting to hurt me here?”

Feng Wan Li shook his head and smiled:

“If you have truly become successful, then I naturally will praise you; however, if you are merely a foolish person, then, even if I don’t scold you, I’m afraid my little girl will still scold you to death.”

“Little sister Jian Xue?”

Remembering this mischievous little girl, Fei Yun suddenly felt an oncoming headache.

Feng Jian Xue was the foster daughter of Feng Wan Li, and the little cousin of Feng Fei Yun. She was only younger than Feng Fei Yun by three days. Since childhood, they had always played together, and they were considered childhood sweethearts. The two were always innocently together, but once Feng Fei Yun had turned into a bad boy with horrible characters, Feng Wan Li no longer allowed for Feng Jian Xue to become close to him.

Even though they had met again several times later, however, each time Feng

Fei Yun was scolded by Feng Jian Xue to the point of vomiting blood. Especially after she had found out that he had raped a girl; she gave him a vicious beating, fracturing all the bones in his body. He couldn't get off the bed for half a month.

From then on, Feng Jian Xue was thoroughly disappointed in this older cousin, and she no longer visited Spirit State city; it could be considered as having all ties severed.

Feng Wan Li smilingly said:

"Fei Yun, right now you need to be careful when coming to Violet Firmament Ancient City. These last few years, Jian Xue was heavily nurtured by the family, and she had achieved the fourth stage of the Vigorous Gale method at the early Immortal Foundation. Within the fifth generation of the Feng family, she is considered one of the influential figures. Plus, before I came to Spirit State city, she told me that should you dare to come to Violet Firmament Ancient City that she will break your legs again."

When it came to the cultivation of Feng Jian Xue, Feng Wan Li was very proud. After all, he was only at the intermediate stage of the Immortal Foundation, and Feng Jian Xue was so young, yet she made it to the early stage. Regarding cultivation, she had left the father and son pair of Feng Wan Peng in the dust; this was a matter worthy of smugness.

On the contrary, Feng Wan Peng's face was very hard to look at. In the beginning, he thought that Feng Sui Yu's talent was high enough to take charge of a mission alone, but he didn't expect for Feng Jian Xue's cultivation to be so frightening; she already broke through to the Immortal Foundation.

One was at peak Spirit Realm, and the other was early Immortal Foundation; there was no room for comparison.

Feng Fei Yun didn't mind too much, so he smilingly said:

"Violet Firmament Ancient City; I have no choice but to go. If she really wants to break my legs, then I'll have no choice but to accept it."

Feng Wan Li saw Feng Fei Yun's nonchalant attitude, and he couldn't help but to rub his eyes and ask:

"Do you not want to know why she said these words to you?"

Feng Fei Yun said:

“That’s right! Even though she hates me to the bones, but she still can’t have the illogical urge to break my legs for no reason.”

Feng Wan Li, facing Feng Wan Peng, smiled:

“Fei Yun, you, today, could be considered an adult; plus, you have the courage to ask for a military order as well as successfully obtained military contributions. Our ninth great-grandfather thinks very highly of you, and he felt that you are our hope. We had already discussed it; if you can achieve success in the Military Strategy Iron Council and show off all of your hidden talents, then the ninth great-grandfather would personally arrange for the marriage between you and Jian Xue.”

“A man starting a family early will always mature faster. Fei Yun, right now, you are not settled, and you are too emotional; you truly need someone that can reign you in really well.”

Housekeeper Liu nodded his head and smiled.

Feng Wan Peng naturally had apparently already agreed to this matter, and he also smiled:

“This matter, I had previously discussed with Housekeeper Liu. Fei Yun, you are decisively smart; you are a fitting person to walk on the road of a talented strategist, but your body is not fit for cultivation. This is your weakness, so you need a talented wife with a powerful cultivation to assist you. We have unanimously found that yours and Jian Xue’s personalities were compatible; if you guys could become husband and wife, then it would truly be one gifted in martial arts, the other in wisdom; it is too appropriate.”

Feng Fei Yun felt as if, in the bright sky, there was a loud thunder hurting his eardrums; in response, he said:

“Our personalities are compatible? She wants to break my legs, how do you all explain this?”

Feng Fei Yun didn’t know whether to laugh or cry; he truly couldn’t think of how he and Feng Jian Xue were compatible.

The bunch of Feng Wan Peng, Feng Wan Li, and Housekeeper Liu were all coughing twice, and their faces became strange. Naturally, they had been silenced by this matter, but earlier they had already talked about everything. Whether Feng Fei Yun wanted to or not, this had already been a foregone conclusion.

Chapter 31 : It is an Endless Road, Don’t Stop

The Feng family was enormous, and they consisted of sixteen immediate branches and forty eight side branches.

The immediate branches had the same flesh and blood with each other; however, because their ancestors were different, they were divided into sixteen different branches.

Each individual branch had countless children that constituted the forces of the Feng family that spread out over many directions; this created a friendly yet competitive structure.

According to the quantity of experts and talent in the branches, every twenty years, the elders of the family would initiate a ranking for each of the individual branches. This was why the Hidden Dragon War and the Military Strategy Iron Council existed.

Feng Fei Yun belonged to the twelfth branch of the family; even though it wasn’t at the bottom of the sixteen branches, it was still viewed as the tail end of the ranking. This was why, even though Feng Wan Peng had an extraordinary talent, he was only arranged to be a governor at Spirit State city.

The title of governor seemed to be prestigious, but in the eyes of the Feng family’s upper echelon, this arrangement did not have any future. The younger generation, with genuine importance in the family, were arranged to join the godly military camps or arranged to become an official in the main government. These were the best ways to become renowned.

In short, the Feng family higher ranked branches’ younger generations had higher statuses; this meant that they were able to cultivate with better martial methods while they also were rewarded with thousand year spirit plants or medicinal pills to increase their physique and cultivation.

These things were what the younger generations aspired to obtain. It could be said that any genius that wanted to become a great heavenly shattering character relied on this accumulation of great resources.

If it wasn't for the Blood Spirit Seed, Feng Fei Yun wouldn't have been able to reach his current cultivation so quickly. This was the power of strange plants and spirit plants.

Now that the Hidden Dragon War and the Military Strategy Iron Council were drawing near, all of the large branches seeking to increase their ranking had begun preparing.

The young geniuses also wanted to use this opportunity to suddenly become renowned and shock the world.

At the twelfth branch, Feng Fei Yun was not considered to be a heavenly shattering talent. According to the calculations of the branch leader, the ninth great grandfather, holding onto their twelfth ranking would be quite difficult.

When the ninth great grandfather was reaching desperation; there was news that came from Spirit State city. There appeared a person with military strategy and wits above others: Feng Fei Yun. Suddenly, it seemed as if the old man had been able to grab onto a life-saving spirit plant. He decisively chose to heavily groom him. He was even willing to motivate him by using the charm of a woman, and this was why the marriage between Feng Jian Xue and Feng Fei Yun was decided at this point.

This was also the reason why Feng Jian Xue said that if Feng Fei Yun showed up at Violet Firmament Ancient City, then she would break his bones.

*** ***

At mid noon, the sun had risen and was radiating its blinding light. The atmosphere was a bit suffocating, even the willow tree on the side of the road was losing its spirit. It was seemingly very tired.

"Clank clank!"

A carriage with eight bronze wheels that was pulled by a mountain deer whose body was covered with scales was heading towards the main gate of Spirit State city.

Heavenly mountain deer; its antlers were like two mysterious peaks!

The fast rolling wheels broke the lonely silence at noon. After reaching a large

street, the back of the mountain deer suddenly flashed with a bright white light from a magical rune.

This mountain deer was around four meters tall; it's whole body radiated a bright light. In a short time, its power suddenly exploded, and its speed increased by more than ten times. It pulled the eight-wheeled bronze carriage with a shocking speed. It left Spirit State city by ten miles, and it then disappeared into the midst of the forests and mountains.

"This is a Strong Wind talisman belonging to the first rank talisman tree. Once it is placed on the back of the mountain deer, it could allow it to travel up to eight thousand miles per day. Of course, the effect of this Strong Wind talisman can last for only one day and one night; afterwards, the talisman's spirit power will be depleted, and it will have to be replaced with a new one by the next day."

Feng Wan Li sat in the carriage and explained while he looked at Feng Fei Yun and Feng Sui Yu.

Even though the road was bumpy, the carriage was as calm as the sea – it was as if one was inside of a ship's cabin.

While the Hidden Dragon War and the Military Strategy Iron Council were still two months away, the children of the fifth generation from the Feng family had already begun to gather at Violet Firmament Ancient City, and all of them were going back to the family to prepare in advance.

Firstly, this allowed the participants to find out a bit more about their strong opponents, so they could prepare ahead of time.

Secondly, the children of the large branches needed to communicate and become more acquainted with one another in order to team up in the events; this was so they could avoid hurting each other.

These things were naturally planned by the branch leaders behind the scenes.

The purpose of Feng Wang Li's visit was to bring Feng Fei Yun and Feng Sui Yu back to Violet Firmament Ancient City.

Feng Sui Yu was very well-mannered, and he had a sense of elegance that exuded from his body.

He calmly spoke:

“This Strong Wind talisman is so miraculous; it must have been difficult to create it. Only someone as excellent as second uncle would be able to create such a heavenly talisman like this.”

Feng Fei Yun silently mocked in his mind:

“The Strong Wind talisman was only a first rank talisman, but Feng Sui Yu was calling it a heavenly talisman. His flattering skill was the first rank thing here.”

Feng Wan Li said:

“The Strong Wind talisman isn’t really a heavenly talisman or anything, but creating a Strong Wind talisman requires at least the early Immortal Foundation. Plus, some rare materials such as Jade Silk paper and Grand Wind blood are used in its creation. One Strong Wind talisman could be sold for a high price of one hundred gold coins.”

One hundred gold coins for Feng Fei Yun or any children from a grand family was essentially nothing, but to an ordinary person, it was definitely a price high in the sky.

A single Strong Wind talisman could only last for one day and night, yet it costed one hundred gold coins; one could see how extravagant this was.

This was the importance of resources. With a lack of wealth, a family absolutely could not grow stronger.

“Both of your cultivations are still too weak; wait until you reach the Immortal Foundation. Then, you will naturally be able to buy the materials and personally craft the talismans.”

Feng Wan Li continued.

Feng Fei Yun lifted the corner of a curtain in the ancient bronze carriage. Outside was a dense forest along with gigantic mountains and rivers as far as the eyes could see.

Spirit State city was a few hundred miles away. They were heading towards an unknown road.

This road was the way to Violet Firmament Ancient City!

Violet Firmament Ancient City was the main city of the Grand Southern region as well as the largest ancient city in the south of the Jin Dynasty. This was a place where cultivators gathered; a collection of snakes and dragons, a place where the poisonous crowd go on rampages. All of the grand families were next to each other, and there was the matter of some leading immortal sects that were situated in the city to recruit new disciples on a wide scale.

Spirit State city was such a remote and backwards place compared with Violet Firmament city because it was just a tiny place not worthy of mention.

“Fei Yun, Sui Yu, at Violet Firmament city, you two need to be well behaved. You cannot disrespect others like you did in Spirit State city. Violet Firmament Ancient City is a place with crouching tigers and hidden dragons; many geniuses lay in the shadows. Grand families like ours number at three or four, and, inside, there are even more immortal sects with power no less than our Feng family.”

Feng Wan Li’s expression became serious; when he looked over at Feng Fei Yun, there was a hint of warning. In the end, Feng Fei Yun had a past record; at Spirit State city, he only caused a bit of trouble, not too big of a storm. If he dared to kidnap a young miss from some family that lived in Violet Firmament Ancient City and toyed with her in bed, then it would be the same as messing with a female disciple from an immortal sect. Wasn’t this just inviting a grand calamity onto oneself?

Feng Wan Li was extremely uncertain about Feng Fei Yun. He was afraid that this sexually driven person would cause a few world-shaking events; then it would be akin to messing with the heavens.

Feng Sui Yu solemnly nodded his head, and he said:

“Once we reach Violet Firmament Ancient City, I will definitely follow all of second uncle’s arrangements. I won’t dare to disobey half a word.”

Feng Fei Yun didn’t want to care too much. These words from Feng Wan Li could scare Feng Sui Yu, but not him. In the end, the Feng family was a top family in the Grand Southern region, so it was absolutely a grand power at Violet Firmament city. Even if something actually happened, he was afraid that no grand power would actually dare to fight head-on with the Feng family.

In the cultivation world, benefits were above all else!

Without absolute benefit, no grand families would openly declare war!

On principle, Feng Fei Yun could cause any calamities, and the upper echelon of the Feng family would be able to deal with it. Of course, this did not include him offending the young miss, Dong Fang Jing Yue. This was a completely different matter. Even if the patriarch of the Feng family personally came forward, Dong Fang Jing Yue wouldn't necessarily accept the bribe.

Having thought of Dong Fang Jing Yue, Feng Fei Yun's mind suddenly flashed:

"Pshh! This is trouble! Dong Fang Ying Jue's brother, the Grand Historical genius Dong Fang Jing Shui; isn't he at Violet Firmament city?"

At the same time when Fei Yun's heart was heavily beating, the white robes of Dong Fang Jing Yue appeared on the walls of Spirit State city, standing majestically. Her white veil gently fluttered in the air, which matched her slender and adorable figure.

In her hand was the Haotian Spirit Mirror; the aura shined in the vast sky, and it pointed to a far direction.

"Without the protection of Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng, Feng Fei Yun, I want to see how you will escape from my grasp."

Her delicate and beautiful hand motioned around, and she then withdrew the Haotian Spirit Mirror. The white wings that protruded from her back began to spread out wide. Her slim figure became a white rainbow, and she headed towards the direction of the ancient bronze carriage; she began her chase.

Author:
The first book "Spirit State city" has ended. This book is considered the foundation. Starting from the second book there will be many exciting and rich developments.

Chapter 32 : Hidden Dragon Courtyard

The heavenly spirit mountain deer was combined with the blessing of the Strong Wind talisman, so it could travel for more than eight thousand miles each day. During the sunset of the seventh day, a black mountain range was in front of their eyes.

This black mountain range blocked the views of others, it was seemingly deep and resounding.

No, this was not a mountain range. This was simply part of the walls of Violet Firmament Ancient City. This wall was built by boulders, that weighed ten thousand Jin and towered at several hundred zhang, like a coarse and wild mountain range that reclined horizontally.

“Rumble!”

In the far distance, one could hear the roaring sound of the city moats. The flow of the water was lively, and its mist was high, not unlike the clouds in the sea – vast to the extreme.

At one end of the city moat, one had to look really far before seeing the city gate on the other side. The city guards were only as big as ants.

Finally, they had reached Violet Firmament Ancient City!

Even though it was just a city wall and a river moat, it was enough for others to feel a boundless atmosphere.

Feng Fei Yun jumped down from the ancient bronze carriage, and he stood next to the city protecting river. His two eyes gave off a fiery light that looked at the far distance ahead. He could see that, inside Violet Firmament Ancient City, there were strands of moving dragon energy as well as mythical horse vapors that travelled quickly – it was indeed extremely shocking for others.

Currently, he was using the “Phoenix Heavenly Gaze”. He could see the hopes of the people, see through all things, understand the void, appraise different items… Etcetera. This was the spirit power he had cultivated in the last few traveling days.

Once the early Immortal Foundation was reached, one could begin to practice all types of spirit powers. The “Phoenix Heavenly Gaze” was his first spirit power; compared to the “Thousand Miles Seeing Eyes”, it was superior by countless times.

Even though he was only at the early level of the Phoenix Heavenly Gaze, he could see the fortunes of others easily. In addition, he was able to analyze the rise and fall of a region, and even his naked gaze was able to observe the underground mineral deposits.

What was the most important thing in the cultivation world?

Of course, the answer was natural resources. Regardless of whether one was a family or an immortal sect, without a huge amount of resources backing them up, they would soon reach declination.

This was the reason why Feng Fei Yun had to cultivate the Phoenix Heavenly Gaze first. Once successful, he could personally go into the wild to find mineral deposits, then he no longer had to care about the face of the family’s upper echelon.

This was the advantage of the Phoenix Heavenly Gaze!

“Bam Bam!”

In the middle of the river moat, there was suddenly a blinding bright light. The turbulent river suddenly flashed many runeword formations which exposed a freezing pressure and caused the river to become ice crystals.

This was the power of a magical formation. It could directly cause the thousand mile wide river to become frozen!

“Fei Yun, get back to the carriage, we can cross the river now!”

Feng Wan Li yelled from inside the carriage.

“Coming!”

Feng Fei Yun, step by step, entered the bronze carriage and sat down again. The mountain deer had already pulled the ancient carriage on top of the frozen river, and it quickly headed forward.

It sped rapidly to Violet Firmament Ancient City’s gate. Because there was the

word “Feng” engraved on the bronze carriage, the city guards naturally did not dare to question them; they directly let them through.

Once inside the city, the sunlight had already dimmed down. However, because Feng Fei Yun had the Phoenix Heavenly Gaze, the black sky curtain couldn’t affect his vision.

“Second uncle, we are going to the main mansion of the Feng family now?”

Feng Fei Yun asked.

The steps of the mountain deer had clearly slowed down after they entered the city. It comfortably ran on the ancient street that was filled with bypassers, and it crossed each colorful architecture that seemingly was without an end path.

Feng Wan Li bent his knees while sitting down; he smilingly shook his head:

“The main family house is located in the Vermillion Bird Inner City. If we want to go there, we would have to go through eight different city gates and cross three hundred to four hundred miles. Right now, we certainly aren’t going there.”

“Then where are we going right now?”

Feng Sui Yu couldn’t help but to ask.

“The Hidden Dragon Courtyard, it is one of the largest courtyards of the Feng family in Violet Firmament Ancient City. It specialized in housing the younger generation of the family before each Hidden Dragon War. You guys are going to stay there and focus on cultivation; of course, there will be servants to specially watch over you guys.”

Feng Fei Yun’s thought was hidden. He lightly furrowed his brows:

“I heard that the immediate branch’s younger generation of the Feng family exceeds thirty thousand people, not counting the children of the forty-eight side branches. How could one Hidden Dragon Courtyard be enough to accommodate so many people?”

Feng Wan Li smiled lightly, and he said:

“Fei Yun, you can’t use the same perspective that you did in Spirit State city

now for Violet Firmament Ancient City. Your second uncle has been here for a total of forty years, but I had only traveled to some corners of the ancient city; there are plenty of mysterious and unknown thnigs that even I had only heard other people talk about."

"Take the Hidden Dragon Courtyard for example, it occupies more than three thousand Mu. There are countless numbers of pavilions, and even just the servants were around a few ten thousands. However, our courtyard was just another pavilion; in Violet Firmament Ancient City, there are at least one hundred courtyards like this, and this was only a small corner of the city."

The extravagance and wealth of a grand family would cause others to be tongue-tied; their amount of resources was a terrible figure. Even just moving such a monstrous amount would cost so much resources that it would terrify anyone.

No wonder these grand families had always robbed resources from everywhere, and they didn't mind ruthlessly killing other living beings; it seems like it was for the sake of survival as well!

Feng Fei Yun was emotional, but he was also happy. This gigantic Violet Firmament Ancient City, even if that damned old grandma Dong Fang Jing Yue came here, it was not certain that she would be able to find him.

However, another headache-inducing matter appeared.

"Second uncle, little sister Jian Xue wouldn't be staying at the Hidden Dragon Courtyard as well, would she?"

Feng Fei Yun was still worried about Feng Jian Xue.

Feng Wan Li smilingly nodded, and he said:

"You don't have to worry too much about this. Ninth great grandfather had already warned her; before your participation of the Military Strategy Iron Council, if she really did break your legs, then ninth great grandfather will personally cut off her legs."

"What about after the Military Strategy Iron Council?"

Feng Fei Yun wrily smiled.

Feng Wan Li laughed. After this one sentence, he turned his head away. He didn't look at Feng Fei Yun again; it was as if this matter had nothing to do with him.

Feng Sui Yu was sitting to the side didn't say anything from beginning to end, but he had many thoughts inside his head:

'If Feng Fei Yun truly shines at the Iron Council, then the upper echelon will definitely pay attention to him; will there be a place for this Feng Sui Yu to stand? Plus, if he could marry little sister Jian Xue… With her talents so high… if she truly became Feng Fei Yun's wife, then wouldn't he be a tiger with wings?'

"No, i'll never let Feng Fei Yun succeed! When necessary…"

Feng Sui Yu's eyes contained a hidden killing intent, but he suppressed it quickly.The corners of his mouth emerged an enigmatic smile; at this time, it was unknown what he was thinking about.

The Hidden Dragon Courtyard had six main gates.The mountain deer bronze carriage slowly stopped by one of the six main gates. Feng Wan Li, Feng Fei Yun, and Feng Sui Yu came down from the carriage one after another.

A servant came out from the gate and took the ancient carriage away, and he also lead the way to enter the Hidden Dragon Courtyard.

The children of the Feng family's fifth generation had already come back in waves. There was a scene of martial practicing in the courtyard. In the surroundings, there were many bright torches; currently, there was a male teenager that was testing his techniques.

Next to a pond, there were a dozen handsome and talented teenagers; all of them wore white robes and sat in the cultivation pose. Their bodies radiated glimmering light; when they saw Feng Fei Yun's group of three, they only gave them a short glance, and then they retracted their gaze to continue their cultivation.

Along the eroding trail, one did not know how long it took before they got to a red lacquered pavilion. Inside, were five rooms together; they were connected, and they were also isolated from each other. The rooftops were decorated with glazed tiles, the red pillar stood straight, and even the stairs were made from

white jade marbles.

This was only the most ordinary place in the Hidden Dragon Courtyard, but its appearance was already extravagant.

Feng Wan Li pointed to a house to the far right, and he smilingly said:

“That place is the current living place of Xian Jue.”

Feng Fei Yun’s heart jumped. From the direction of the finger, he could see a room with its door closed tightly; it didn’t allow any light to penetrate inside of the room. This caused the atmosphere to be frightening. It was easy to tell that Feng Jian Xue was currently not in the room.

As long as she didn’t suddenly rush out, then it was a good thing. Fei Yun let out a sigh of relief. However, the night had already fallen, where could she go? How come she still hadn’t returned?

“The room adjacent to hers, I specially prepared it for you.”

Feng Wan Li clapped Feng Fei Yun’s shoulder, and he smilingly said:

“Fei Yun, take good advantage of this opportunity; use this two-month period to nurture your relationship with each other.”

Nurture my ass, ah! Nurturing a romantic relationship with such a violent woman; I’m better off embracing a mother pig if I want to sleep safely!

Feng Fei Yun, to this point, clearly remembered each of her fists – the fists that broke the bones in his entire body. At that time, if Feng Wan Li didn’t bring a one thousand year Duan Xu herb for Feng Fei Yun, then maybe it wouldn’t have ended with him simply being stuck on the bed for half a month.

“You don’t need to feel so much pressure inside here like this. Jian Xue’s temperament in these recent years had lessened. Plus, there is also the order from our ninth great grandfather, so she wouldn’t actually cripple you.”

Feng Wan Li actually wasn’t sure in his heart. In the end, no one else understood his foster daughter more than him. She was the type of person who didn’t care to give anyone face; she was extremely gifted, but she was also very proud. The entire younger generation of the Feng family couldn’t get into her eyes. The three or five individuals capable of being looked upon by her were all

heavenly defying outstanding talents.

Even though Feng Fei Yun was a bit bothered by Feng Jian Xue, he wasn't afraid of her. In the end, his current cultivation was at the early Immortal Foundation, and his actual battle power was equal to an intermediate Immortal Foundation expert. His battle prowess was stronger than her; why would he need to be afraid of her?

"Second uncle, then will I stay in the room over there?"

Feng Sui Yu's eyes stared at the remaining room of the three, with a slight smile on his face.

"You… You are only a child from the side branch, and you are not qualified to stay at that place."

Feng Wan Li's face didn't show any emotion; he turned and walked towards a different direction, and he waved his hand:

"Come with me!"

"Not qualified…"

Feng Sui Yu gripped his hands tightly, and he forcibly suppressed his own resentment. Wasn't Feng Jian Xue also from a side branch? He coldly glanced at Feng Fei Yun once, and then he left in anger.

Feng Fei Yun smiled as he watched Feng Sui Yu's back during his departure. His heart felt a little pleasure; Feng Sui Yu, this day has finally happened to you?

He stopped thinking too much, and he strode towards the pavilion. He wanted to settle down first before he planned his next move.

Chapter 33 : Going Upstairs to Look at Fortunes

Darkness had completely covered the night, but there were still bright lights in the Hidden Dragon Courtyard. Many people that held torches were talking, talking about love, or maybe discussing cultivation.

In the distance, there were continuous thundering noises that came from crazy cultivators that were practicing their martial arts.

Feng Fei Yun sat alone at the top of the crimson pavilion with his feet on top of the tiles, feeling the night wind. His gaze covered the entire Hidden Dragon Courtyard in the far distance. The fortune of everyone here couldn't escape his eyes.

He concentrated his energy for this observation!

"Boom!"

To the southeast of the courtyard, there was suddenly a giant shadow of a tiger that encompassed the whole sky; it radiated a violet red light. Its movement was akin to a dragon's flight and a tiger's hunt; it possessed an expression that was towering and extraordinary.

"This was the 'First Tiger Soaring Cloud' qi. Out of all of the children of the Feng family's fifth generation, it is unexpected to see someone with such talent."

Feng Fei Yun revealed a hint of surprise on his face.

The qi image of someone was the main representation of their talents. The stronger the qi image, the higher the talent.

Even though these qi images were domineering and huge in stature, only geniuses versed in qi observation could see them; ordinary people, even with a powerful cultivation, couldn't see anything.

Understanding qi images was akin to understanding the abstractness of a cultivator. If one wanted to see the qi images, they would need to cultivate their gaze first!

Feng Fei Yun practiced the Phoenix Heavenly Gaze. He could not only observe

the qi images of people, but also the qi images of an area, the qi images of all living things, and the images within the vastness of the sky.

The understanding of qi image reading was similar to a wisdom master reading the constellations during the night.

“Rumble!”

Suddenly, at a depth in Violet Firmament city, there was a monstrous qi image that pierced the nine heavens; it was accompanied by the shadow of a tiger and the image of a dragon. It manifested a heavenly and dazzling rainbow; its piercing glare caused others to be unable to open their eyes.

“Hah! With one’s personal qi image, this person was able to lead the spirit image of an entire area. This is… Dragon Tiger Qi, Nine Five Supreme Physique! Inside Violet Firmament Ancient City exists an illustrious talent!”

Feng Fei Yun suddenly stood up; his body focused his gaze over the far distance. This was his first time he was so alarmed; who the hell could be so frightening?

“Dragon Tiger Qi, Nine Five Supreme Physique!”

This was one of the top qi images between the heaven and earth. The person who could carry this type of qi image, their future will be exceptional; like the bright moon in the sky, no one could ever resist them.

“First Tiger Soaring Cloud” and “Nine Five Supreme Physique” had a difference of several ranks.

“Roar!”

The Dragon Tiger Qi hovered in the sky for half the time it took to drink a cup of tea, then it slowly disappeared in a corner of the ancient city.

Feng Fei Yun originally wanted to see the talented fifth generation of the Feng family for a little bit, but he couldn’t believe that inside this ancient city, there was a character who possessed the “Nine Five Supreme Physique”. The existence of this genius caused all the other talented people in the world to be suppressed, and they would lose all of their seven colors.

A chaotic burst of footsteps, along with clamorous commotions, sounded

below!

Someone was coming!

Feng Fei Yun quickly recalled his Phoenix Heavenly Gaze. He looked down below to see two white-robed boys that carried a different boy, and they rushed inside this pavilion.

“Fuck, these sons of bitches, they even broken the dantian of Hao zi. This was equivalent to destroying his entire cultivation; such a vicious action!”

“Hao Zi’s cultivation was the highest within the three of us. He reached the peak Spirit Realm stage, but he was beaten by just one blow. The experts of the third branch are indeed as common as the clouds; we are only from the twelfth branch, and I’m afraid only Little Sister Jian Xue could fight them head on.”

“Little Sister Jian Xue has reached the early Immortal Foundation rank, plus she is also well-versed in the
‘Double Gaze Fragment Moon Sword’. The third branch people that could fight against her only number three or five.”

“Unfortunately, little sister Jian Xue isn’t present right now; otherwise, with her character, she would help us take revenge already.”

*** ***

The entire body of the young man called Hao zi was covered in blood; he was unconscious, and his face was as pale as a sheet.

These three people were the children of the twelfth branch of the Feng family, and they were the foster sons of Fei Yun’s oldest uncle. Their names were Feng Hao, Feng Ming, and Feng Lin. Because they were closely related to the each other, as well as Feng Jian Xue, Feng Fei Yun had to stay at the same place in order to look after each other.

There were fights within the children of a family. Sometimes, the fights between the branches were particularly ferocious. This was a competition – a cutthroat competition.

“What had happened in the end? How is Hao Zi?”

The sound of a young girl came from outside.

Her voice was accompanied by a cold breath, akin to a cold wind that blew by, that caused the floor to have a layer of white mist in the summer.

After hearing this voice, Feng Ming and Feng Lin were ecstatic. They quickly brought over Feng Hao, who was gravely wounded, to the bed, and then they left; both of them simultaneously loudly said:

“Little sister Jian Xue! Since you are back, you must take revenge for Hao zi, ah!”

Feng Jian Xue’s gentle footsteps slowly entered the room.

It had been a long time since Fei Yun had last met this violent young miss. She had a slender and elegant look with a ponytail that was tied by a violet ribbon. She was wearing a martial arts robe that was tight to her body that accentuated her curvaceous figure; it made her seemingly very vivid and full of life.

Her skin was extremely white; it was too unreasonably white, without a trace of pink blood. It was as if she had been sick for many years.

However, her true feature that attracted Feng Fei Yun was her beautiful eyes. Inside were two silky black and round pupils; her gaze was as sharp as a sword, and it was like she could compete head-on with the Heaven Restoration Evil Eyes.

It was clear from the appearance of her eyes that she was practicing the “Double Gaze Fragment Moon Sword”.

My god! This spirit technique was very difficult to cultivate, but she had been successful; no wonder second uncle thought so highly of her.

“That person was the heaven’s proud son of the third branch, Feng Yu.”

“Feng Yu!”

Feng Jian Xue’s pair of beautiful eyes contracted tightly; she had heard of this name before. Feng Yu was a person that could cause the rains to fall and the winds to blow within the third branch of the Feng family. He had drank spirit spring water before. He also had a wonderful physique, and his flesh was as powerful as a brute beast.

Feng Yu was extremely arrogant. Outside in the courtyard, he constructed a martial arts ring, and he declared:

“Whoever can take three blows from my hand would be eligible to participate in the Hidden Dragon War.”

These words caused a big wave once they got out. The challengers continuously participated, but, from then till now, half a month had passed; no one has been able to accept two blows from him. Most of the challengers were all defeated with just one blow.

This matter had already alerted the Feng family’s seniors, but these older generation experts didn’t interfere. Obviously, they had discretely endorsed Feng Yu’s actions.

Using a martial arts ring to stimulate the potential of the children in the family, this was not a bad thing!

Some of the upper echelons even wanted to change the rules of the Hidden Dragon War – this time around – to be more similar to Feng Yu’s words. Whoever could block three of his moves would have the qualifications to participate. If not, then they would just be an ordinary person, and they would not be eligible for the war.

If one wanted fame from just one battle, then they need to actually have true abilities!

Feng Jian Xue asked:

“Feng Hao also went to challenge him?”

Feng Ming and Feng Lin lowered their heads without saying any words; naturally, they had tacitly confirmed.

“Feng Hao was able to block how many of his moves?”

Feng Jian Xue continued to ask.

“He lost in just one move! Feng Yu was truly a mad man. One blow from him turned a wall into dust. Feng Hao essentially didn’t have the ability to fight back, and he immediately fell down into a pool of blood.”

The two angrily exclaimed.

Feng Jian Xue’s eyes became more dignified. She was aware of Feng Hao’s strength; even if she used all of her power, it would still take her three moves to

defeat him. However, Feng Yu only needed one to destroy his dantian. After some contemplations, this power was truly terrifying.

“Feng Yu is indeed so strong!”

The slender fingers of Jian Xue intertwined; in her heart, a feeling of wanting to battle arose. A strand of spirit energy, like a howling large wave, rushed out, that caused the leaves on the evergreen tree outside of the pavilion to fall down and gently cover the ground.

“Who, who is on the roof?”

Feng Jian Xue’s eyes motioned as if they were the stars; her pupils immediately became extremely sharp. A black light, with a shape just like a small sword, flew out of her eyes; the size was of a hand.

“Whoosh!”

The black sword light cut through the night with its movement!

“Ah!”

A miserable scream filled the air; a shadow fell down from the rooftop. This person felt awkward with his hands and feet, he couldn’t get back up after he fell to the ground.

Feng Jian Xue quickly rushed forward and saw that this person was wearing the white robe of the Feng family, but he was still lying motionless on the ground. Her heart was shaking:

“Not good! He turned out to be our own! Is he already dead?”

Feng Jian Xue was afraid, because even though the elders of the Feng family allowed for competition between the younger generations, but the absolute condition was that there had to be no harm to one’s life.

Feng Jian Xue had butterflies in her heart. She carried a sword in her hand and gently poked the sleeves of the Feng family’s child, who was lying on the floor; however, the person remained motionless; not even the sound of breathing could be heard from him.

“Little sister Jian Xue, you just killed someone!”

Feng Lin was frightened to the point where he had to take two steps back; he nearly fell on the floor.

“Your Double Gaze Fragment Moon Sword’s power is too powerful! Little sister Jian Xue, how could you use it so carelessly?!”

Feng Ming was also frightened, his hands couldn’t stop shaking.

At this moment, Feng Jian Xue felt like it was too late for regrets. If she truly accidentally killed another person in the family, then the punishment would be her own life!

“Before anyone can discover him, go bury him!”

Feng Jian Xue quickly regained her wits, and she decided to bury the corpse.

However, at this moment, the Feng family child – who was lying on the ground – suddenly moved a little bit, and he spoke with a weak voice:

“Save… Help me! I’m going… going to die…!”

Why was this voice so familiar? Feng Jian Xue stared at the Feng family’s child that was lying on the ground. The more she looked, the more familiar he seemed.

Suddenly, her beautiful eyes shivered and thought of a particular man. She shouted in her mind:

‘Is that damned Feng Fei Yun? Could it be that he had arrived at the Hidden Dragon Courtyard?’

The Feng kid was still lying on the ground; he appeared to be half dead.

Chapter 34 : Why Am I Still Not Dead?

“Help… Ah!!! I… I’m going to… die!”

The Feng kid’s entire body trembled with a painful expression. It took him great effort to reach out with his one hand; it was as if he wanted to grab onto something, but there was nothing to grab.

Feng Lin and Feng Ming hurriedly rush forward, and they picked him up with their hands.

“Little Sister Jian Xue, he is not dead!”

The two were ecstatic!

Feng Jian Xue carefully observed the Feng kid who was lifted. After seeing his familiar face, her expression changed. She gritted her teeth, and she angrily yelled:

“It really is this damned Feng Fei Yun. Your luck is really big, it would have been fortunate if you had actually died! Once you’re dead, everything would be resolved!”

Feng Fei Yun’s face was deathly pale, and he was feebly breathing; he couldn’t stop coughing. If Feng Lin and Feng Ming weren’t propping him up, he definitely wouldn’t have the strength to stand at all.

“I’m… going to die. I can feel… my life slowly drift away… In front of me is a black-as-ink curtain, it as if… As if a ferocious malevolent ghost is coming to capture my soul…”

Fei Yun’s eyes were blurry as he motioned his hands forward. He was desperately trying to grab a hold of this “something” like a man that was awaiting for his own death. The lost memories throughout the long months and years, he wanted to grab onto them before the final moments of regret.

“You didn’t see a malevolent ghost, it was me!”

Feng Jian Xue angrily glared at him; however, when she saw his mouth coughing up blood, her heart felt a glimmer of remorse. She couldn’t help but to

remember when they were playing together during their childhood; that was truly a happy time, filled with innocence.

‘However, at this moment, I accidentally wounded him. If he really died, then wouldn’t my conscience suffer a lifetime of condemnation?’

‘He has not been the innocent Fei Yun like before; he is just a bully to both men and women, a lustful evil young master. Even death wouldn’t be enough to redeem his crimes.’

Feng Jian Xue’s heart towards Fei Yun contained an extreme hatred. After she personally saw Fei Yun ** with a maid, she had lost all hope for him. She swore that if she saw him again, she would break all of his bones to prevent him from getting up from his bed for the rest of his life.

However, at this very moment, Feng Fei Yun was standing in front of her, dying from a serious injury. She originally clenched her fists, but she couldn’t finish her strike.

“So… it is Little Sister Jian Xue. I didn’t think that before I died… I could see little sister again. This must be because the Old Heaven have pitied me, ah!”

Feng Fei Yun somehow managed to gather his strength from an unknown source, he rushed free from the hands of the Feng brothers, and then he emotionally headed towards Feng Jian Xue’s direction. However, because he was too wounded, he only made two steps before his legs became weak and fell to the ground.

“Boo hoo…”

He was lying on the ground, weeping until it tore his heart and mind. Then he sobbingly whimpered:

“Jian Xue… Little Sister Jian Xue, I know… I know I had it coming. I… my sins covered the sky, little sister… sister wanted to kill me a long time ago, to be able… to die in your hand, I have no regrets. But… there is something… I must tell little sister… otherwise… otherwise I would… die with my eyes opened…”

Feng Jian Xue astonishingly stared at Feng Fei Yun lying on the ground; her beautiful pair of eyes were flashing translucent sparkles. Her steps slightly moved forward, but in the end, she didn’t come to help him up.

She bit the tip of her lips tightly; she made an effort to turn around, so that she wouldn't have to see him anymore.

"I… really… really miss little sister! Jian… Xue, I have thought about it a lot… about those days in the past when we used to play together, when you were my new bride, and I was your new groom… The witness was the wild dog sitting at the other street…"

Feng Fei Yun's tears dripped down his entire face; his voice became weaker and weaker… Until finally, there was no more sound coming from him.

The eyes of Feng Jian Xue had long been teary. At this moment, she couldn't contain her emotions, so the tears dripped down and became lines from the corners of her eyes.

"Feng Fei Yun, you cannot die; I will not allow you to die!"

Feng Jian Xue's heart was in extreme pain; it was as if her heart was pierced by thousands of needles. She hurriedly rushed over to Feng Fei Yun, and she lifted him from the ground, allowing his head to rest on her chest.

Feng Fei Yun was motionless, and his body became increasingly cold like ice!

"This is all my fault; even if you were standing in front of me, I still wouldn't be able to kill you. Why did you have to say those words to torment me?"

Feng Jian Xue tightly hugged Fei Yun's corpse, her teardrops dampened the hair on his head.

"Little Sister Jian Xue, a dead man cannot live again. Little sister should restrain your grief!"

"Thats right! If Little Cousin Fei Yun is truly dead, then maybe it is a good thing. Little Cousin Fei Yun didn't cultivate, and his body was weak. At that moment, we just need to say that he was not careful and accidentally fell down from the rooftop – that he died on his own. Then Little Sister Jian Xue doesn't need to bear any responsibilities…"

Feng Lin said.

Feng Jian Xue lifted her head, and gave him a stern glare, causing him to suddenly stop what he was about to say next.

“Murder is paid for with one’s own life – this is the heaven’s law and earth’s principle. I will definitely bring Fei Yun’s body back to Spirit State city and accept all of the responsibility. If uncle wants me to repay him with my life, then I will commit suicide in front of Fei Yun’s grave.”

Sorrow and pain were written on Jian Xue’s face; in her heart there was a sudden feeling of emptiness.

“Cough cough! I, why am I… still not dead?”

At the moment, when everyone thought Fei Yun was really dead, he suddenly coughed up blood. Color returned to his face; it was as if he was returning to life.

Even Feng Jian Xue was scared out of her mind. She quickly released Fei Yun and then took two steps back.

“Boom!”

Feng Fei Yun, once again, fell to the floor with his head directly hitting a block of limestone.

This bump was not bad because it unexpectedly cleared up the jumbled thoughts in his mind a little bit. He rubbed his forehead a few times, and he, with a struggle, crawled up from the ground. With a shocked expression, he stared at the three people in front of him, and then his gaze finally ended up on Feng Jian Xue.

“Little Sister Jian Xue, why are you here?!”

Feng Fei Yun’s eyes jolted with horror on his face. Feng Fei Yun, without any thoughts, hurriedly turned around and ran like he just saw a monster.

At this moment, Feng Fei Yun was lively like a dragon and animated like a tiger – nothing like a dying man.

The others were even more scared by Feng Fei Yun. A person who had died suddenly came back to life, and then he acted like nothing had happened afterwards – what the hell was this situation?

Feng Ming was thinking about something, then his two eyes suddenly flashed, and he said:

“I heard that at the top of every person’s head, there was an acupuncture

point of life. There were some people who were already dead but wanted to prolong their lives, so they chose to stimulate this point. If they truly knew the required strength and the exact location, then that person could live for a few more years. Could it be… that earlier, Fei Yun accidentally fell on that rock and hit this point?”

“I also had heard from father about this. This acupuncture point, along with the opposite “Death Point” on the body is called the “Life Point”. The positions of everyone’s Life Points are different, plus, the amount of force required to stimulate these Life Points are different as well. The exertion of strength, even with a tiny margin of error, could cause that person to immediately lose their life.”

Feng Lin sighed.

“If this is the case, then the luck of that Little Boy Fei Yun is really good. He just casually fell onto a rock, and it was the exact spot of his Life Point. Moreover, the force exerted was just right.”

Feng Jian Xue watched Feng Fei Yun run away, and the guilt in her heart remained undiminished. In the end, even with the stimulation of his Life Point, he only had a few more years to live – he was still so young.

“Come back here for me.”

The graceful posture of Feng Jian Xue leapt forward, her feet gently rode the wind, and she very quickly caught up to Feng Fei Yun. She grabbed his arm, and she forced him back, throwing him down to the ground.

“Why did you have to run?”

Feng Jian Xue’s heart was hateful and angry at the same time.

“Second Uncle said Little Sister wanted to break my legs.”

Feng Fei Yun was sitting on the ground, and he didn’t dare to move. His hands were holding his knees, he seemed very innocent; it was as if someone had wronged him.

Of course, this was all an act. Just because he didn’t want to directly fight Jian Xue with force, in the end, it was better to be gentle towards women. Being

forceful would only have a negative effect.

Feng Jian Xue's age was not too old – she was only fourteen. Her appearance was still very child-like, but her angry look, compared to a twenty year old woman, was even more cold; she gravely said:

"Feng Fei Yun, stand up for me."

"I won't stand up. If I stand up, you will break my legs."

Feng Fei Yun said.

"I won't break your legs, so stand up for me."

Feng Jian Xue said again.

Feng Fei Yun was waiting for these exact words. His face revealed a happy smile, and he said:

"Are these words true?"

"I don't have time to break your legs right now because I still want to break someone else's legs."

Feng Jian Xue coldly glanced at him once. Her will to fight once again surged, and she stared towards the far direction.

"Who it it?"

Feng Fei Yun naturally knew who she was talking about, but he still asked anyway.

From the inside came the miserable screams of Hao zi. He had woken up, and these screams were definitely not fake.

A cultivator with a broken dantian was no different from a crippled person. No matter who it was, they would still miserably scream like this!

"Who else could it be but that damned Feng Yu! Little Sister Jian Xue, how about we go now to settle the score with him?"

The hatred of Feng Lin and Feng Ming were towering to the sky. Earlier, they had wanted to find Feng Yu for revenge, but because of the matter with Feng Fei Yun, it was delayed. Right now, the night was dark so maybe the martial arts ring was empty and thus, shut down.

Feng Jian Xue saw that Feng Fei Yun was still sitting on the ground; she couldn't help but sigh. This person's courage was truly too small. If he was this afraid of me, how could he accomplish anything great in the future?

"Feng Fei Yun, tomorrow you will go with me to the martial ring."

The sleeves of the robes worn by Feng Jian Xue slightly shook, and she turned and went inside the pavilion without taking another look at him.

Feng Fei Yun turned around; with a playful smile on his face:

"This is her wanting to test my courage; women are cold on the outside but warm on the inside! A martial ring, just the right time to go watch the geniuses of the fifth generation of the Feng family! Heh Heh!"

Feng Fei Yun was tired of the feigning death act, but, in the end, he had successfully passed the gate of Feng Jian Xue. He shook off the dust on his body, and he planned to get a good night's sleep.

Chapter 35 : Martial Ring

“Feng Yu is truly that strong?”

Early in the morning, in the Hidden Dragon Courtyard, there was a curtain of white foggy mist that was left, carrying a sense of coolness in the air.

Feng Fei Yun was adorned with an unblemished white silk robe, with his hair tied high above by a white headband cloth; he resembled a refined and gentle gifted scholar.

This was also the first time Feng Jian Xue had seen the handsome outer appearance of Fei Yun. She didn’t think that this bastard still had this kind of temperament; he could absolutely be considered a bright young master.

Feng Jian Xue restrained her thoughts and her gaze from him, and she then said, while maintaining a cold countenance:

“Feng Yu is the genius of the third branch of the Feng family. He is sixteen years old. He is young, but his cultivation is frighteningly high. There was an uncle from an older generation who fought with him, but he was defeated by just one blow; the strength of this person is like a brute beast.”

“A genius’s talent, no matter how strong, without good fortune, he still wouldn’t be able to become a master. However, this Feng Yu is someone with great fortune. During his childhood, in the Jing Huan ancient mountain, he found a secret ground. He obtained a drop of spirit spring water, and, after drinking it, his body was refined. His body became much stronger; even sabers and swords were not able to pierce through his skin.”

Feng Fei Yun originally looked down on the geniuses of the fifth generations, but after hearing the words of Feng Jian Xue, he became more serious. Spirit spring water and spirit medicine were godly materials of the same rank. One drop of spirit spring water could completely change the physique of a person to the point where it could not longer be underestimated. Feng Yu was definitely not an ordinary person.

Feng Hao was sent away by a servant last night. As someone who had his

dantian destroyed, he could no longer be called a Hidden Dragon. Thus, he was no longer qualified to stay at the Hidden Dragon Courtyard.

This was the sorrow of a practitioner; once the foundation was destroyed, so was the entire body.

Anger was written on the face of Feng Ming; he tightly gripped his fists, and he said:

“Little Sister Jian Xue, Sister is the one with the strongest cultivation out of all of us; you must make Feng Yu pay with interest.”

*** ***

The Hidden Dragon War was only two months away, and the fifth generation geniuses of the Feng family had gathered from the four spheres and eight directions. At this moment, the martial ring was fully surrounded with people.

The eighteen scarlet bronze pillars, that were as thick as a water bucket, were rooted in the eighteen positions surrounding the martial ring. On top of them was a raging inferno. On each of the pillars had engravings meant to aggregate the world’s spirit energy in order to support the imperishable flame in the middle of the pillars.

The eighteen bronze pillars almost towered at one hundred zhang, and exceeded one hundred thousand jin in weight. On the body were engravings of ferocious beasts, and it illuminated a faint red light, creating a bright layer that encompassed the ring.

Inside the martial ring, a shadow fist flew out and struck the bright layer, but it only created ripples without destroying the bright layer.

“Boom!”

A young man with a tall and sturdy body and wearing steel black boots came down from the sky. His feet stomped on the ground, causing the entire martial ring to shake.

A violent energy, that emanated from below his feet, overflowed and spread to the four directions.

“Phoosh!”

It was merely the strength of this cold violent energy that caused a child of the Feng family to be shaken to the point of vomiting blood. His body was like a broken kite, and he flew to the outside.

“Just one move, again. Could it be that even today, there will be no one capable of blocking two moves from me?”

The rough voice of Feng Yu rang in the air. He withdrew his two steel boots, and he contemptuously glared at the Feng family’s children that were standing outside of the martial ring.

“Feng Yu is indeed a genius character of the third branch; even Feng Xu of the fifth branch was defeated by just one blow.”

“That wasn’t one blow; it felt more like half a blow.”

“Feng Yu is only sixteen, but he has already reached the early Immortal Foundation rank and practices the Qilin Strength technique, even the senior uncles that can fight against him can be counted on one’s fingers.”

“I heard that the clan master had already secretly said that the elites that could take three moves from Feng Yu would be able to be considered a Hidden Dragon.”

“Feng Yu’s cultivation is indeed very strange; let alone three moves, the number of fifth generation disciples of the Feng family that could take one move of his is already rare.”

***

Everyone was clamoring and clicking their tongues; it was evident to all that the powerful strength of Feng Yu frightened them.

Of course, there were also some courageous talents who coldly laughed and said:

“Feng Yu is indeed strong, but he is not the strongest person in the fifth generation of the Feng family.”

Talking was a boy that held a steel sword, with a slender body and yellow skin. The sword in his hand was like his body, the sword’s blade was filled with rust, and the edge of the sword did not lack gaps and cracks.

This was not a sword, but more like a broken piece of steel.

Right now, Feng Fei Yun had managed to squeeze into the crowd, standing next to this fellow. He observed him meticulously, and he couldn't help but smile:

"The Feng family is one of the leading families of the Grand Southern Prefecture. The fifth generation of the Feng family is considered the golden generation, so naturally, geniuses would appear one after another. Feng Yu is not the strongest, but I really want to know, who is the strongest person in the Feng family?"

Feng Fei Yun said this without suppressing his own voice at all!

The martial ring was originally very loud, but after his sentence, it became extremely quiet. Everyone was staring at him; they looked like they were about to rejoice in another's misfortune.

Feng Yu, standing on top of the martial ring, also fixed his gaze onto Feng Fei Yun, and he coldly scowled:

"I also want to know who is the strongest in the fifth generation of the Feng family. This was why I had erected this martial ring right here, but after half a month had passed, there was still no one capable of blocking three of my moves."

Feng Fei Yun didn't expect for this person to answer so quickly, so he removed his gaze from the impoverished-looking young man. He switched it to the person standing on top of the martial ring, and he shouted with disdain:

"Since you put it that way, are you trying to say that you are the strongest person in the fifth generation?"

"Hah Hah! I didn't say that, but until now, the truth is that no one has defeated me!"

Feng Yu crossed his arms in front of his chest, revealing his white teeth that was accompanied with a cold smile.

Feng Fei Yun's gaze diverged a little bit, and he clearly saw the hands of the impoverished youth slightly shake; in his eyes was a hidden strand of killing

intent.

This killing intent was very delicate; there were many experts here, but only Feng Fei Yun was aware.

Feng Fei Yun angrily yelled:

“Holy shit! This young master hates people like you the most! Acting like you are the father of the number one under the heavens, this is simply too hard to watch. Do you want to watch me throw my two shoes at your face?!”

Finished speaking, Feng Fei Yun actually took off the shoes on his feet, and threw it towards the martial ring.

Although Feng Fei Yun seemed very rude, but he was releasing his anger and releasing what the crowd was holding back in their hearts.

Feng Yu was truly too tyrannical, and his moves were too fierce. Many children’s dantians from the Feng family were broken by him, becoming crippled.

Feng Fei Yun’s shoes naturally did not hit the body of Feng Yu, but it was just as effective. This caused the children of the Feng family from outside the ring to burst out in laughter; no one knew whether they were laughing at Feng Fei Yun or Feng Yu.

Feng Yu’s countenance could no longer remain calm; both of his fists were clenched, and he coldly spoke:

“Little boy, if you are courageous, then come on top to the martial ring and fight me. I only need one fist to break all the bones in your body.”

“What is there to be afraid of? This young master will come to you.”

Feng Fei Yun was high spirited and excited as he headed toward the martial ring.

Everyone were holding their breaths, they were extremely nervous. In the end, this kid with an unknown origin and having the courage to provoke Feng Yu, his skill must be extraordinary.

An epic battle seems to be in full swing!

“Ouch!”

However, when Feng Fei Yun had only made it half way, he tripped on a tile stone and fell to the floor. He rolled for a long time, and was unable to get up from the ground.

Feng Jian Xue, who was standing not far behind him, didn't know what to say; her fingers gently rubbed her temples, and she almost fainted from anger.

"This idiot is without cultivation, yet he still wanted to be like other people and go up on the martial ring; this is too embarrassing!"

Feng Jian Xue motioned her body, like a white shadow crossing through the crowd. In the blink of an eye, she was in front of Feng Fei Yun, helping him up.

With the help of Feng Jian Xue, Feng Fei Yun finally managed to stand up. With a serious face, while fixing his clothing, and along with an absolute gaze, he said:

"Little Sister Jian Xue, Little Sister knows that I am truly a persistent man with true perseverance; earlier was just a little mistake, and this battle cannot be avoided."

Finished speaking, he started walking towards the ring again.

Feng Jian Xue was truly teased by him, almost to the point of vomiting blood.

"Idiot, head back!"

A battle sword that came out from an unknown place flew to her hand, and this sword struck Feng Fei Yun away. She used this momentum to jump on top of the bronze pillar, and she stood on the martial ring.

"Whoosh!"

With a sword in her hand, she proudly stood in front of Feng Yu around ten steps away. However, her sword was suppressing the aura emanating from Feng Yu's body.

Her eyes were even more beautiful, and her pupils unleashed lights that contained sword shadows that were moving within.

"Who are you?"

Feng Yu felt the pressure, and he became cautious.

Feng Jian Xue didn't say anything, but from outside the ring came the voice of

Feng Fei Yun's shouting:

"She is my wife!"

Feng Fei Yun earlier was struck away by Feng Jian Xue's sword, and he fell straight to the ground. At this moment, he just got up and his forehead was still covered with mud.

"Heh Heh, my wife!"

Feng Fei Yun turned towards the Feng family's children in the close vicinity and giggled, acting very familiar.

Feng Jian Xue's expression once again froze, not knowing what to say. Even her sword intent was about to dissipate; if she wasn't already standing on top of the martial ring, then she would have cut off the tongue of this Feng Fei Yun first.

This shameful joke, making one loses all face; when will it end?

Chapter 36 : Qilin Strength

There were early rumors saying that within the fifth generation of the Feng family, there existed a few talented young woman with supreme beauty; could it be that she was one of them?

A person with sharp eyes immediately recognized Feng Jian Xue.

“It is her, the cold beauty of the twelfth branch, Feng Jian Xue! Even though she is from a side branch, she has the qualification to stay at the Hidden Dragon Courtyard; she is the most important nurtured seed of the twelfth branch.”

“I heard that she successfully cultivated the Double Gaze Fragment Moon Sword, and her innate talents are so high that it causes others to be tongue-tied.”

“It seems like Feng Yu has met his match this time; this battle I’m afraid will be quite splendid!”

*** ***

Feng Jian Xue, within the fifth generation, had a great reputation. Many people recognized her presence from just seeing the double pupils in her beautiful eyes.

Feng Jian Xue was at the age of early maidenhood; her cute swaying yet valiant stature that was standing on top of the martial ring with the bronze pillar behind her created a matchless dream-like atmosphere, like an orchid tree blooming on top of the highest peak.

Her facial features were meticulously crafted, without the slightest defects. There was always a cold expression to accompany the slender palm-sized face.

So young, yet she was already a cold beauty.

“This temperament really makes people yearn for her. She is like a fairy who shows disdain for the common people.”

“This beauty is worthy of being called the number one fairy of the Feng family’s fifth generation.”

The children of the Feng family obsessively stared at Feng Jian Xue standing on top of the martial ring. Many had drool dripping down to the ground, and their eyes became crazy; it was as if they were looking at the goddess of their hearts.

“Heh heh! This is my wife!”

Feng Fei Yun was also observing Jian Xue carefully. He felt that at this moment, he was indeed very interested in her, ah. The serious and cold-as-ice aura was a fatal attraction to any man.

It wasn’t just any temptation, it was the strongest temptation!

“Yeah, right!”

Of course, no one trusted the words of Feng Fei Yun. This person was a fool who couldn’t even walk straight. To have the courage to call Feng Jian Xue his wife; this was so shameless.

Some people had their sleeves pulled up; if Feng Fei Yun dared to call Feng Jian Xue his wife again, then they would give him two really hard slaps.

Feng Fei Yun naturally stopped talking because the battle had started on top of the martial ring!

Feng Yu was also slightly taken back by Feng Jian Xue’s beauty. After a brief absence of his mind, he concentrated again; he motioned his steel boots with a fortified stance, and he gravely said:

“Don’t think that just because you are beautiful that I won’t hit you!”

A wave of pressure came from the bottom of his feet, and it then spread around to the surrounding space.

The sword in Feng Jian Xue’s hand slightly motioned once, causing the pressure from Feng Yu to be cut in half; her lively eyes became cold, and she said:

“Today, I want to take revenge for Feng Hao; you destroyed his dantian, so I will cut off one of your hands.”

“With just you? Hah Hah! Just a girl from a side branch of the Feng family? Your beauty isn’t bad, why not become my wife? As long as you follow me to the bridal chamber, let alone cutting off my hand, I would even be willing to let you

to cut off my head.”

The children of the Feng family suddenly bursted out laughing!

Feng Yu had seen many beauties, but there was never a girl as pretty as Feng Jian Xue; he couldn’t help but to tease her.

Feng Fei Yun, who was standing outside of the ring, rubbed his palms and he loudly yelled:

“You dare to tease my wife? Honey, quickly beat him up for me!”

Feng Fei Yun’s words were drowned by the crowd’s laughter, so no one heard him besides the impoverished young man who was standing next to him.

He placed his rusty sword inside his sleeve, and he gently glanced at Feng Fei Yun. He then said without any emotion:

“She is no match for Feng Yu.”

Feng Fei Yun seemed to have been waiting for him to open his mouth, he playfully smiled, and he said:

“How do you know?”

The impoverished young man didn’t seem interested in talking; he was silent for a long time, and then he slowly said:

“She can at most return ten moves from Feng Yu. After ten moves, she will surely lose.”

He was thinly pale with yellow skin, but his eyes were like a wild wolf’s. His eyes were much sharper than the Double Gaze Fragment Moon Sword of Feng Jian Xue.

Feng Fei Yun replied:

“To be able to block ten moves from Feng Yu is already quite amazing. It would be hard to find twenty experts like this within the fifth generation.”

“Hmph!”

This impoverished youth changed his expression for the first time. His face became as cold as ice, he disdainfully stared at Feng Fei Yun, and then he said:

“Are you not afraid of your wife being beaten to death by him? Or maybe she essentially isn’t your wife?”

His eyes were very accurate, it was to the point of seeing through people’s hearts.

“Heh Heh! I’m not worried about whether she will be beaten to death or not by the other, and I even less worry about whether she is my wife or not!”

Feng Fei Yun bloomed a smile, glared at him, and he said:

“Truth be told, I’m even more interested in you than I am in my wife!”

These words of Feng Fei Yun were also the truth. The moment he came to this martial ring, he had noticed this impoverished youth. He felt that this youth was much more terrible than Feng Yu, but this guy was good at hiding, not just his cultivation, but there was also something else!

This was the feeling of the Phoenix spirit sense, it was extremely magical.

The impoverished young man no longer said anything. His eyes turned cloudy again, and he intensely stared at Feng Yu standing on top of the ring.

Feng Fei Yun continued to ask:

“This meeting was predestined, what is your name? Do you want to become friends?”

The youth continued to remain silent.

“Truth be told, I know a lot of famous people. If you become friends with me, then surely you will earn great benefits.”

Feng Fei Yun said.

The impoverished young man gave him a stern look, and he had to open his mouth in the end:

“I know double the amount of famous people you have met, but as of this moment, they are all dead.”

Feng Fei Yun was a little startled.

All dead? What is the meaning of this?

What is this person’s background?

Not leaving time for Feng Fei Yun to ponder, the howling screams along with the sword sounds came from the martial ring. The sharp sounds were deafening; it was as if steel was being torn apart.

Feng Jian Xue, in the end, couldn’t handle the teasing of Feng Yu, and she made the first move!

The battle sword on her hand was around three feet long, and it was radiating flames; it was like a flame serpent that wanted to pierce through all places, and it suddenly appeared in front of Feng Yu’s chest.

“Boom!”

Feng Yu suddenly lifted his foot; a strand of spirit energy rotated on top of the steel shoes causing a ripple to fly out and strike the battle sword in Jian Xue’s hand, causing it to shiver like it was about to be fragmented.

His strength is so great!

Feng Jian Xue had already mentally prepared for the ferocious strength of Feng Yu. She knew that she couldn’t fight recklessly, but, after a single confrontation, her arm was in pain; she found it hard to gather strength again.

Feng Fei Yun’s eyes narrowed. With just brute strength alone, Feng Fei Yun felt that it wasn’t definite that he could suppress the ferocious might of Feng Yu, even if he exerted all of his power.

The medicinal property of a single drop of spirit spring water was too great. If he could get a single drop, then his strength would definitely become much greater by leaps and bounds!

“Heh Heh! Watch, I will catch you within three moves!”

Feng Yu calculated, gave off a smile, and he then jumped into the sky and dropped down a giant evil palm.

The steel shoes on his feet was a treasure weapon weighing several hundred pounds; combined with the palm, a spirit energy that emanated from the steel shoes came down and showered the world.

Feng Jian Xue of course was not an easy opponent. She flew right outside, her

speed was as fast as a ghost's shadow, and she circulated the martial ring. Her eyes condensated dark spirit energy, and a jet black light from her pupils came flying out.

The light became a sword shadow that continuously attacked the unprepared Feng Yu.

"Rumble!"

The power of the Double Gaze Fragment Moon Sword was extremely frightening, creating a hole in the steel boots of Feng Yu; even his footsole was almost pierced.

"Qilin Strength!"

The fight between the two became more dangerous. Anyone with just a little opening would encounter a life threatening danger. At this moment, Feng Yu no longer hid his strength; he took out his ultimate technique, Qilin Strength.

"Qilin Strength is one of the five power techniques of the inner Feng family, above the Vigorous Gale Method by one rank; I can't believe that Feng Yu, at such a young age, was able to reach the stage where his Qilin Strength was taking form."

A young child loudly exclaimed.

On the palm of Feng Yu, there was an explosive emission of a cyan spirit ball; the color became thicker and thicker. Strands of meticulous electrical spirit energy traveled back and forth in the spirit ball; it was as if it was a big chicken egg.

"Roar!"

A wild beast's roar came from inside the godly egg to the outside; this echoing sound aimed straight upward towards the nine heavens.

Like a bull's roar and an angry Qilin's screaming!

"Rumble!"

The Qilin Strength had not completed its physical form, but there were tornadoes in the four directions surrounding the martial ring. It became a sandstorm with tremendous pressure, oppressing the soft body of Feng Jian Xue;

this caused her to take a few steps back, she was unable to stand straight.
(TN1: Qilin is a mythical beast from China. A mix between dragon/bull/deer)

Chapter 37 : I am a Wisdom Master!

"Ngao!"

A young beast image was born from the palm of Feng Yu, and it was shaped like a Qilin!

Even though it was only an image formed from spirit energy, the power within it still possessed a grand and powerful atmosphere. The intertwining lightnings created many intimidating crackling sounds.

"Rumble!"

The entire martial ring rumbled. The eighteen bronze pillars were affected even more so; it was as if the pillar of the sky was shaking itself.

Feng Yu was able to exert the power of a Bull. One Bull's power was a critical point; once one was able to exert the power of one Bull, then he could be considered a mighty figure. Even if he joined the godly military barracks, he could still be a Ten Thousand Man Chief.

Some were shocked by the scene. Even though they knew Feng Yu's power was very strong, they didn't know that his level was this formidable.

What was considered one Bull's power was the erupting power of one Qilin, and this was a pure form of power.

Qilins were considered the beasts of war; an adult Qilin was seven meters long and twelve to thirteen meters high. It's natural habitat was the ancient desolate frontier. They were very low in number, and their power was known as the strongest spirit beast.

One bump of its head was enough to create ten thousand jin of power!

Whenever there was a war of a grand scale, there would not be a lack of Qilins leading the way. If there were nine Qilins as the vanguard, there were essentially no armies that could withstand the impact.

A person that could defeat a Qilin could be said to, in other words, be able to exert one Bull's power; this was enough for a person to be seen as a master.

At this moment, Feng Yu attacked with a Qilin shadow – with the power of ten thousand jin.

Feng Jian Xue greatly changed her expression. Feng Yu was too strong, and he greatly exceeded her estimations. With regards to pure strength, he was not just two times greater than her. At the very least, she couldn't have a way of outputting power akin to one Bull's power.

"Boom!"

The image of the Qilin howlingly leaped forward; even though she managed to dodge it, a corner of her sleeve was ripped, revealing a snow white arm with traces of blood.

This was the power of a Qilin; one couldn't evade the power of a Qilin completely.

The second attack of Feng Yu began; it was another Qilin shadow image that was released from his palm, causing the pebbles and debris on the martial ring to be twisted into dust.

Feng Jian Xue's speed was frightening, but, at this moment, she felt that there was no place to hide; the entire space seemed to be sealed.

The four claws of the Qilin all carried a flame that was able to cause the air to distort and burn. A pair of curved Qilin horns as sharp as two god horns from the empty space came piercing forward.

Risk it all here? This would be the road to disaster!

Escape? Escape to what place?

Until this moment, Feng Jian Xue had never felt death approaching closer and closer like this. The eighteen bronze pillars sealed off this entire space; even the chance of escaping the martial ring eluded her.

However, at this moment, the voice of Feng Fei Yun rang inside her head.

"The Qilin Strength of Feng Yu is not fully cultivated; even though the power is there, the actual body of the Qilin is not materialized. A strong wind will blow away the body of the Qilin!"

Her gaze quickly glanced over that direction a little bit, just in time to see Feng

Fei Yun standing outside the martial ring, watching her intensely. She quickly withdrew her gaze, and in it was a brilliance of enlightenment.

The Qilin image was ethereal, and the wind was also ethereal.

If the Qilin image was actually materialized, then of course the wind could not have a way of blowing it away!

However, the Qilin power released by Feng Yu, even though it really had the power of ten thousand jin, it was not condensed into a real form. As long as she could exert a formidable wind power, she could destroy the intangible Qilin image.

The corner of Feng Jian Xue's mouth slightly smirked. Her hands slightly bent backward, and they began to move rapidly in the air; her five slender fingers, following a mysterious incantation, caused the air to flow rapidly. In a swift moment, the palm of her hand gave birth to a new wind.

This wind's power became increasingly powerful, and in the end, it became a dragon made out of a singular integrated chain, flying out from her palm.

"Rumble!"

Everything went according to Feng Fei Yun's expectations, the wind power of this dragon chain was able to devour the ferociously unblockable Qilin image. Afterwards, both things dissipated into nothingness from the martial ring, it was like it was never there.

"Whoa!"

At this moment, the entire martial ring was silent; untrusting eyes looked at Feng Jian Xue. No one had guessed that she would be able to shatter the Qilin power.

Even within the last generation of the Feng family, there wouldn't be that many people able to accomplish this task.

"Feng Jian Xue's power is so formidable, she could even break the Qilin power. At the very least, she could tie with Feng Yu."

A person shook his head and said:

"I, on other hand, think that the boy who advised her is the real expert; at the

very least, his insight is frightening.”

“Who was it? Oh it is that guy, haha! This kid earlier couldn’t even walk straight. I’m afraid he is only an arrogant fool.”

“Earlier it was him that referred to Feng Jian Xue as his wife. Maybe he really is genuinely talented.”

*** ***

Everyone turned and pointed at Feng Fei Yun, clamoring. However, his attitude was still nonchalant, and he was still smiling. It was as if he didn’t know that the others were talking about him.

“Wife, ah! Feng Yu had used the spirit spring water before, so his strength is higher than other cultivators at the same level. However, there are flaws in using the spirit spring water; his foundation has shortcomings. Once the foundation is unstable, the power of the core would not be sufficient.”

Feng Fei Yun was sitting on a stone platform next to the martial ring; he leaned his back on the huge bronze pillar, with his legs crossed, and he yelled.

“Hah Hah! The entire power of this little boy Feng Yu is all concentrated on his top half, his bottom half is only an empty egg. This was why he especially created steel boots in order to stabilize his body, making it as firm as a rock. However, this is only in appearance; if wife could destroy the steel boots on his feet, then within three moves, he will definitely be defeated by wife’s hand.”

These words sounded like they were poking fun at Feng Yu, but the deep insight of this person saw through the truth of Feng Yu and expressed it through his words. It was indeed the truth that the strength of Feng Yu was all concentrated on his top half; his legs were still powerful, but it made others feel like it was the “mouth of a lion and courage of a hare.”

On the martial ring, even though Feng Yu’s face was unchanged, his heart was shaken. Feng Fei Yun was not wrong at all; his weakness was in his legs. The reason why he created the steel boots was to fortify his foundation, so that he could fully utilize the strength of his two hands.

“Why is this little boy so smart?”

Cold sweat began drifting from Feng Yu's forehead. He felt that he was seen through and truly understood by Feng Fei Yun, without being able to hide a single secret.

Feng Jian Xue had exchanged some rounds with Feng Yu, so she naturally knew better than anyone else regarding the real power of Feng Yu. After hearing Feng Fei Yun's explanation, she suddenly was enlightened with wisdom; in the midst of everything, her mind became penetratingly clear and brilliant.

So that's it!

Feng Jian Xue couldn't help but to send out a charming smile. This smile was like a blooming spirit flower, causing countless people in the audience to lose their minds.

"I didn't think that this fool could see through it. Even though his power is in complete shambles, his mind is quite sharp; no wonder why foster father thinks of him with such high regard."

Feng Jian Xue pondered for a moment, and then she smiled again. This smile was so beautiful, it stole the souls of so many people.

Feng Fei Yun was still sitting on the boulder next to the martial ring, and he casually said:

"The steel boots under Feng Yu's feet are made out of original cloud steel, weighing two hundred jin. Wanting to break these boots in reality is quite simple; use fire to roast it, and it shall be done!"

"Iron shoes with roasted pig trotters, it is part of an excellent meal, ah!"

Feng Fei Yun once again gave Feng Jian Xue another idea!

Feng Yu slightly retreated his feet to the ground; the contact created frictional sounds, and it was clear that Feng Fei Yun had hit the mark.

His eyes became increasingly cold, and he gravely said:

"Little boy, who the hell are you?"

He realized that Feng Fei Yun was not an ordinary person because a fool wouldn't be able to see through his flaws with such precision. Moreover, even his will for victory was shattered; his battle spirit was gone.

When even the battle spirit was gone, how could he continue to fight?

Feng Yu suddenly felt very sullen!

Not only Feng Yu, there were others who felt that Feng Fei Yun was not ordinary; many people wanted to know where he appeared from?

“Cough cough! This young master is a wisdom master!”

Feng Fei Yun stood up, arched his chest, and then he said with a serious expression.

“A wisdom master!”

Someone exclaimed loudly; the tone was similar like someone who would scream: “Wow! A magnificent beauty!”

Feng Fei Yun slapped his chest, and he said:

“That‘s right! I am a wisdom master! I am the only wisdom master within the fifth generation of the Feng family; young and talented, one and only, absolutely unique in this world!”

The children of the Feng family present immediately became silent. Some were surprised, some were skeptical, some were amazed, and there were even some females who started using their beautiful eyes to cast flirtatious glances at Fei Yun.

A wisdom master was even more popular than a mighty cultivating figure.

Wisdom masters were one of the five grand mysterious masters.

Wisdom masters, along with treasure seeking masters, were the rarest within the five grand mysterious masters.

Once one could be considered a wisdom master, even if it was only a first rank wisdom master, then their status in the Jin Dynasty would already be frighteningly high. At the very least, they could be an elder in a grand family, such as the Feng family.

To use the Feng family as an example, this was a tyrannical power at the Grand Southern Prefecture; however, the number of wisdom masters in the entire family was only three, and each were old men living for almost one hundred

years.

Wisdom masters used wisdom as the base. It required time and the accumulation of knowledge. WIthout several decades, or even centuries of accumulated experience, one could not become a wisdom master.

Wisdom masters barely older than the age of ten weren’t unheard of, but they were phoenix feathers and unicorn horns; it would be rather fortunate to find one or two in the entire Jin Dynasty.

Chapter 38 : True Identity of the Impoverished Youth!

If this person was truly a wisdom master, then him seeing through the openings in Feng Yu's cultivation wouldn't be surprising.

Of course, there were those who didn't trust Feng Fei Yun's words. If he was really a wisdom master within the fifth generation of the Feng family, then it would shake the entire Grand Southern Prefecture; no one here wouldn't not recognize him.

Someone shouted:

"If you are a wisdom master, then do you have the iron order of a wisdom master given out by the Wanxiang Pagoda?"

Feng Fei Yun coldly smiled, and he said:

"Wisdom master's iron order? What the heck is that?"

Feng Fei Yun had never heard of this item, let alone the Wanxiang Pagoda. This was his first time hearing of them.

"You don't even know what the wisdom master's iron order is, yet you still dare to call yourself a wisdom master; you are simply blowing on the cowhide."

The five grand mysterious masters all had a prestigious status and position in the cultivation world, but one had to be affirmed by the Wanxiang Pagoda to become a true mysterious master.

One could only be a true mysterious master once given an iron order from the Wanxiang Pagoda.

The iron order of the five grand mysterious masters was the symbol of their identity. As long as one had this iron order with them, then no matter where they go, they could use it and become an esteemed guest of others.

Without an iron order, even if one's intelligence reached the high heavens, they still wouldn't be recognized as a wisdom master.

After hearing the conversation of these people, Feng Fei Yun had gotten a

grasp of what the wisdom master's iron order is. In a short moment, his thick face reddened and coughed twice, then he said:

"This… A high level item such as a wisdom master's iron order can't be carried around on my body, I had left it at home. If you all want to open your horizons, then two days later, I will definitely show everyone this wisdom master's iron order of the highest rank."

Although Feng Fei Yun's words were confident, no one trusted him. Everyone thought that he was boasting; in the end, the people weren't completely stupid. The wisdom master's iron order was the symbol of one's identity; how could one not bring it with them?

Feng Fei Yun's words raised many vexing hisses!

This person's face was so thick. He still had both of his hands behind his back, acting confident and nonchalant. However, when he saw the eyes of Feng Jian Xue and noticed her disappointment, young master Fei Yun's self-esteem suddenly drooped down.

'Isn't it just a piece of wisdom master's iron order. Two days later, I will make a piece just like it; I definitely will make this little girl grin from ear to ear.'

Feng Fei Yun thought this in his mind.

"Cough cough, this… Wife, didn't wife want to cut off one of his hands? Why are you just standing there in a daze?!"

Feng Fei Yun turned towards Feng Jian Xue, who was standing on top of the martial ring, as he loudly yelled; it was as if he was scolding his new bride. This made her yell back:

"Bastard!"

Feng Jian Xue was very angry. Since childhood, she had never been scolded by anyone like this in public. This bastard Feng Fei Yun pushed people too far. Was he addicted to calling me wife; he is acting as if I was really his wife. Hmph, hmph… How could I be the wife of a fool; he is not only just a fool, but he is also a good for nothing bum!

Even though Feng Jian Xue was frustrated to the point of wanting to curse, she

managed to suppress her fiery anger. She didn't immediately burst out, but a cold and childish attitude originated from her body. She said:

"Feng Yu, we fight again!"

Feng Jian Xue picked up her battle sword from the ground. The body of the sword exuded a large trace of spirit energy, and this spirit energy suddenly bursted into flames; it became a First Dark Origin Flame sword.

She did what Feng Fei Yun had told her; she had to use powerful flames in order to defeat the steel boots. As long as the steel boots were destroyed, then a victory over Feng Yu wouldn't be a difficult task.

This matter, right now, also gave Feng Yu a headache!

Feng Yu said in a dignified and pompous manner, showing his prominent manliness:

"Feng Jian Xue, we have fought for seventeen rounds now. Your strength is without doubt; you are very formidable. You have the qualification to join the Hidden Dragon War. Today, I no longer want to deal with you."

In return, Feng Jian Xue said:

"I'm afraid this is not up to you to decide!"

"Feng Jian Xue, I know that you want revenge for Feng Hao, but you also need to pick the right moment. Our strength is about the same. If you really want to fight to the death, then no one could guess who will win. The real talents of the fifth generation are few in number. If we, at this important moment, both become wounded, then it would only benefit those watching on the sidelines."

Feng Yu naturally was unwilling to fight Feng Jian Xue at this moment because his will for battle has been much extinguished by Feng Fei Yun earlier; he had a low chance of winning if the fight continued on at this moment.

Plus, his goal was the Hidden Dragon War. There were powerful techniques and hidden aces that he was saving to use during the war; if he used all of them now, then he would lose his secret techniques. It would adversely affect his "one hit one kill" moves.

Feng Jian Xue also understood this reasoning. At this moment, her face was

very serious. She understood the weakness of Feng Yu, but she wouldn't be able to defeat him easily. Plus, each person had a secret killing technique, and no one knew how powerful Feng Yu's secret technique would be.

Feng Fei Yun saw her hesitation, and he started to ponder. He thought about whether if this was the time to fight a battle?

"If you no longer want to fight… Then here I come."

A faint voice came about. Even though the sound was very quiet and without any emotion, it traveled across the rowdy martial ring, into the ears of each person.

This convincing voice carried an irresistible force, and it caused others to feel that Feng Yu had already been completely broken under his sword.

"Who said that just now?"

Everyone looked around their surroundings in order to find the person who spoke those words, but there were too many people here; it was difficult to find the person that opened his mouth.

However, Feng Fei Yun knew who it was; he looked towards the crowd to find the impoverished youth. He was still carrying his rusty sword, standing straight in the crowd like an ancient immovable boulder.

Then, suddenly in the next moment, this immovable boulder disappeared. The moment he came into sight again before the people, he was already standing on top of the martial ring. He was still motionless, giving off the feel of a desolate dead tree.

Feng Jian Xue had already left the martial ring. Her gaze was fixed on the impoverished young man. How in the world could someone be so fast; he was clearly standing outside, but, without even a trace of a shadow, he had entered the martial ring.

This cultivation was a bit unimaginable, and it shouldn't exist in the younger generation!

"Do you know him?"

Earlier, Feng Jian Xue clearly saw Feng Fei Yun happily chatting with this

impoverished youth, so she asked this question.

“Yes, but not too well!”

Feng Fei Yun casually replied; at this moment, his gaze was entirely focused on this impoverished youth.

Feng Jian Xue grabbed Fei Yun’s neck with her hand, pulled him down from the jade boulder next to the martial ring, and she asked:

“Did you find any clues in the end?”

Feng Fei Yun was not angry with her. He broke away from her hand, and he said in a serious manner:

“Of course I found some clues. Little Sister, look at this young man. He is truly poor; the clothes on his body had been washed at least a hundred times. His sandals are rotten straight to its heart. Also look at his steel sword, it is truly not even comparable to a steel fire stick; at least, I absolutely wouldn’t use such a broken sword.”

“Nonsense, who needs you to say these things; anyone with eyes could see that. He is indeed very poor, plus he definitely had traveled a long distance. I’m certain that he walked all the way to Violet Firmament Ancient City.”

“You can tell these things?”

Feng Fei Yun was a bit surprised; he assumed that Feng Jian Xue was definitely a large chested beauty without brains, but he didn’t expect her to have such insightful observations.

Feng Jian Xue glared at him, and she said:

“Did you not see that he was carrying some dry rations on his back? His clothes are still covered in dirt and dust. On his waist also hangs a pair of straw sandals, so it was clear that he was prepared for a long journey.”

“Of course I saw them, but don’t you feel that this is a little strange?”

Feng Fei Yun asked.

Feng Jian Xue tilted her eyelashes, and she surprisingly asked:

“What things are strange?”

“The Feng family is a grand family at the top of the Grand Southern Prefecture. Being a child from the Feng family, there is no one that isn’t wealthy; even a child from the branch family wouldn’t be this impoverished, so isn’t this strange?”

“It is indeed a bit strange.”

Feng Jian Xue nodded, and she continued:

“You could only see such little clues?”

“Of course it’s not only this; Little Sister, look at behind his ears. There are round engravings of ancient patterns, they look really familiar. I think I have heard of them before.”

Feng Fei Yun said.

Feng Jian Xue also looked intensely at the ears of the impoverished boy; the more she looked, the more frightened she became.

This circular ancient pattern resembled the mouth of an ancient fierce beast. It was completely black, but they were clearly complex. There was a sword penetrating through the circular patterns, just like a sharp blade cutting into the hearts of people.

These circular ancient patterns were hidden behind the ears. Unless one carefully observed, they essentially would have no way of detecting them. However, once it was revealed, this circular pattern would terrify anyone.

“This is the symbol of the Pinnacle Fate Ending Palace.”

Feng Jian Xue exclaimed loudly, and she turned towards the martial ring, yelling:

“Careful! There is an assassin!”

But, it was too late. The moment Feng Jian Xue’s voice came out, the impoverished boy had taken out his sword; before her words had ended, he had already sheathed his sword.

The steel sword was released and withdrawn, ordinary gazes could not follow it.

“Poof!”

Feng Yu, at the early Immortal Foundation rank, didn’t have the chance to scream. His last breath had been ended. His throat was slashed through by one sword, and he fell backwards into a pool of blood.

“The talents of the fifth generation of the Feng family are truly funny!”

The impoverished youth muttered to himself; he squatted down without a care, and he searched the body of Feng Yu. He quickly took out a white bamboo block from Feng Yu’s chest.

This white bamboo block was around a palm length – as wide as two fingers. On the body were engravings of a mysterious rune diagram!

The impoverished youth took a look at the bamboo block, nodded his head, and stored it inside his chest. It was clear that his reason for murder was to obtain this bamboo block.

“He is not a child of the Feng family! Everyone, hurry and catch this criminal.”

A youth of the Feng family quickly reacted. He roared and, along with three other youths with extraordinary cultivation, he rushed towards the martial ring. They unleashed a brilliant light together to stop the path of the impoverished youth.

“Phoosh phoosh, phoosh phoosh!”

The impoverished boy didn’t even unsheath his sword or pause his steps. He directly walked straight forward. The killing aura surrounding his body immediately killed the four youths from the Feng family.

Blood poured from the four youths’ seven orifices, and their hearts were completely crushed, leaving no trace of life.

Chapter 39 : Stars of the Last Generation

A rising killing intent intensified from the martial ring, forming sword shadow images. Thousands of these killing auras pierced the nine heavens, and they cut the sky's dome.

The killing intent escaped from the body of the impoverished youth!

Even though it was just a strand of killing intent, its freezing frost was almost enough to extinguish the eighteen flames from the bronze pillars surrounding the martial ring.

The rusted steel sword in his hand was covered in blood, colored like a red plum; each drop fell to the floor, soaking the muddy ground.

The round ancient patterns behind his ears turned from black into a bloody crimson; it resembled a bloody devil eye, pressuring others. Most found it difficult to breath.

"What are you trying to do? Are you courting death?"

Feng Jian Xue wanted to rush ahead to stop the impoverished youth; however, Feng Fei Yun grabbed her sleeve, and he dragged her back.

The cultivation of the youth was truly too powerful; the invisible chilling pressure caused the stones to be disintegrated into powders.

Feng Yu was already strong enough, but against this impoverished youth, he didn't even have the power to retaliate. If Feng Jian Xue came forward, the only path would be death.

"An assassin from the Pinnacle Fate Ending Palace dares to break into the Feng family's ground and blatantly kill. As a descendant of the Feng family, we should be working together to annihilate this wretch."

Feng Jian Xue angrily glared at Feng Fei Yun. In her eyes carried an intent of wanting to fight to the end.

Feng Fei Yun was rather speechless, and he thought that, "In the end, she really was a woman with a large chest without brains; knowing that death was

assured yet she still wanted to go in head first, truly too foolish.”

“Phoosh! Phoosh!”

By the hands of the impoverished youth, two more children from the Feng family died in a pool of blood; they couldn’t stop him.

He was like a statue of a death god. As long as someone was courageously standing in front of him, then that person must die; no one was an exception!

“Who the hell is the thief that dares to invade the Hidden Dragon War; do you know where this place is?”

“You dare to brazenly kill the talents of the Feng family? This is simply stepping on the head of the Tai Sui. Children of the Feng family, team up and kill him; use our Feng family’s reputation and shock him.”

“Kill!”

*** ***

There were layers upon layers of young talents in the Feng family’s fifth generation. Even though there was a fierce competition between the branches, when encountering a foreign enemy, they were able to unite and fight together.

This was collectivity; any big power absolutely could not do without cohesion!

Eight children of the Feng family, at the peak of the Spirit Realm, stood in eight directions. Each were carrying eight white Xing Huang Talismans, and they gathered their energy into them. These talismans suddenly flashed bright brilliances. Many spirit rays came out from the talismans, and they condensed into the shape of an ancient beast.

The eight Xing Huang Talismans were eight ancient beasts. All eight were different; they towered magnificently, and they combined into a deadly formation.

“Eight Wild Beast Formation!”

The eight young boys teamed up to form a complete formation; its pressure was like eight huge mountains flying to surround the impoverished youth in the middle.

“Rumble!”

The Eight Wild Beast Formation began to activate; it was as if the formation wanted to dissolve the impoverished youth to death.

The sword of the youth began to move; he only stabbed once with the sword, but, in the blink of an eye, that stab shattered the Eight Wild Beast Formation. As for the eight young boys from the Feng family, their whole body began to tremble, and they lost their breath. They stood frozen in place.

Once the sword was unsheathed, no one would be left alive!

In the distance, Feng Fei Yun’s eyes became anxious, and he mumbled to himself:

“One sword eight strikes, he surely will not miss! Such a swift sword, such a deep killing intent!”

The sword of the impoverished youth was indeed extremely fast; it was too fast for the ordinary eyes to catch. Only ten breaths had passed but ten talents from the Feng family have already died in his hands. Each were killed with just one blow, without any survivors.

If Feng Fei Yun didn’t tightly grab Feng Jian Xue, then this foolish girl would have been a dead woman by now.

Feng Fei Yun didn’t think the impoverished youth was the type of person to show mercy to flowers and jades!

“Rumble!”

From the depths of the Hidden Dragon Courtyard, a flash of thunder traveled in the air like a humanoid electric ball. In the blink of an eye, it stood at the peak of a pavilion; then the next moment, it was on top of the bronze pillar on the martial ring.

This thunder transformed into a human that was adorned with white armor; he had a black crest on his head, and he was in his sixties. His imposing pressure caused others to feel that the wheel of fate was spinning.

“An expert predecessor of the Feng family has arrived!”

Feng Fei Yun was the first to notice this old man standing on top of the bronze

pillar; this was a Feng family elder, guarding the Hidden Dragon Courtyard.

The Hidden Dragon Courtyard was an important ground of the Feng family, it was impossible for it to not have experts present.

An assassin from the Pinnacle Fate Ending Palace coming to the Hidden Dragon Courtyard has disturbed the predecessors of the Feng family.

“How bold, you dare to come to the Hidden Dragon Courtyard to cause trouble, die for me!”

The old master directly turned into a violet thunder bolt, and he aimed towards the head of the impoverished youth from the bronze pillar.

More than ten young talents from the Feng family had died and even a top genius like Feng Yu had fallen. This old master from the Feng family was completely enraged, he wanted to take the life of the youth instantly.

“This is one of the four great elders protecting the Hidden Dragon Courtyard. If he makes a move, this assassin will surely pay for his crime.”

Feng Jian Xue said with a happy expression.

“Poof!”

A loud sword sound ripped through the sky curtain, and then there was blood everywhere; it was like a burning rain of blood!

“You…”

The Feng family elder pointed his finger at the impoverished youth with an expression filled with astonishment, but he was only able to say one word. Then, it was as if his throat was cut, and he couldn’t say another word.

“It struck!”

The body of the Feng family elder directly split into halves, and he fell down to the left and right. There were only broken bones left on the ground.

“What?”

All the Feng family children became frightened, and they couldn’t believe their two eyes!

Even an elder had died in his hands; what was the background of this youth?

Each elder from the Feng family were all top experts; in the Grand Southern Prefecture, they could be considered first class characters and could even be considered kings in the cultivation world. However, this expert was dismembered by the youth's single sword strike.

This sword was too fast! This sword was too fierce!

At this time, Feng Jian Xue turned pale from horror, and she didn't dare to take a single step forward. If an elder from the Feng family was killed in the blink of an eye, then she essentially couldn't compete.

The people that were considered talented in the Feng family, when compared to this impoverished youth, were not even equal to an ant; this was truly a "heaven's proud son".

"This is the best the Feng family can do? Predecessors and juniors, not one can be an opponent."

The impoverished youth sheathed his sword, wearing an indifferent expression. He headed for the outside of the Hidden Dragon Courtyard, and no one dared to stop him.

"Laughable! Don't even dream about escaping this place today!"

The other three elders of the Hidden Dragon Courtyard appeared with extreme killing intent. All three of the elders were old men that have lived for almost one hundred years; above their heads were godly auras, and the God Foundation within their dantian was as solid as a boulder.

The three let out a loud roar together; the sound was no different than three thunderous lightning bolts, echoing through the vast sky.

"Rumble!"

A thick layer of muddy dirt on the ground was lifted, and it flew straight towards the impoverished youth.

"Thump thump!"

The power of the three elders were very formidable. Even though it was only the strength of their roars, it was enough to force the youth back seven steps. There was a trace of blood on his arm and his right wrist was cut, resulting in

blood drops running down his sword, then falling to the ground.

In the end, he was still too young, and he was not invincible in this world!

At this moment, he was wounded.

“Hmm! The Pinnacle Fate Ending Palace is renowned; however, if it dares to intrude on the Feng family and murder our people, then it should be mentally prepared to be killed.”

A Feng family elder used his spirit technique to turn into a large gust of wind; his figure became dozens of shadows, entirely blocking the escape path of the impoverished youth.

“Have a taste of my Five Soul Strange Cauldron!”

A different elder with a ten thousand jin cauldron in his hand, slammed it to the ground, and he suddenly created a devastating blast of energy akin to torrential waves of an angry sea; he unleashed his killing move.

“Five Bull’s Power!”

The third elder was even more unthinkable; his two feet dug straight into the ground, and his two palms motioned outward, unleashing Qilin shadows. Each of these Qilin shadows were seven zhang high, and they were seemingly like five small mountains, quickly rushing forward.

One Bull’s power was equivalent to the power of ten thousand jin. Two Bull’s power was equivalent to the power of twenty thousand jin. Three Bull’s power was equivalent to the power of forty thousand jin. Four Bull’s power was equivalent to the power of eighty thousand jin. Five Bull’s power was equivalent to the power of one hundred and sixty thousand jin.

One hundred and sixty thousand jin was enough to topple the mountains and overturn the seas; it could shift the hills and split the rivers.

This was absolutely a true high ranking master!

Being surrounded by the three elders, not to mention this youth, but even a battle-hardened old devil would be frightened out of his mind.

However, the impoverished youth was still as calm as before, still gripping his sword tightly in his hand. Suddenly, a strand of energy emancipated from his

back and encompassed the entire space above him like it was welcoming him into a different world.

This energy brought about bright celestial lights that were seemingly like godly stars that were traveling under the night curtain. There were a total of three hundred and sixty celestials, positioned according to the Greater Celestial Circuit, and they flickered resplendently with a brilliant splendor high above.

“To adorn the sky as far as the eye can see, the heavens are turned and the stars were moved. This is… Stars of the Last Generation qi image… not below the Nine Five Supreme Physique.”

The flames in Feng Fei Yun’s eyes moved, he could see that this qi image rising from the back of the impoverished youth was one of the top qi images; ten thousand magnificent brilliant stars rendered others unable to lift their head.

Chapter 40 : Du Shou Gao

The Pinnacle Fate Ending Palace was a fearful location that only existed in the legends. Very few cultivators knew the existence of this place.

And in the whole world, those who truly knew the Pinnacle Fate Ending Palace were even less.

This was why it was considered an evil existence in the legends, only existing in the legends, but it was indeed a real place.

The Pinnacle Fate Ending Palace was humble at times, and arrogant during others. When it was keeping a low profile, there wouldn't be an assassin coming out for ten years; however, when it was arrogant, a god of death would cometh.

The amount of assassins inside the Pinnacle Fate Ending Palace, this was a matter no one knew the answer to!

However, as long as it was an assassin from the Pinnacle Fate Ending Palace, each of them was an outstanding talent of a whole generation. This person would definitely shake an entire era.

This impoverished assassin from the Pinnacle Fate Ending Palace was not older than twenty, yet his cultivation was powerful enough to slay a predecessor cultivator.

"Boom boom!"

Above the Hidden Dragon Courtyard were ferocious winds and scattering clouds. The five shadow images of the Qilin flew in the air, carrying a heaven destroying aura. Its aftermath alone was enough to grind the three ancient rooftops, next to the pavilion, into dust.

An elder wearing a white robe with a cauldron in his hand was ready to grind the mountains into dust at any moment. His gaze swept the four spheres and eight directions; each of his circles of power and chilling energy turned into tornados in the shape of dragons.

The combination of the three elders together felt like three gods descending

from the heavens, oppressing the juniors of the Feng family, and giving them a hard time to even breathe.

The impoverished youth, on the other hand, was still poised even when he was facing the three elders at the same time. His qi image became even more densely concentrated.

A resplendent star revolved around the peak of his head, and the three hundred and sixty celestials in constant rotation carried the laws of the heavens and devoured boundless killing intents.

“He wants to unleash his sword!”

Feng Fei Yun stared intensely at the hand of the youth; this was the hand of a dangerous assassin.

“How do you know?”

Feng Jian Xue expressed her disbelief. If she couldn’t clearly see the shadows of the four men, then Feng Fei Yun definitely shouldn’t be able to either.

“Phoosh!”

Jian Xue had just finished her words, and a sword broke free from the fabric of space. Next there was a loud scream, and a rain of blood fell to the ground.

“Bam!”

The elder that was moving his shadows was skewered by the sword in the middle of his forehead. There was a hole as small as a finger. Blood, along with a white matter, dripped out from there.

Another elder has died by his hands!

“This impoverished youth is definitely the devil; killing another person of the elder rank with just one blow.”

A child from the Feng family was lying limp on the floor; it was as if he lost all strength in his entire body.

The others were not much better. All of their foreheads were tingling; they felt like the end of the world was approaching, and it was driving them crazy.

The impoverished youth unleashed his sword one more time, and a frightening

rainbow shattered through space. The blade was swift, but a different elder used his cauldron to block it, resulting in a loud sound.

“Bang bang!”

The smile which had not disappeared from the elder’s face became frozen. It turned out that the steel sword had shattered the cauldron and pierced his heart in one blow.

A second elder has lost his life!

At this moment, the killing intent from the impoverished youth became increasingly strong like the sun during the middle of noon; he produced an unparalleled brilliance.

The last elder, the person with the most powerful cultivation, revealed a frightened look on his face. He gathered his strength, showing a peerless momentum, and he released a five colored god palm that slowly transformed into Five Bull’s of power!

“Whew!”

A flash of sword energy swept the sky, rending the Five Bull’s of power into blue smoke.

The head of an old man flew upward and fell a few hundred zhang away, turning into pieces of flesh.

“Rustling!”

A cold heavy wind blew to the front of the Hidden Dragon Courtyard that was already solemn, making it become even gloomier.

A pungent smell of blood hovered around everyone’s senses. As far as the eye can see, this could only be the scene of an Asura at work.

The impoverished youth stood proudly in the middle of the blood and corpses with his outfit bathed in blood stains; blood dripped down from his seven or eight wounds.

He was still gripping his sword tightly, just like a god of death!

The four elders of the Hidden Dragon Courtyard had all died in his hands, each

to just one fatal move.

Feng Jian Xue seemed nauseous and pale from terror. When the gaze of the impoverished youth dawned on her, she couldn't help but take two steps back.

This was an instinctive reaction to fear!

The impoverished youth coldly said.

"I thought she wasn't your wife!"

Feng Fei Yun quickly blocked in front of Feng Jian Xue, and he said loudly:

"What are you looking at, she also definitely isn't your wife!"

The impoverished youth gently wiped his sword, and he said with a bleak tone:

"I don't like men who take advantage of women!"

Feng Fei Yun's spirit suddenly came around, and he smilingly said:

"She is willing to be teased by me, so it is none of your business. Little boy, do you have a little sister? How about I tease her next time?"

"Little sister?"

The impoverished youth slowly touched the bamboo block in his chest. His eyes revealed a soft hint of emotions, but it was quickly replaced by killing intent. He then coldly snorted, withdrew his gaze, turned around, and he left.

"You are truly a despicable person. If we meet again, I will definitely kill you."

The impoverished youth's body disappeared, and, suddenly, he was standing on top of the Hidden Dragon Courtyard's high wall.

"Why not kill me right now?"

Feng Fei Yun smilingly asked.

"Because I am out of time."

The impoverished youth seemed to be in a rush; he gazed towards the far distance as if he wanted to meet a certain person.

He quickly left, but, from his back, came the jabbering sound of Feng Fei Yun.

"Hey! A meeting is fateful; how about leaving a name?"

Feng Fei Yun chased after him.

“If you want to find this assassin’s sabre, then find Du Shou Gao!”

The impoverished youth rushed straight through the sky like a giant bird, and he disappeared in the midst of the vast pavilion’s rooftops.

His voice echoed continuously in the air for a long time without expiration.

“Du Shou Gao! This name will definitely resonate through the entire Grand Southern Prefecture in just a short period!”

Feng Fei Yun watched Du Shou Gao’s back as he was leaving; he smilingly mumbled:

“Clearly he was carrying a sword, but then he said assassin’s sabre; did he hit his head on a door or something?”

“His head naturally never hit a door before; it was only that you only saw his sword and not his sabre. In other words, you still didn’t have the qualifications to see his sabre.”

Feng Jian Xue stepped forward with a perplexed expression, and she asked:

“He really didn’t kill you because he ran out of time?”

Feng Fei Yun said.

“Fuck, do you really want to see me die under his sword?”

“A foul-mouthed person like you staying alive is truly a miracle.”

Feng Jian Xue smiled.

Feng Fei Yun’s expression became serious, and he said:

“The truth is his not killing me had two reasons. First, he really did not have time. He came to the Hidden Dragon Courtyard to kill Feng Yu. It was apparent that his aim was the bamboo block on him; as for what the content was, it is unknown to me. However, one thing that is almost certain, the person that wanted this bamboo block is not him, but the employer who hired him to kill.”

“An employer?”

Feng Jian Xue was surprised.

Feng Fei Yun said.

“Du Shou Gao is an assassin. The first requirement for an assassin to kill is for someone to pay money!”

“He has to go meet his employer now?”

Feng Jian Xue’s eyes flashed a strange expression while she gazed intensely at Feng Fei Yun; a faint killing intent appeared in her dual pupils.

Feng Fei Yun’s entire body slightly shivered; he slowly turned while he carefully glaring in all four directions. Du Shou Gao had already left, so why did he feel another strand of killing intent earlier? Could he be delusional?

It must have been his mind playing tricks!

Feng Fei Yun nodded, and he said:

“He definitely went to meet his employer, but this was only the first reason why he didn’t kill me. There is another, the second reason.”

“Which is?”

Feng Jian Xue asked.

Feng Fei Yun said.

“He was severely wounded. Not to mention killing, if he stood here for another second, he could have collapsed at any time without being able to stand back up.”

Chapter 41 : Lone Star From The North

“He was really severely wounded?”

“He definitely was severely wounded!”

Feng Fei Yun said with confidence.

“If that was the case, then why didn’t you take the chance to capture him? Wouldn’t you be renowned in the world afterwards?”

Feng Jian Xue became increasingly puzzled by Feng Fei Yun’s actions more and more; they exuded a sense of mysteriousness.

Feng Fei Yun shook his head, and he said:

“First of all, Du Shou Gao’s cultivation is truly terrifying. Even when he was near death, he most likely would be able to bring someone else with him; I don’t want to take that risk. Second, compared to capturing him, I want to know who is the one that hired him even more.”

Feng Fei Yun, with a little smile on his face, was filled with confidence and wisdom!

“You mean you want to follow him, then find out who his employer is?”

Feng Jian Xue’s expression became serious. She carried a hint of deep thought while she stared at Feng Fei Yun.

“Naturally so! I feel that behind this matter is something extraordinary.”

Feng Fei Yun said.

“However, in the world, there is essentially no one that could tail an assassin. Let alone you, even an elder of the Feng family still wouldn’t be able to.”

Feng Jian Xue said.

Feng Fei Yun smiled, and he said:

“Little Sister, don’t forget, I am also a wisdom master. Wanting to tail someone is not a difficult task. Do you want to go with me?”

Wanting to tail a first class assassin, this was not a trivial matter!

Feng Jian Xue naturally didn't believe that Feng Fei Yun was truly a wisdom master, but he was abnormally confident; could it be that he truly had a method to find the trace of Du Shou Gao?

"This… such a big event happened. I have to immediately rush to the main house of the Feng family in order to report to the branch leader, so I don't have time to fool around with you."

Feng Jian Xue thought one thing, but she said another.

Feng Fei Yun nodded his head, and he said:

"That's true; Du Shou Gao is indeed too ferocious. Little Sister not wanting to track him is a normal thing."

Even the four elders had died under the one sword of Du Shou Gao; the younger generation of the Feng family had been frightened to the point where they couldn't stand upright. Let alone telling them to follow the trace of Du Shou Gao, even a mention of his name would break their courage.

Only this boy, Feng Fei Yun, who feared nothing in Heaven or Earth and carried a spirit treasure, would dare to chase after Du Shou Gao. Other people, including Feng Jian Xue, didn't have as much courage.

"Feng Fei Yun!"

Feng Fei Yun had already ran to the main gate of the Hidden Dragon Courtyard; however, Feng Jian Xue chased after him, and she called for him from afar.

Feng Fei Yun stopped in his tracks, turned around, and he surprisingly stared at her.

"You really shouldn't go. To be able to hire an assassin of Du Shou Gao's rank, this person's cultivation would not be weaker than Du Shou Gao. In the end, you still haven't cultivated; if they find you… I'm afraid that you wouldn't be able to return."

Feng Jian Xue wanted to say more, but she stopped; her eyes had signs of internal struggle.

Feng Fei Yun felt a bit shocked for a moment, and then he smirked:

“Ahem, wife, is this wife worrying for me?”

“You go to hell!”

Feng Jian Xue gritted her teeth, angrily stomped the ground, and she continued:

“You deserve death!”

*** ***

Violet Firmament Ancient City was the largest city in the Grand Southern Prefecture of the Jin Dynasty. Its history was even older than the Jin Dynasty itself; it was like an ancient Godly Tablet, forever eternal.

Violet Firmament Ancient City was constructed eight times, and it erected eight different walls; it was divided into the outer city, middle city, brocade city, inner city, and the imperial city.

The Hidden Dragon Courtyard was located in the outer city, in the outskirt region; however, it was still busy and vibrant. It was filled with horse carriages and waves of people. One could only imagine how bustling and flourishing the sceneries inside the brocade city, inner city, and imperial city must be.

Feng Fei Yun walked above the broad street where luxurious and ancient carriages traveled back and forth beside him. There was also a youth riding a gigantic ancient beast along with a brigade of servants shouting everywhere.

In Violet Firmament Ancient City, the one thing that wasn’t lacking was the rich young masters and nobles. People with wealth were too numerous, and the people with power were definitely not low in number.

“I have entered the middle city!”

Feng Fei Yun gazed at the far distance while he stood on the street; he noticed a celestial qi image, and he quickly moved towards the depths of Violet Firmament Ancient City.

Du Shou Gao was able to hide his tracks, but it was very difficult to hide the qi image on his body. As long as there was someone who was versed in understanding qi images and familiar with his own, they could track his trail.

Du Shou Gao was definitely a cautious person; even when one was aware of the qi images, it was still difficult to follow his path.

Feng Fei Yun followed him for exactly one day and one night before pinpointing his exact location.

It was already night time at this moment. There was a gloomy crescent moon suspended in the sky's canopy; the navy blue sky was filled with the celestials illuminating their brilliances like shining silk cloths.

Feng Fei Yun remained hidden on top of an ancient building with wooden engravings. In the far distance, Du Shou Gao was drinking in a nearby restaurant. He had drank for two hours without any intention of leaving.

He drank the wine while coughing up blood. There were even a few times where he could hardly hold his sword in his hand; it was as if it would fall to the floor at any time. However, two hours passed and he was still sitting upright in that place drinking, coughing up more blood, and drinking some more.

Feng Fei Yun was afraid of getting too close, so he only sat on the rooftop a few hundred zhang away with his legs crossed on the glazed tiles. With a grilled chicken in his hand of unknown origin, he was eating the chicken while he gazed at Du Shou Gao at the same time.

It was as if both of them were playing with each other!

"I have plenty of time; I don't believe that you will stay here and drink your whole life away."

Feng Fei Yun lifted his head, laying down on the rooftop. He no longer watched his target drink wine because, even if he didn't use his eyes, he could still faintly feel that Du Shou Gao was still there.

This was a mysterious feeling that was hard to explain. It was just like the spirit sense of powerful cultivators, but only that he didn't have such a powerful spirit sense like them.

Suddenly, from high above, an array of stars in the sky suddenly appeared. One brilliant star crossed the heavens like a shooting meteor breaking through space; it caused chaos, and it deranged the other stars in the sky.

This star came from the north; it ferociously caused destruction and then dissipated in the sky palace.

Feng Fei Yun quickly rolled on top of the roof and then stood up, with a surprised expression on his face. His mind immediately reached a conclusion, and he mumbled to himself:

“Lone star coming from the north, there is nowhere to escape! Could it be that the damned grandma Dong Fang Jing Yue has chased me all the way to Violet Firmament Ancient City?”

Feng Fei Yun had some knowledge regarding the celestial array during night time. The lone star earlier pierced half of the night sky like a sharp knife into one’s heart, causing him to be frightened out of his wits. A little bit of calculation showed that a powerful enemy was approaching from the North.

North was the location of Spirit State City!

The shadow of the night became increasingly boundless; Dong Fang Jing Yue’s misty apricot eyes, along with her closed pair of white wings, treaded lightly on the waves as she crossed the moat of Violet Firmament Ancient City.

Her white butterfly veil was unable to conceal the slight amount of her apathetic fairy-like beauty, causing the city guards’ eyes to brighten, as if they just saw a goddess descending from the heavens.

“Stop right there! One cannot enter Violet Firmament Ancient City after nightfall.”

A soldier reacted; the spear in his hand pointed towards Dong Fang Jing Yue.

Dong Fang Jing Yue didn’t bother to even glimpse at him. From her sleeve, a metal order flew out to the foot of the soldier, and then she walked straight inside Violet Firmament Ancient City.

The soldier picked up the order from the ground, and he noticed the engravings of “Yin Gou” and “Dong Fang”. The order in his hand weighed around a dozen jin.

“This servant has eyes but couldn’t see Mount Tai; I am worthy of many deaths.”

It was as if the soldier had a stroke. He was paralyzed; he immediately fell to the ground, and he kowtowed continuously.

This was the order of the Yin Gou family. Even the governor of Violet Firmament Ancient City wouldn't dare to offend the Yin Gou family, let alone a minor soldier such as himself.

Dong Fang Jing Yue has traveled very far inside Violet Firmament Ancient City, and then she activated the Haotian Spirit Mirror. A bright crescent moon lifted from the ground, and it slowly ascended, bringing a vast and boundless luster of brilliance along with it.

"Feng Fei Yun, your time of death is near!"

Dong Fang Jing Yue quietly muttered as she recalled her Haotian Spirit Mirror; she then directly flew towards the middle city.

Without the protection of Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng, Dong Fang Jing Yue was confident that she could easily subdue Feng Fei Yun. If not, then she would directly find the Feng family's patriarch, so that the Feng family would send experts to chase him.

Chapter 42 : Oriole from Behind!

After nightfall, Violet Firmament Ancient City was lit up by the bright lights and filled with noisy commotions.

Du Shou Gao finally stopped coughing up blood, and he seemingly had enough to drink. He picked up the tablecloth, and he wiped the bloody sword in his hand.

At this moment, a person with a tall and slender demeanor entered the restaurant. Because the shop was in the way of the person's face, it was not clear whether it was a man or a woman.

Even Feng Fei Yun didn't see how he had entered the restaurant. When Fei Yun was just a bit distracted, the person was already standing inside.

Feng Fei Yun quickly spat out the chicken bone he was chewing on, and he gazed at the restaurant, wanting to clearly see the figure of the person sitting opposite of Du Shou Gao; however, the person always had a fan in his hand, covering his face.

"Only the younger generation of the Feng family wears this type of black shoes; could it be that Du Shou Gao's customer was a person from the Feng family?"

Even though he couldn't see the opponent's face, the person deliberately wore a robe that would hide his figure; however, the revealed shoes gave Feng Fei Yun a little clue.

"Feng Yu is dead, where is the item?"

The person asked.

Du Shou Gao was sitting upright, and he gazed at the man across from him with a complicated face. He slowly took out the bamboo block from his chest, and he placed it on the table.

The person wanted to take the bamboo block on the table, but Du Shou Gao's sword moved towards his wrist. If they dared to grab the block, then the sword would immediately cut off his hand.

“Hand over the payment first; one hundred thousand liang of pure gold!”

Du Shou Gao’s voice was as cold as ice, causing even the wind on the table to become frozen.

The hand of the other person suddenly rose to the air, and they let out an unpredictable laughter:

“Fine, I’ll give it to you!”

“Bang!”

A large white light came from the wrist of this person and it became a layer of scale armor, blocking Du Shou Gao’s sword. Their other hand took the shape of a dual finger sword, and they pierced straight towards the middle of Du Shou Gao’s eyebrows.

Du Shou Gao was naturally not an ordinary man picked up from the street. His foot stomped once on the ground, and he did a backflip to the outside; within this moment, he still found time to slash one sword into the sky, creating a sword aura.

“Bang!”

This one slash completely cut through the entire restaurant. The sword energy shattered the wine jars, wine flasks, and wine cups, causing the air to suddenly be filled with the sensation of wine; the evaporated haze of the alcohol’s fragrance suddenly pervaded half the street.

The bamboo block left on the table was undamaged, and the other person was still sitting in his chair while playing with his face; Feng Fei Yun still couldn’t see his face.

“A fight!”

Feng Fei Yun was rubbing his fists while he stared intently at the bamboo block. The two peak experts both vying for it showed that it was definitely not ordinary; if he could fish in muddy waters and obtain the bamboo block, then nothing could be better.

The other person was not in a rush, and they gently said:

“Du Shou Gao, you are already wounded. You cannot be my match!”

Du Shou Gao, with his sword in his hand, stood ten zhang away and was surrounded by rounds of battle energy; his astonishing pressure formed waves of tornados.

This was a man who was seriously injured?

“There was such an expert like you within the Feng family’s fifth generation; I didn’t see it before.”

Du Shou Gao spoke with hidden implications like he was hinting at something.

“The things you still don’t see are plentiful!”

The other person said.

“To oppose me for a mere one hundred thousand liang of pure gold; this is definitely the most unwise decision you’ve made in your life!”

Du Shou Gao was especially talkative today, at least more than the usual.

“One hundred thousand liang of pure gold to me is not a lot. Killing you is just because you know too much.”

The other person obscurely said.

“This matter of killing for the sake of silencing, I have done many times. I can’t believe that it would happen to me in turn, today!”

Each time Du Shou Gao spoke, his aura became increasingly more powerful. The moment his last word came out, his aura had reached its peak; his figure suddenly disappeared from its spot.

No, it was because the speed was too swift that it gave off the feeling that he had disappeared!

The sword’s aura and the shadow of his figure moved back and forth, wanting to take the life of his opponent with just one blow.

Du Shou Gao’s sword was at the peak of speed, enough to kill a predecessor with the rank of elder, in one sword. His sword had never missed his target, but this time, he pierced into empty space.

The other person’s speed was not any slower compared to him!

“Pow!”

Layers of the other person's figures on top of each created a series of shadows. Their palm struck Du Shou Gao's sword, and it created a large fiery spark.

A loud sound occurred!

The sword in Du Shou Gao's hand was cracked, forming many lines like spider webs.

"Bang!"

The steel sword was completely broken, and metal scraps fell to the floor, revealing a bloody brilliance. A shadow of a thin sabre appeared.

There was a hidden sabre within the steel sword!

"Phoosh!"

The sabre was faster; even more ruthless and powerful than the sword!

A gentle flick was enough to form a strand of flames along with sabre energy.

"This is… a sabre of the spirit treasure ranking!"

The other person's voice came with a hint of surprise. It was easy to see that a spirit treasure could still frighten others.

If one could utilize the entire strength of a spirit treasure, it would be comparable to the power of one hundred thousand soldiers; it was capable of fighting against cultivators with a higher rank.

"Hmph! Du Shou Gao, you are heavily wounded! Essentially, you cannot activate the power of the spirit sabre. Even with a spirit treasure in your hand, you will still absolutely die today."

The other person quickly calmed his mind. If Du Shou Gao was at his full strength with a spirit treasure, then they could only run for dear life; however, at this moment, it was unknown when Du Shou Gao would fall down. The other person was not even a little afraid.

"Then you are gravely wrong… Hah? Where is the bamboo block?"

Du Shou Gao's voice was accompanied by astonishment.

The other person also gazed at the table. The bamboo block was no longer

there, and there was only the bones of a half eaten chicken on top of the empty table.

“The mantis stalks the cicada, unaware of the oriole from behind! Such a good oriole!”

Du Shou Gao naturally knew the value of the bamboo block. His gaze swept all over the place, and he finally found a clue. With the sabre in his hand, he rushed towards the far distance in the dark night, and he began his chase; his feet stomped the rooftop tiles, causing them to fly dozens of meters high.

The other person put away their fan. Their face was covered by a layer of dense mist so people couldn’t clearly tell whether they were a man or a woman. Even their age was unknown.

“Tsk tsk! To be able to take the bamboo block in front of my eyes, this person’s capability is not ordinary.”

Finished saying these words, the other person gently patted his clothes and stomped on the rooftop towards the direction of Du Shou Gao, giving chase.

Feng Fei Yun was urgently escaping. No matter whether it was a large street or small alleyways, he didn’t hesitate to quickly passed through them; it was as if he was running away from robbers.

There was no other way. There were two gods of death quickly chasing from behind. Just a little bit slower, and he would die under their blades.

Chase, still chasing, and even more chasing, all the way to the inner city!

Du Shou Gao and the mysterious person became increasingly closer. One could hear the sounds of breaking wind coming from their swift movements to catch up.

“Whoosh!”

Du Shou Gao waved the sabre in his hand, and a strand of sabre energy crossed the sky like a small fiery dragon.

“Phoosh!”

The sleeve of Feng Fei Yun was cut. If he didn’t quickly dodge, then it would have been his neck and not just a corner of his sleeve.

A chilling energy, filled with strong killing intent, rose from the top of his head, causing Feng Fei Yun's heart to shiver. His body suddenly rushed towards the side, and he jumped over a high wall, entering a mansion in order to dodge the surely mortal blow.

This move was not from Du Shou Gao, but from the mysterious person from the Feng family. This person's cultivation was not under Du Shou Gao.

Chapter 43 : Pagoda Temple

Feng Fei Yun hid in a pitch black corner, and his palms were filled with stale sweat. He panted nonstop while his back was glued to the cold wall, not daring to move.

There was loud singing and dancing from the mansions. One could see that the owner was wealthy and luxurious, but, at this moment, Fei Yun turned a deaf ear and blind eye to the commotion; he was only focused on listening to the approaching footsteps from outside of the mansion.

Du Shou Gao's killing intent was dense on his body, coming closer and closer, causing the atmosphere to become frozen.

"What to do? What to do?"

There were ten thousand tricks and schemes coming up in Feng Fei Yun's mind, but he quickly dismissed all of them one by one. Facing an expert of Du Shou Gao's level, any tricks would be futile.

He turned and looked at the deepest part of this mansion, and he saw that along the aged pathway, nine ancient willow trees with dragon engravings were planted, extending to the far distance.

The nine ancient willow trees corresponded with nine blue pagoda temples and they took up a corner of the mansion, they were indistinctly filled with some kind of murderous atmosphere.

This mansion was located in the inner city. He had to enter it due to the desperate circumstance in order to save his life. The decoration was completely different from the outside, carrying with it a sense of exotic architectural style.

"This mansion is so huge, but why are there no maids and servants at this place?"

Feng Fei Yun took another gaze even though the lights were bright and the singings and dancings were continuous. There was not even a shadow of a person; it was seemingly very strange.

A large wind blew forward, the nine ancient willow trees engraved with dragons were like nine giants that began to slowly move, and rustling sounds came from the rubbing of the leaves.

“Whoa!”

A large white fog came from the leaves of the ancient willow trees that densely appeared. Each tree was accompanied by a white ray, and it quickly encompassed the whole mansion.

This fog can block people’s sight; one could not see another person’s feet from ten steps away.

“Even the heavens are helping me!”

Even though Feng Fei Yun did not understand why the leaves of the nine ancient willow trees were releasing fog, but, to him, this was a way of escaping Du Shou Gao and the mysterious Feng person; it was a tremendous advantage.

“Boom!”

A wave of sabre energy, around a few meter long and was like a flame, flew from the outside and destroyed the wall where Feng Fei Yun was just hiding at earlier; the saber energy turned the pile of stones into smithereens.

Feng Fei Yun also used this chance to rush forward, and he flew into the depths of the mansion. He jumped on top of the huge ancient willow tree, and he hid there.

“Phoosh phoosh!”

Because they were closely chasing Feng Fei Yun, they also flew into the mansion. One step was a ten zhang dash invading the mansion. Du Shou Gao, with a sabre in his hand, showed his cold eyes along with his killing intent that was almost enough to scatter the haze and boundless fog.

The mysterious Feng family’s child also revealed their figure. The child wore a feather scarf, with a grand jade wrapped around their waist. In their hand was a white bone fan with an elegant demeanor.

Even though there was a dense mist covering the mysterious person’s face; however, because the “Heavenly Phoenix Gaze” of Feng Fei Yun had reached the

early stage, he could see through the outlines of the mysterious person's face.

This person was blessed with bright eyes and white teeth. His facial features were outstandingly delicate beyond comparison. He was simply too outrageously handsome, inviting others to be envious.

Feng Fei Yun considered his looks to be number one, enough to ensure that girls were bewildered and yearned for him; compared to this young man, he was one hundred thousand miles behind.

As long as it was a woman, if she saw him, she would certainly become a criminal smitten with infatuation.

"Pei! How could there be such a handsome man in this world? No wonder his face had to be covered with a layer of dense fog; it was as if he was afraid of something! A good man such as myself can't just let this be, so I'll ruin his features at an opportune moment!"

At this moment, Feng Fei Yun really had the sudden impulse to disfigure the beauty of this bewitching young man, but in the end, it was just an impetuous thought because the cultivation of this bewitching young man was quite frightening. Maybe only talents as powerful as Du Shou Gao would be able to suppress him.

"Truly strange… Why is there such a familiar feeling?"

Feng Fei Yun carefully observed the bewitching young man, and he still felt a vaguely familiar atmosphere… Especially those eyes filled with a godly atmosphere; they caused Feng Fei Yun to vividly feel its liveliness.

However, Feng Fei Yun was also aware that he had never seen this man before, so where was this familiar feeling coming from in the first place?

Suddenly, the bewitching young man took a step forward, and he gently lifted his jade-like slender neck. His eyes gazed into the above.

His eyes were extremely sharp; it was as if there were two swords coming from his pupils.

"Not good, he found me!"

Feng Fei Yun felt a killing intent rushing towards his location.

The bewitching young man felt Feng Fei Yun's gaze, so he found him. His slender jade arm was lifted and unleashed a giant black palm directly towards the hiding place of Feng Fei Yun.

Feng Fei Yun continuously released nine palms; it was as if his body was becoming the nine hands of an arhat, wanting to block the incoming palm.

However, he was still underestimating the strength of this bewitching young man. His black palm turned into three, and they transformed into three Qilin shadows. They let out a loud roar, and they ferociously flew forward.

The power of three Bulls was around forty thousand jin, grandiose and majestic; their stomps were like thunders trampling the heavens.

A casual palm from the bewitching young man was enough to unleash the power of three Bulls; this cultivation couldn't be below those of the Feng family's elders. This was definitely a one-and-only genius within the fifth generation of the Feng family.

"Boom!"

The power of three Bulls forcefully crushed everything it went through, directly destroying the nine palms from Feng Fei Yun. It impacted him, knocking him a dozen zhang away.

"Damn! So strong!"

Even though Feng Fei Yun was knocked flying, he was not wounded. On the contrary, he borrowed the momentum of the palm in order to sneak into a blue pagoda temple next to the ancient willow tree. Next, he opened a door, and he entered the inside.

Nine ancient willow trees, nine pagoda temples!

The stout ancient willow trees were not different than a dragon pillar. It required three to five people to fully clutch around the body with their hands. The leaves on the trees were vibrant and full of life, plus there was also the white fog lingering above, like the nine trees were successfully cultivating the path of Dao.

The nine pagoda temples were also very strange. They were built by pure

sandalwood; on top of them were Sanskrit engravings along with Buddhists symbols, but this architectural style was completely different from any other temples in the Grand Southern Prefecture, giving the feel that this was something like a Buddha but not a Buddha at the same time.

Even though there were signs of devious mysteries everywhere, Feng Fei Yun had to break through in order to live.

“Bam!”

Feng Fei Yun had just jumped into a window, and the window suddenly closed behind him. In front of his eyes was a dark and eerie scenery. He could barely see three strands of light emancipating from the moon outside the window.

Feng Fei Yun took a deep breath, and he stood up from the ground. He stared outside the window, and he found that Du Shou Gao and the bewitching young man were still there.

Both of them, left and right, were not of the virtuous and merciful crowd. They were staring at Feng Fei Yun inside the pagoda temple.

They didn’t immediately rush in. It was clear that they recognized that the place was devious, and they didn’t dare to make a reckless move. Furthermore, they were cautious of the other. Before they found any clues of the situation, they would not easily place themselves in danger.

“Hand over the bamboo block, and I will leave your body intact!”

Du Shou Gao’s chilling voice carried a cold aura, resulting in the entire pagoda temple to be covered with a layer of icy mist.

“Feng Fei Yun, I also don’t want to kill you. Don’t force me to take your life.”

The bewitching young man paused for a moment, and then he continued:

“If you hand the bamboo block over to me, I will definitely protect your life.”

Feng Fei Yun naturally did not believe these lies. He took out a roasted half chicken, and started chewing on it; he simply didn’t care about those two outside.

He took a bite, and then he paused; something isn’t right! How did this bewitching young man know my name?

Even though Feng Fei Yun considered himself to be brilliant beyond comparison and renowned across the world, it was only his own opinion. In the end, he only got to Violet Firmament Ancient City yesterday, and the people that could call his name out would not exceed a total of ten.

How could this bewitching young man shout out his name?

The more he thought about it, the stranger it became. He put down his roasted chicken on the table next to the window, and he positioned his two hands on the window. Two flames rose in his eyes, and he gazed intensely at the bewitching young man again, wanting to see through the thick fog surrounding his face to truly see his entire features.

While Feng Fei Yun was next to the window, holding his breath to observe the bewitching young man, a door at the back of this dark and empty room was opened; there was no sound of the door opening. This silence was quite abnormal.

An ancient sigh came about causing others to feel a gloomy and distant atmosphere; it was like a sigh from an ancient corpse buried under the earth.

Similarly, Feng Fei Yun did not hear this sigh. Inside the pagoda temple, there seemed to be a mysterious power that sealed off part of his senses.

“Damn it! Who is this bewitching young man in the end?”

Feng Fei Yun observed for a long time without any results. He reached out for the roasted chicken, but he felt an icy cold and shriveled hand instead; it was as if there was no trace of flesh and blood.

Chapter 44 : Red Spider Lily

Unexpectedly, Feng Fei Yun touch a hand!

Feng Fei Yun had felt the hands of many people, but the majority were the hands of young and beautiful girls. This was the first time touching such a cold and shriveled hand.

“Mother! What in the devil is this?”

Feng Fei Yun immediately rushed backwards, and he stared straight at the wall; could it be a ghost?

Supernatural matters naturally couldn’t scare Feng Fei Yun because he was someone that had died once; however, this ghost thing was truly too strange! It was even scarier than a real ghost!

On it was a gray monk’s robe; the cloth fabric had turned pale white. The white lines engraved at the chest area must have been embroidered a few thousand years ago, woven into the shape of a red spider lily; it was surrounded by a group of tiny ancient words that were beautifully embroidered next to the flower.

“Red spider lily; one thousand years to bloom and one thousand years to wither, flowers and petals never meet each other. Feelings not because of karma, fate preordained before life and death!”

This was a small phrase embroidered on the monk’s robe. These gentle fonts hid a Dao truth. Even though several thousand years had passed, but these small words still carried along a dreary and solemn sadness, still carried the same aura as before.

A simple glance would be enough to cause others to become teary.

This monk’s robe was floating in front of Feng Fei Yun. It was as if an ancient monk was standing before him; however, in reality, this was only a monastic robe. This robe had an aura that could protect it from the eternality of time, allowing it to float in the air.

There was a feeling that a transparent monk was standing in front of Fei Yun; it

smilingly stared at him.

There were a few blood stains on the monastic robe. Even though a few thousand years had passed, the blood was still beautifully bright, just like a red plum.

“Red spider lily! Red spider lily! Petals becoming flowers that have not yet bloomed, flowers becoming petals that had already fallen! Separated by only an inch, never seeing each other during an entire life!”

“The owner of this monastic robe must be someone with a story!”

Feng Fei Yun’s heart was one part less afraid and one part more curious.

The monastic robe was seemingly rotten, and the inside was empty. Its owner had been dead for who knows how many years; only this robe was eternal.

No, there was also a ghastly skeletal right hand!

A skeletal right hand was protruding from the robe’s right sleeve. It was tightly gripped; the flesh and blood had already been long gone, and the bones were corroded with thousand of small holes; it was as if a gentle touch would reduce it to scattered ashes.

A few thousand years would be enough time for the flesh and bones of humans to deteriorate into ashes, but this right hand had not faded; this made him curious about the reasons within.

“It seems like this hand is gripping something?”

The five fingers of the skeletal hand was tightly gripping a certain item, even after a few thousand years, he still couldn’t bear to let go.

What could this item be that even a dead man was still so reluctant to let go.

Feng Fei Yun’s curiosity recently has been heavy. Even though he had no antagonistic feeling towards the monastic robe, he still wanted to wrestle the fingers open in order to see what it was gripping.

Feng Fei Yun was currently at the early Immortal Foundation, and the power of his hands was extremely formidable, it was to the point where it could even bend a steel ingot. However, no matter how much strength he exerted, he couldn’t find a way to move even a part of the skeletal hand.

“One thought was born, ten thousand crags and torrents; one remembrance extinguished, the blue sea turned into mulberry fields!”

There was a distant solemn voice filled with vicissitudes full of love and yearning for the mortal world, yet it also carried an intense unwillingness. It caused listeners to become dejectedly melancholic.

It was as if there was someone leaning against the balcony to watch the moonlight while they recalled their memories!

After a while, there was a long sigh.

The two legs of the monastic robe were blown by the wind, and it gently walked away, back into the blue door.

The door was gently shut, and it still made no sound.

Feng Fei Yun stood in a daze, and he rubbed his eyes. He felt that what just happened was just a dream, not part of reality.

“A few thousand year old monastic robe started walking. One could tell how powerful its owner must have been; such a strong person, what could his past be like?”

“Pagoda temple, blood stained monastic robe, red spider lily, skeletal hand…”

Feng Fei Yun felt that he had entered a place he shouldn’t have; he inadvertently alarmed an existence that was asleep for thousands of years.

“Feng Fei Yun, have you thought it over?”

The sound of the bewitching young man came from the outside with a bit of coy along with a pent up anger.

“There is nothing to think about. If you are capable, then personally come inside and take it. This young master will be waiting for you here!”

Feng Fei Yun naturally did not trust their nonsense. Even if he gave them the bamboo block, they surely would kill him to keep the matter a secret.

Right, what actually is this bamboo block?

Ever since he had successfully stolen this bamboo block, Feng Fei Yun have not taken a good look at it. However, if it was valued so highly by both Du Shou Gao

and the bewitching young man, then this bamboo block must contain a big secret.

Right when Feng Fei Yun was about to examine the secret of the bamboo block, a cold wind rushed in from outside the pagoda temple.

“Then I will come take it!”

In the end, Du Shou Gao lost his patience, and he made a move. There was no other choice; he was heavily wounded, and he was essentially unable to compete with Feng Fei Yun or the bewitching young man. Every passing minute, his strength would steadily decrease.

He could only take a risk, otherwise it will become increasingly disadvantageous for him.

The sabre in Du Shou Gao’s hand was a spirit treasure. Even though he couldn’t activate the spirit treasure’s power, the sharpness of the sabre was still peerless compared to ordinary magical weapons.

Not mentioning a pagoda temple, he could even split a palace in half with one blow.

Feng Fei Yun naturally wouldn’t just sit there and accept his death. Separated by a window, he met the blade with a palm strike; the Infinite Spirit Ring in the palm of his hand began to activate, and a black magical energy flew out and transformed into a gigantic palm that struck down from the sky.

“Bang!”

Du Shou Gao’s cultivation was extremely high, and his sabre techniques were honed to perfection, but he was still blown away by this palm, and his body hit the ancient willow tree behind him.

“Boom!”

The body of the ancient willow tree shook, and its leaves fell down, covering the sky.

Du Shou Gao’s body dropped from the tree’s body to the ground, and then spewed out a mouthful of blood; his injury became worse.

His eyes were filled with fear. The palm strike earlier was truly too powerful.

Even though the palm caught him by surprise, it was enough to see its tyrannical strength.

Feng Fei Yun's strength was absolutely not at this level!

"This is… the power of a spirit treasure… There is another expert inside the pagoda temple!"

Du Shou Gao could only come up with this possibility.

His willpower was surprising! Even though he had multiple injuries and was only a thin line between life and death, he supported his body with the sabre and stood up; he was like a man that would never fall down.

"No wonder why the little brat Feng Fei Yun won't come out! There is an expert protecting the pagoda temple."

The bewitching young man became more careful.

The two of them didn't know that Feng Fei Yun was carrying along a spirit treasure. In the end, the power of a spirit treasure was too great, yet its numbers were too few. A child from the fifth generation of the Feng family definitely would not possess one.

Even an expert like Du Shou Gao, with his status as the most talented of the Pinnacle Fate Ending Palace, could only carry a flawed spirit treasure.

The sabre in his hand was of spirit treasure ranking, but it had defects. The power was much greater than a pseudo-spirit treasure, but it was less than a true spirit treasure.

Feng Fei Yun definitely would not carry a spirit treasure, so the owner must be a different person. This person would most likely be the master of the pagoda temple.

Feng Fei Yun gained the protection of the pagoda temple's master, causing Du Shou Gao and the bewitching young man to be more cautious; they did not dare to act rashly.

The value of a spirit treasure was too great even for families to ignore face and kill each other for them. Unless it was absolutely necessary, Feng Fei Yun wouldn't take the Infinite Spirit Ring out to use it.

When he was hiding within the pagoda temple, Du Shou Gao and the young man couldn’t see clearly what was inside, so he used the spirit treasure to intimidate them.

“As long as they ‘refrain from throwing at the rat for fear of breaking the vases’, I will have a chance for survival!”

Feng Fei Yun now had a plan in his mind. He suddenly kowtowed on the ground, facing the roasted half of a chicken on the table next to the window, and he bowed his head, yelling:

“Thanks for predecessor’s chivalrous action; this junior truly appreciates it! What, predecessor says my aptitude is of genius level, so you want me to become your disciple? How do you have the nerves to ask this? What? Predecessor was the renowned Dao-master of death from three hundred years ago? This junior has heard of your great name! I heard that you used to dominate an era with famous battle achievements; even the palace master of the Pinnacle Fate Ending Palace was crucified by you on Mo Bei Cliff!”

Feng Fei Yun spoke with great earnest. His voice sometimes carried a sad lamenting feeling, and at times, it was brimming with passion.

Du Shou Gao originally wanted to try entering again to find out the truth because earlier, he only lost to the palm due to his own carelessness. However, after listening to Feng Fei Yun shouting for his father and mother, this caused the assassin to stop in his track. He didn’t dare to recklessly step forward.

Chapter 45 : Shrinking The Earth To An Inch, Moving A Thousand Li In A Foot

On the contrary, the red phoenix eyes of the bewitching young man came with a somewhat cynical glare, and he mumbled:

“Dao-master of death, you would come up with something like this. How could a Dao-master live in a pagoda temple; Feng Fei Yun, you’re boasting is way over the top!”

It seems like he understood Feng Fei Yun very well, and he didn’t believe there was really a peerless master in the pagoda temple. He slowly approached the pagoda temple without making a sound.

“Oh, no! It seems like this demonic man is really familiar with me, seeing through my trick!”

There was a sense of unrest in Feng Fei Yun’s mind, and then he gazed towards the blue door behind him. The door was engraved with lines of incantations that were surrounded by countless spider webs. It was apparent that no one had walked through the door for a long time.

However, earlier, Feng Fei Yun saw a monastic robe walking through it with his own eyes!

In the end, what was behind that door?

“Rustling!”

The soft footsteps outside was slowly approaching, and the bewitching young man seemed to be standing outside the window.

Feng Fei Yun no longer hesitated; he rushed forward, and he pushed on the stone doors with his two hands. Suddenly, the door opened.

“Rumble!”

This time, the opening noise of the door was extremely loud. The friction created from the stone door with the pagoda’s floor turned into a deafening

screech.

Inside the door was black as ink, and a chilling air blew directly on one's face.

The magical incantations started to move, and a faint light flashed; the light slowly disappeared into the walls.

Feng Fei Yun did not hesitate, he rushed in, but once he did, he instantly regretted it. When he wanted to turn back, it was too late; the stone doors had been closed.

A curved formation was engraved on the stone door like it was carved by a blade; it was too difficult to open this stone door.

It was pitch black in front of him, and he couldn't see his own fingers or anything else. Also, he couldn't hear any sound. Feng Fei Yun could only touch the wall and move forward.

This walk went on for two hours!

One has to know that the pagoda temple was not big. It would only take three minutes to do a full rotation, but Feng Fei Yun had been walking along this wall for two hours without reaching the stone exit. He felt a chill in his heart; it was as if he was, step by step, walking towards the depths of the abyss.

Ahead was still an eternal darkness; it was as if one will never see the light again!

Even though Feng Fei Yun was quite courageous, but, at this moment, he didn't dare to keep on moving forward. He turned around while still touching the wall to go back. As long as he could reach the stone door again, he could use the power of the spirit energy to blow away the door.

This current situation truly stirred fear in his heart.

He couldn't help but remember the blood-stained monastic robe. In retrospect, it seemed even more strange and ghastly; it was like it was standing behind his back, and the skeletal hand was reaching for him.

With that thought, Feng Fei Yun couldn't help but to speed up the pace. At this moment, Feng Fei Yun's heart became even more dejected because he had been walking the old path for around four hours; however, he couldn't get to the old

stone door.

The matter became increasingly strange, and it made him feel even more uneasy.

What the hell was this place?

Feng Fei Yun stopped moving; he didn't continue on because it was impossible to leave from here. It seemed as if he had been trapped in a secret ground. He was likely trapped inside a formation, and he was just walking around in circles.

"First Dark Origin Flame!"

Feng Fei Yun channeled his energy to his fingertip. He wanted to burn energy in order to illuminate his surroundings. However, even though he could feel the temperature of the flame in his finger, his eyes couldn't see any light even with the Heavenly Phoenix Gaze.

"Even the First Dark Origin Flame couldn't light up this space. It seems like there really is a formation here. Maybe the Second Dark Hell Flame would be able to illuminate this place?"

Difference spaces required a different rank of flame in order to light them up.

For example, the current life in this world, just ordinary firewood would be sufficient for lighting up. In other places where immortals gathered, only the First Dark Origin Flame would be able to illuminate those areas.

Of course, in this world existed other dangerous grounds and special spaces that could only be illuminated with the Second Dark Hell Flame.

There was also the bottom of the Avici in the legends. It was an endless night all year long, and only the Third Dark True Flame's light would be able to bring about rays of light in that place.

The level of bizarreness in this place greatly exceeded Feng Fei Yun's expectations.

"Infinite Spirit Ring!"

Feng Fei Yun unleashed a palm towards the wall. His thumb with the Infinite Spirit Ring activated a boundless source of energy, and suddenly flew forward.

“Bang!”

Feng Fei Yun felt as if he had hit a big mountain. The wall did not move one bit, but his hand was completely numb. If he didn’t have a persistent and powerful body, then that blow would have cut off his hand.

Even so, he was shaken, and he had to take a few steps back.

“Shatter!”

From under his feet, a broken sound came about like he had stepped on something.

Feng Fei Yun wanted to bend down in order to pick up the item, but an invisible power came over him. It caused him to uncontrollably float upward, higher and higher. It felt like it was impossible to hit the top of the pagoda temple.

“Return to where you came from! You don’t need to come here anymore!”

The ancient voice rang again!

In the midst of everything, Feng Fei Yun found that he could clearly see everything in the pagoda temple. There was only a monastic robe sitting in a meditative pose, surrounded by tracks of footsteps. There was also a rotten Buddhist bead that was crushed by someone’s foot.

“Could it be that I was only walking around this monastic robe in a circle?”

Not allowing Feng Fei Yun to think too much, the scenery in front of his eyes suddenly disappeared. A chilling wind came, causing him to shiver his whole body.

“Splash!”

His whole body fell into the water.

“Shrinking the earth to an inch, moving a thousand li in a foot.”

Feng Fei Yun climbed up from the water. In front of him was a surging river with trees on the riverbank, and a nightingale singing to the side; the sound was so pleasing.

This place was clearly not the pagoda temple!

This place was clearly void of Du Shou Gao and the bewitching young man's pursuit!

He was sent away by someone using a spirit technique to a location a few hundred li away. This place was the city protecting river of Violet Firmament Ancient City!

The spirit technique "shrinking the earth to an inch, moving a thousand li in a foot" could not be used by an ordinary person. Could that monastic robe be this powerful?

Feng Fei Yun became even more puzzled as he thought about it.

"Nine ancient willow trees, nine pagoda temples… What is hidden in that mansion? Could it be that I can only find the answer by meeting the master of the mansion?"

Once Feng Fei Yun's curiosity was piqued, then even ten Qilins wouldn't be enough to pull him back.

Feng Fei Yun returned to the Hidden Dragon Courtyard when it was the next day's morning.

"Feng Fei Yun, Little Sister Jian Xue didn't come back with you?"

Feng Ming curiously asked.

Feng Fei Yun had just entered his living area, and he met Feng Ming, who was practicing in the courtyard.

"Didn't she go to report to the main house about what happened yesterday? She should have returned by now."

Feng Fei Yun replied.

Feng Ming shook his head, and he said:

"Little Sister Jian Xue left yesterday after you were gone, and she never returned. The Feng family had already sent sixteen protectors to deal with the Hidden Dragon Courtyard situation. Little Sister Jian Xue should have returned together with them."

"…" Feng Fei Yun's eyebrows slightly puckered, his eyes showed an expression

of deep pondering.

Just then, a light footstep came from the outside!

“Creaking!”

The door was pushed opened, and Feng Jian Xue wearing a white robe had entered. When she saw Feng Fei Yun and Feng Ming together inside the pavilion, her beautiful face revealed a surprised expression; especially when she saw Fei Yun, she was taken aback for a few minutes.

“Wife, after a whole night, Wife didn’t return; where did you go?”

Fei Yun carefully observed Feng Jian Xue. Outside of the fatigue on her face, there was nothing else noticeable. Feng Fei Yun deliberately stared into her eyes. The dual pupil was still crystal clear and beautiful like the stars and the moon. At this moment, he dispelled the doubt in his mind regarding her.

A person’s facial features could be changed through the movement of the flesh, but one’s eyes absolutely could not be changed.

Feng Fei Yun had some suspicions that Jian Xue and the bewitching young man, who was pursuing him, was the same person; however, when he saw the dual pupils in Jian Xue’s eyes without any hidden secrets, he felt that he was too paranoid.

Feng Jian Xue said:

“I originally wanted to go to the main house of the Feng family yesterday, but, halfway through, I met a mad dog; it chased me the whole night.”

“Haha! What a coincidence; Little Sister only met one mad dog, but I met two of them. They chased me until I almost couldn’t call out for my father and mother anymore.”

Feng Fei Yun smilingly said.

“Don’t you want to know why the mad dog was chasing me?”

The anger in Feng Jian Xue’s heart was great, and even Feng Ming who was standing to the side could feel it. He smartly retreated to the far distance, afraid of being involved.

Feng Fei Yun asked:

“Why?”

“Because the mad dog originally wanted to chase you; however, because it felt your presence on my body, it chased me instead.”

Feng Jian Xue angrily said.

Feng Fei Yun’s heart jumped, he guessed who it was. He looked around for a little bit, and then he said:

“I’m afraid that it must be a female dog! Where is she right now?”

“Hmph! You call her a female dog, but isn’t that the same as admitting that you are a male dog; you both are indeed a bunch of dogs!”

It was apparent that Feng Jian Xue was angry not because she was chased by the other person for a whole night. She was angry because the damned Feng Fei Yun clearly called her his wife, but he was still teasing another woman.

She originally thought that Feng Fei Yun was the prodigal son turning back on the right path, but she didn’t think that he was still a playboy!

Chapter 46 : Mortal Life Cavern

“You were truly chased by her the whole night?”

Feng Fei Yun knew that Dong Fang Jing Yue had arrived at Violet Firmament Ancient City. With her cultivation and the Haotian Spirit Mirror, maybe she really noticed his presence on Feng Jian Xue’s body.

Feng Jian Xue said:

“You don’t trust my words?”

“Hehe! I simply don’t trust that you could escape from her grasp!”

Feng Fei Yun said.

Dong Fang Jing Yue’s cultivation was extremely high. She also has a spirit treasure in her hand; even Feng Fei Yun would have a difficult time escaping her grasp, not to mention Feng Jian Xue’s cultivation was weaker than him. How could she actually escape from Dong Fang Jing Yue?

Unless Feng Jian Xue was hiding her cultivation?

Feng Jian Xue’s eyes flashed a strange look, became silent for a moment, and then she answered:

“Even I didn’t believe that I could escape from her grasp, but I really did escape.”

This vague answer from her naturally was not the truth!

Feng Fei Yun naturally saw through it from the looks of her eyes, but he didn’t want to reveal it. He didn’t want to guess a woman’s heart; even if one tried to guess, they wouldn’t be able to. Then why would he bother give himself an unnecessary headache!

Feng Jian Xue obviously didn’t want to continue this topic, so she hurriedly asked:

“Weren’t you following Du Shou Gao? Any results?”

Feng Fei Yun laughed:

“If I actually caught up with Du Shou Gao, then I’m afraid I wouldn’t make it back here right now.”

“You truly didn’t catch up to him?”

“Of course not!”

Feng Fei Yun didn’t want her to know that he was chased by Du Shou Gao and the bewitching young man all around the city. Remembering the bewitching young man, Feng Fei Yun couldn’t help but to furrow his brows, and he asked:

“Did any heaven defying genius appear in the fifth generation of the Feng family?”

The cultivation of the bewitching young man was definitely not lower than Du Shou Gao by a large amount. This strength was greater than the Feng elders. If there was such a character within the fifth generation of the Feng family, he wouldn’t be able to stay unknown.

Feng Jian Xue didn’t answer yet, but Feng Ming immediately stole the words:

“I heard the fifth generation of the Feng family actually has a few heaven defying geniuses; however, they are all located at extremely secret locations in order to break through to an ever higher rank. They are truly the most gifted of the younger generation of the Feng family. Their cultivation is even higher than people like Feng Yu; it is just that they haven’t shown themselves before, and they don’t want others to know.”

Feng Jian Xue added:

“I also heard of a related rumor; three years ago, the upper echelon of the Feng family recalled all of the real geniuses of the fifth generation, and they used a large amount of spirit medicine in order to groom them. They were also allowed to practice the top methods. Even a few ancestors wanted to personally teach them to become the future pillars of the Feng family.”

There was no wall that a breeze couldn’t pass through in this world; even though this matter was done secretly, there were still rumours escaping.

Feng Fei Yun nodded his head, and he said:

“This is right. A true grand clan would definitely groom a few absolutely

brilliant geniuses, not these mediocre people.”

So the absolutely brilliant geniuses were already summoned; could the bewitching young man be one of these people?

Feng Jian Xue coldly scowled, and she said:

“No matter how great those heavenly defying talents are, what does it have to do with you? With your little bit of capability, you would be eliminated in the first round of the Hidden Dragon War. You best use your time to think about how to deal with that female dog. If she chases you all the way here, I’m afraid there will be quite a few people bitten to death by her!”

Finished saying these words, she turned around and went inside. A “bang” sound occurred as the door closed.

Her anger hasn’t subsided!

Feng Fei Yun stood there in a daze, gently rubbed his neck, and then he laughed loudly:

“If there is such a beautiful female dog in this world like her, then even if she bits me twice, I would still be very happy!”

“Bang!”

A chair flew out from the window and almost smashed Feng Fei Yun in the head. It was fortunate that he dodged in time, otherwise there would be blood gushing from his head.

“Too violent, too violent!”

Even though Jian Xue’s words were hard to listen to, they had some truths. If Dong Fang Jing Yue actually came to the Hidden Dragon Courtyard, then the destruction would be even higher compared to Du Shou Gao.

When that time comes, even if Feng Fei Yun didn’t want to become famous, it would be a difficult matter!

“The sky above the Hidden Dragon Courtyard has a formation ready; even the Haotian Spirit Mirror wouldn’t necessarily be able to find me. As long as I don’t leave the Hidden Dragon Courtyard, then that damned grandma Dong Fang Jing Yue will definitely not be able to find me!”

Feng Fei Yun didn’t want to think too much; he only wanted to begin analyzing the bamboo block really thoroughly.

The bamboo block was around a palm long, with two fingers width. It was made from a jade bamboo from the Western Region. The quality of the wood was extremely hard; even an ordinary steel blade wouldn’t be able to cut it.

After feeling it with his hand, he found that it was a bit cold and quite smooth; it was like he was holding a precious jade.

There were mysterious and strange engravings on the bamboo block; it was as if it was a record of a corner of some mountains and rivers. Because the bamboo block was too small, one couldn’t get a full panoramic view of these mountains and rivers; thus, it was naturally difficult to tell where this place was located.

“Mortal Life Cavern!”

The middle of the bamboo block was inscribed with these words; each word was as small as a fly’s leg. Without meticulous observation, it would be difficult to find these four small prints.

These words were “Mortal Life Cavern!”

Next to the words was a dot painted by red ink; it seemed to be the location of the Mortal Life Cavern.

‘Rumor has it that Feng Yu’s talents were low; even the foundation for cultivation was missing, but he found the hidden ground inside the Jing Huan Mountain, obtained a drop of spirit spring water, and he refined his bones and body. Not only did his talents become exceptional, but his cultivation also increased by leaps and bounds. Could that secret ground be the Mortal Life Cavern engraved on this bamboo block?’

Feng Fei Yun’s thoughts increasingly expanded, and he came up with many things. Finally, he felt that this conclusion was quite rational.

“If the engraving on this bamboo block is indeed the Jing Huan Mountain, then this proves the Mortal Life Cavern’s existence.”

Feng Fei Yun was ecstatic. One had to know that spirit spring water could be compared to any spirit medicine and treasure; it could regenerate an amputated

arm, refine the bones, and increase one's cultivation.

Feng Fei Yun's cultivation was the Immortal Phoenix Physique; if he could obtain a drop of spirit spring water, then his speed would dramatically accelerate. If he could reach the third level of Blood Purification, then his cultivation would become exceedingly high. At that point, he naturally wouldn't be afraid of Du Shou Gao or the bewitching young man.

When Feng Yu found the spirit spring water, his body was of an ordinary mortal. At most, he could only digest one drop of spirit spring water. Any more and his body would surely burst into death.

If this bamboo block really engraved the location of the Mortal Life Cavern, then Feng Yu definitely was waiting until his cultivation was stronger; he would then return to use more spirit spring water to refine his body. He didn't expect for the news to leak, and he invited a calamity of death instead.

Feng Fei Yun roughly guessed the cause and effect in this matter, but it was simply a conjecture. In the end, he couldn't verify whether the bamboo block's engravings were truly the location of the Jing Huan Mountain or not.

"Bang!"

Suddenly, the main door was kicked away by someone. Feng Jian Xue angrily entered the room, and she mildly shouted:

"Feng Fei Yun! You and the female dog, what the hell is going on?"

Feng Jian Xue originally went back to her room to meditate; however, the more she thought about the matter, the angrier she became. In the end, she couldn't hold back, and she immediately rushed over, wanting to make this matter clear.

If this brat Feng Fei Yun had sworn to change completely, then how could he go to places to fondle the flowers and trample the grass. If she didn't ask and reach a clear conclusion, then she couldn't meditate in peace.

Feng Fei Yun was researching the bamboo block, but she suddenly rushed in. He quickly hid the bamboo block in his hand into his sleeve.

Feng Fei Yun awkwardly coughed twice, and he said:

"Cough cough! Wife, this matter… swearing at someone else is not a good

habit!”

Feng Jian Xue’s exquisite jade nose knitted, and her lips gently pouted. She went straight to Feng Fei Yun, who was standing next to the bed, looked at his robe’s sleeves, then grabbed it, and she said:

“What did you just hide in the sleeve?”

“Shit, you even saw that?”

Feng Fei Yun thought that he didn’t leave any trace, but he didn’t think she had seen through it.

Feng Jian Xue’s age wasn’t high, plus her figure was slender, but she was not a nice girl. She directly gripped Feng Fei Yun’s hand, and then her tiny hands immediately probed his sleeves.

Her hands were warm and smooth. The contact between their hands created a little electric shock, causing a charming romantic feeling.

Fei Yun went into a daze, causing his head to imagine vivid thoughts!

Even though he really liked the feeling, Feng Fei Yun began to struggle; it was as if he was being **** by her, and he shockingly exclaimed:

“We can’t! Wife ah, you touching me is tickling me too much!”

Feng Jian Xue also felt that something was strangely wrong, and her face went red with shame. She quickly let go of his hand, and she said:

“Then you take it out yourself, I won’t touch anymore!”

But after these words came out, she immediately regretted it. These words were truly too stimulating to others.

Feng Fei Yun happily laughed:

“This kind of treasure, I’m not afraid to take it out! No, no… don’t hit me, I’ll take it out, isn’t it fine if I just take it out! Too violent, way too violent!”

Feng Jian Xue was still only a little girl around the age of fourteen, and she was only younger than Feng Fei Yun by three days. Moreover, since the two youths had been together, they could be considered green plums and hobby-horse and innocent young playmates.

Feng Fei Yun was quite at ease with her, plus Feng Jian Xue was living in Violet Firmament Ancient City all year around, thus, she was familiar with the surrounding areas. Maybe she could recognize the location on this bamboo block.

If the bamboo block truly has the location with spirit spring water, Feng Fei Yun wouldn’t mind giving her two drops.

Chapter 47 : Journey Begins

On top of the bamboo block was an outline of a ravenous path; it was like a mountain painting or a river diagram. It could also be a forbidden valley or a dangerous precipice. The outline was a primitive ground, giving others a feel of endless mystery.

Feng Jian Xue observed the bamboo block meticulously. Her beautiful eyes essentially didn't move, as if it was silently remembering the contours of the map, but her eyebrows ruffled from time to time. It was clear to see that the engravings on top of the block were too complicated, and it was hard to be completely memorized with a human's brain.

"Does Little Sister know such a place around Violet Firmament Ancient City?"

Feng Fei Yun stared intensely into her eyes as if he wanted to find something within.

The more she recalled the engravings on the bamboo block, the more her head started to spin; it was as if it wanted to burst. In the end, she could only forget about it, and she didn't dare to look any longer.

The engravings on top absolutely could not be memorized in one's head!

"On this bamboo block is recorded many strange mountains and cliffs as well as rivers and valleys; however, they are rather similar to the Jing Huan Mountain eight hundred miles away. The Jing Huan Mountain is ancient and primitive, spanning across a thousand miles, and the bamboo block only recorded a corner of it. To find this corner in the deep forest and mountains would be harder than flying to the heavens."

Feng Jian Xue continued:

"Plus, it is only my guess that it could be the ancient Jing Huan Mountain. I essentially cannot be certain that the map on the bamboo block is at this place. In the end, this world is vast, and it does not only have this corner of the Jing Huan Mountain."

Feng Fei Yun didn't worry too much. His heart had already decided that this

was definitely the Jing Huan Mountain without a doubt. He took back the bamboo block, placed it back to his chest, and he said:

“In what direction from Violet Firmament Ancient City is the Jing Huan Mountain?”

“The northwest of the town called Dragon Stone.”

Feng Jian Xue said:

“Will you go to the Jing Huan Mountain now?”

“How could I? That damned grandma Dong Fang Jing Yue is still inside Violet Firmament Ancient City. If I leave the Hidden Dragon Courtyard, she will definitely take notice. It would be a miracle if I didn’t die in her hands then. Last night, I was chased by two crazy dogs, and my arms and legs are tired. Right now, I need to get a good night’s rest. Wife ah, does Wife want to sleep together with me?”

Feng Fei Yun carefully looked at the long and slender legs of Feng Jian Xue. Even the white robes couldn’t hide her beautiful body. Without needing to touch, one could be sure that these pair of jade legs were definitely quite soft.

Feng Fei Yun’s eyes revealed a low-life expression, and he moved from her legs to the front of her chest. It was indeed so smooth and round; truly developed better than the little witchcraft goddess, Xiao Yu Er. This made him sigh with sorrow. This was the cultivation world, and all men had to refine their bodies; could it be that all women with large breasts and slender bodies were not the same?

Feng Jian Xue earlier had been annoyed by Feng Fei Yun’s lecherous eyes, and she wanted to rush over and claw them out; however, if she rushed over to punish him, she was afraid that not only would she not be able to claw them out, but he might retaliate on the bed.

“So she is Dong Fang Jing Yue!”

Feng Jian Xue said.

Feng Fei Yun was already lying on the bed, and he seemed to really want to go to sleep. After he covered his body with the blanket, he lifted his head and

teasingly said:

“Wife ah, this is also a good day of a good month; if you really don’t want to leave, then you can happily stay here. I will definitely give Wife an unforgettable morning!”

Feng Jian Xue coldly glared at him, turned around, and she left, saying:

“How about you go find miss Dong Fang Jing Yue and experience an unforgettable morning with her, ah!”

“Bam!”

The door was closed, and Feng Jian Xue’s footsteps became further and further away.

“The truth is, I actually do want to, but she doesn’t!”

Feng Fei Yun was laughing and yelling really loudly like he was afraid that Feng Jian Xue wouldn’t be able to hear him.

Feng Jian Xue indeed had gone very far, even her footsteps have disappeared.

The courtyard quickly regained its tranquility. Not too long after, a shadow of a person sneaked out from the room, climbed over the wall, and followed a deserted old pathway to the wall of the Hidden Dragon Courtyard.

This person was naturally Feng Fei Yun!

Once he knew that the engravings on the bamboo block was the location of the Jing Huan Mountain, he could no longer remain calm. Even if he had to take a risk of Dong Fang Jing Yue’s pursuit, he still definitely wanted to find the Mortal Life Cavern.

As long as he could obtain the spirit spring water, his cultivation would increase. Then, even if the world was vast, there would always be a place for him.

“This Little Girl Jian Xue was really all big chest and no brain, so she easily let me go. Beautiful women, no brain, ah!”

Feng Fei Yun lamented with two sentences, leapt over the blue stone wall of the Hidden Dragon Courtyard, and he fell on a maple tree on the broad street.

The Hidden Dragon Courtyard was located in the far outer city. It didn't have bustling bazaars in the near vicinity. Even though the road was wide and there weren't that many pedestrians, there were bronze ancient heavenly mountain deer carriages stopping in the middle of the street.

An excellent mountain deer! Its four hooves were adorned with bronze horse shoes, and its back was covered by silver scales. With a thick chain around the size of an arm around its neck, the ancient carriage, along with its eight large wheels, was pulled by it.

The fiery red maple leafs were blown by the wind and were falling down to the grand street in swirls.

As the ancient bronze mountain deer carriage was stopped next to the maple tree; the mountain deer sneezed, and a blue smoke came out from its nostrils.

"Carriage driver, how much money is needed to get to Dragon Stone Town?"

Feng Fei Yun approached, and he gently rubbed the back of the mountain deer; he thought that this was a really excellent beast.

This type of bronze mountain deer carriage was not rare in Violet Firmament Ancient City. As long as the price was a little bit high, then the carriage driver would take you to any place you want.

"That is wanting to leave the city then!"

A voice from the ancient bronze carriage came out.

"Are you afraid that I cannot pay the price?"

Feng Fei Yun smilingly said; however, his smile quickly disappeared because the voice of the carriage driver was really familiar.

"I'm afraid that you will leave the city to do bad things!"

Feng Jian Xue came out from the bronze ancient carriage, and she sat at the position of the carriage driver. She held the iron chains, that were pierced through the nose of the mountain deer, in her hands. Her face was accompanied by a victorious smile; the smile was too beautiful.

She was naturally very pretty; she has a beautiful face, beautiful eyes, beautiful hands, and her legs were of course beautiful. She was especially beautiful when

she bloomed such a smile; it would simply lure the souls out of other people.

It was unknown what Feng Fei Yun was daydreaming about, under this situation, while he watched her sentimental and fascinating smile. It made his heart slightly jump; at this moment, he felt that he would never forget this smile for the rest of his life.

It was just like when a man and woman fell in love at first sight; emotional feelings were just a normal thing!

“What are you looking at, want to fight?”

There were black lines over the forehead of Feng Jian Xue because she started to think that this Feng Fei Yun, with a belly full of evil tricks, was thinking of some crooked things.

“Cough cough! This… Where does Little Sister Jian Xue want to go?”

It was a rare moment where Feng Fei Yun wasn’t in the mood to tease her, and he didn’t call her ‘wife’ either!

Feng Jian Xue slightly tilted her tiny head; while her fingers were playing with her air, she cutely blinked and smiled:

“I knew you wanted to go to Jing Huan Mountain, so I rented this bronze ancient mountain deer carriage and waited for you. Look, I only had to wait the time you would need to brew a tea pot, and you already found your way here.”

This time, it was Feng Fei Yun’s turn to have black lines on his forehead. He was shocked; it seemed that in this world, there were also some women that were not “lanterns without oil.”

Only the biggest fool in the world would consider this girl here a fool!

Even though this Little Girl Feng Jian Xue looked like someone with a big chest and no brain, her mind was quite bright; one or two sentences definitely wouldn’t fool her.

Feng Fei Yun said:

“The truth is… I never thought about going to Jing Huan Mountain.”

Going with a girl to a mountain to treasure hunt was the same as going to a

brothel to enjoy the beautiful spring scenery. The biggest difference was that one person didn't have to pay while the other person did.

Feng Fei Yun didn't want to bring her along. In the end, with a lone man and woman entering the deep jungle, it would be hard to prevent certain unexpected events. Feng Fei Yun's purpose was to find and explore the Mortal Life Immortal Cavern, not explore her immortal cavern.

"Oh? But you just said that you wanted to go to Dragon Stone Town, earlier?"

Feng Jian Xue's eyes narrowed into a crescent moon shape, and her eyebrows gently fluttered. She completely restrained all of the strength in her body, and, at this moment, she seemed like a pitiful kitten hoping that Feng Fei Yun would bring her along on the trip.

Feng Fei Yun felt a headache, and he said:

"Jian Xue, it is not like I don't want to bring Little Sister along, but the truth is that this trip is too dangerous. I heard that night time at Jing Huan Mountain is definitely not safe. There are bloody corpses crawling from their graves to take a stroll, there are female ghosts singing under the moonlight, and then there are also skeletons banding together to form a mountain camp specializing in capturing girls with beautiful figures to boil and eat them alive. This type of place, it is better if you don't go!"

Feng Fei Yun knew that since childhood, Feng Jian Xue had always been scared of ghosts, so he specifically said these things to scare her.

"That's fine; however, if you go without bringing me along, then I will post notices throughout the city saying that there is a treasure in the Jing Huan Mountain. Then all of the experts of Violet Firmament Ancient City will head towards Jing Huan Mountain. Even if you don't bring me along, I can still go with everyone then to that place."

Feng Jian Xue was still pretending to be like a powerless kitten; she put on a sweet smile. She hung on the ancient bronze carriage with her slender legs while she gently waved at Little Sister Zi Luo in the adjacent house.

The more she pretended to be harmless, the worse Feng Fei Yun's headache became.

“Okay then! Little Sister can go; however, if you are frightened to tears, don’t blame me then.”

Feng Fei Yun stepped on the foothold, and then he jumped inside the bronze ancient mountain deer carriage. If he couldn’t leave her behind, then he could only take her along.

Her cultivation wasn’t bad; Feng Fei Yun wasn’t afraid that she would get in the way, then. He was simply curious as to why she really wanted to go along with him.

“Haha! Then we will go to Jing Huan Mountain right now, ah!”

There was a strange smile on Feng Jian Xue’s face.

“We have to go quickly! I feel that this trip will not be a calm one!”

Feng Fei Yun had some concerns in his mind. One had to know that both Du Shou Gao and the bewitching young man had both seen the bamboo block. With their capabilities, they would definitely figure out that the engravings on the block was Jing Huan Mountain. Even though they couldn’t record the exact map outlines, they were likely to wait at Dragon Stone Town.

Dragon Stone Town must be crossed before going into Jing Huan Mountain!

Chapter 48 : Dragon Stone Town

A heavenly deer pulled the eight wheeled bronze ancient carriage like a courageous assault team; they quickly left Violet Firmament Ancient City, and they headed towards the northwest at a speed that caused the road-side leafs to start flying.

The Hidden Dragon War and the Military Strategy Iron Council were drawing near, and the heavenly defying geniuses of the fifth generation would soon show themselves. Once they appeared, they would surely shock the whole world.

If Fei Yun wanted to shine amongst these natural talents and open a new road for himself, then he had to seize this opportunity and to increase his cultivation.

This trip to Jing Huan Mountain was imminent!

Dragon Stone Town was located in a vast wilderness to the northwest, close to Jing Huan Mountain. This was the only small town within a radius of a few hundred miles. Because Jing Huan Mountain had a lot of spirit stones and mineral veins, Dragon Stone Town became the transfer station; thus, this small town was quite well-known at Violet Firmament Ancient City.

Many practitioners knew about the existence of this small town.

When Feng Fei Yun arrived at Dragon Stone Town, the night curtain had already fell. The sound of the wheels rolling on the small street broke the serenity of the small town.

The bronze ancient carriage had just come to a complete stop. A boy wearing a melon hat quickly came to greet them, and he ingratiatingly smiled.

“Esteemed guest wants to visit Jing Huan Mountain? Right now, the sky is dark, and the mountain is very dangerous. If you aren’t going right now, you should go to our White Horse Inn to rest for the night; it would be much safer to go with the party tomorrow.”

The little boy had seen numerous groups that have beautiful men and women like Feng Fei Yun and Feng Jian Xue. They seemed to be the younger generation of a clan coming to patrol the mines or to train in Jing Huan Mountain. They

could also be some disciples from an immortal sect coming to the mountains to find medicines and magical treasures.

These types of guests were always quite generous because they weren't short on money.

Feng Fei Yun glanced left and right, and they analyzed the entire small town to each end; this even included the pitch black mountains in the far distance. He felt a cold breeze with a pine tree scent from the mountains, giving others a comfortable feeling.

"Little Brother, why is the night in Dragon Stone Town so desolate with not even an oil lamp light around?"

Feng Fei Yun smelled that something was unusual around here.

It just became night time. Even if the small town didn't like loud commotions, it still shouldn't be lacking in lit up oil lamps.

The little boy seemed to be accustomed to such strange matters. He lowered his voice, and he whispered:

"I heard that recently the Yin Gou family had dug up an ominous item from the mines."

Within Jing Huan Mountain, there were many spirit stone caverns. The clans and immortal sects all have their own mines for extraction in the mountains and share the resources with each other.

Jing Huan Mountain was like an Immortal Spirit Mountain. This used to be the burial ground of many powerful cultivators. The ancestral burial grounds of many grand families of Violet Firmament Ancient City were all situated in this mountain.

The remains of cultivators, because of cultivation, had long become something different from ordinary people. The transformation was great, and this change was usually referred to as "Human Transformation."

After death, they would be buried in a special place. These locations would give birth to "Earth Transformation."

When "Human Transformation" and "Earth Transformation" resonated

together, the remains buried under the earth would also undergo changes. These changes were quite complex, and the end results were usually different.

For those that came back from the dead were, it was called “Rebirth Transformation.”

For those who became vicious blood corpses, it was called “Corpse Transformation.”

If the surrounding aura condensed and change the atmosphere of an area, it turned into a murderous forbidden ground; this was called “Ominous Transformation.”

*** ***

Anyway, there were many different kind of transformations. Each would frighten the secular world; the Jing Huan Mountain, itself, had underwent an Earth Transformation. When the ancestors of the great families died from old age, they would be buried in these kinds of places; they hoped that they could borrow the power of these lands in order to come back from the dead.

However, many thousand years had passed, and the dead coming back to life lessened in number. On the contrary, the number of vicious evil corpses that appeared were too numerous to count.

Within the eight hundred mile radius of Jing Huan Mountain, there had never been true serenity. Even during the day time, meeting an old man’s corpse playing chess was completely plausible.

“What ominous thing?”

Feng Fei Yun’s curiosity rose.

The topic seemed to be taboo for the boy, so he didn’t want to say many words; however, after Feng Fei Yun threw him a gold coin, his hesitation was long gone.

“In recent days, I heard that the Yin Gou family dug out a basket of bloody mud from their mines, and, within the same day, many people mysteriously died. No one else dared to continue digging until several days later. When a big character from the Yin Gou family came, then the digging started again. As for

what they dug out later… this is not known.”

The boy was very careful; there were many things he didn’t dare to say as he was afraid that he would offend an ominous thing.

“Clank!”

Feng Fei Yun once again pulled out a handful of gold coins and stuffed it into the boy’s hand.

The boy was ecstatic; he thought to himself that he had met a gold mine, and he continued:

“I have a distant relative that works as a record keeper for the mines. He said that yesterday, an ancient site was dug out from the mines. It appeared to be a temple hidden in the ground a few thousand years ago. Inside the temple were the bodies of many ancient monks. These corpses underwent Corpse Transformation, and they continuously chanted every night. When the moon appeared in the night time, these monk corpses become strangely crazy; they wail and ferociously roar while they stare at the sky. Some speculated that they were monks who suffered unjustly deaths; thus, the hateful sentiment in their hearts remained even after many thousands of years.”

Hearing such a strange matter, Feng Jian Xue had soon been frightened till her face was blue, and her petite and cute body involuntarily inched closer to Feng Fei Yun.

The dead was the thing Feng Fei Yun was least afraid of, and he said:

“Even so, the corpses of the monks should be trapped in the mine; there is no reason for the townspeople to be afraid, right?”

The boy also became a bit frightened, and he said:

“Before, the grand characters of the Yin Gou family combined their strength to seal the mines, but my cousin uncle said that, before the sealing, three ancient monk corpses escaped outside of it. No one knows where they are at the moment, and they could have even possibly ran to Dragon Stone Town.”

“Howl!”

A howl from a wolf came from the distance; it echoed through the night sky,

and it carried along an austere air.

Even though Feng Jian Xue's cultivation was not ordinary, she was truly timid. She couldn't help but to grab Feng Fei Yun's wrist, and she almost buried her head into his shoulder.

Feng Fei Yun stroked his chin, and he said:

"Wasn't it your distant cousin?"

The boy was a bit dumbfounded, and then he embarrassingly smiled:

"The truth is, both my distant cousin and cousin uncle are both working at the same mine!"

Feng Fei Yun didn't care whether the stories of this boy were true or if they were only a means of soliciting customers. However, it really was no longer early, and he was not familiar with Jing Huan Mountain. At this time, he would dare to go into the mountain, but Feng Jian Xue definitely wouldn't be able to.

Then for the time being, he had to spend a night at Dragon Stone Town and hope that Du Shou Gao and the bewitching young man wouldn't catch up so quickly.

The White Horse Inn was one of the three inns at Dragon Stone Town. Even though it was not palatial, it was still vast and quiet.

After this boy led Feng Fei Yun and Feng Jian Xue into the inn, he quickly shut the main door and locked the iron locket on the door as well like he was really afraid that the ancient monk corpses would come in at night.

Even though it was pitch black outside the inn, the inside was illuminated with a bronze oil lamps. The windows were pinned by wooden panels, so the outside couldn't see any light.

Seeing this, Feng Fei Yun, who was originally skeptical, became more trusting.

There were many guests inside the inn, many of them brought along numerous magical treasures. The majority of them were only at the early Spirit Realm, but the ordinary martial arts experts wouldn't be able to compare to them.

"Even though Jing Huan Mountain has many weird phenomenons and the danger is extremely high, but there are many rare medicines; with good luck, one

could even find ores for crafting. Because of this reason, each year, many cultivators from the four directions will come to the mountains. The majority of these people all spend the night at our White Horse Inn. So, esteemed guests, you can rest assured; our place is definitely not a Black Inn, and your life and properties are all safeguarded."

The boy respectfully said to Feng Fei Yun while he bowed his head.

"This is not necessarily true; why do I have this feeling that unfriendly gazes are heading over here?"

Feng Fei Yun asked.

When Feng Fei Yun and Feng Jian Xue entered the White Horse Inn, they attracted the gazes of everyone inside. Even though a group of beautiful men and women was not rare, but a girl as beautiful as Feng Jian Xue was extremely uncommon. This shook the spirits of the cultivators who lived all year around licking the blood on their blades.

In this small town near the mountains, this was a situation of the far remote mountains distancing itself from the Emperor. Even if anyone commits immoral and unlawful deeds, no one could enforce the laws. Several bearded powerful men didn't even care to hide the beastly intent in their eyes. They licked their lips, and they were eager to try their luck.

This was like a wolf that had just experienced the winter and suddenly saw a delicious lamb; this kind of alluring temptation couldn't be suppressed by reason.

Little Girl Feng Jian Xue, at this moment, was pretending to be a timid and pitiful person; she deliberately stuck out her tongue in a cute manner while she cowardly hid behind Feng Fei Yun's back. It was as if she was really afraid of associating with these vicious men.

Not mentioning the cultivators inside the inn, even Feng Fei Yun was set aflame by her. If he didn't know her true nature, then he would have viewed her as a pure and innocent lou li, bringing her to a private place to show her the "big golden carp."

Chapter 49 : Don’t Be Afraid, I Am Here

“As they say, deep in the mountains there is solitude; would little miss like to accompany us brothers for a drink? Haha!”

A yellow bearded big man with a large bowl of alcohol in his hand directly approached Feng Jian Xue. His big eyes were the size of a copper bells, and he stared at her with lust; it was as if he couldn’t get enough.

Feng Jian Xue, standing behind Feng Fei Yun, turned her head away, seemingly a bit afraid.

This made the big rugged men laugh even more. Two of them came and surrounded her, and he gave her a bowl to drink.

Although Feng Fei Yun knew that this was part of her plans; however, in front of everyone here, they all thought that Feng Jian Xue was his woman. If his woman was teased in front of everyone, and he remained indifferent, others would look down upon him.

“Cough cough! Everyone… She is my wife. Do you all know what the consequence of giving my wife a drink would be?”

Feng Fei Yun said.

The three rugged bearded men seemed to just now notice him, and they all glared at him with hostility and an evil smile.

The three of them were all at the early stages of Spirit Realm. On their muscular arms were heavy black steel gauntlets with a touch of forest camouflage. Every year, they escorted spirit metal, and traveled in the dangerous mountains and rivers. Fierce beasts and evil birds could be killed with their bare hands. They naturally knew their looks would be frightening to the beautiful young teens.

“Haha! What kind of consequence?”

One of them reached for Feng Fei Yun’s throat.

“Bang Bang!”

No one saw what happened. The rugged man immediately flew and crashing into a corner wall; he flew out of the inn, and he was swallowed by darkness.

Feng Fei Yun was still standing perfectly straight; it was as if he didn't move at all from beginning to end. He arched his head up high, and he revealed a majestic pose.

The remaining two rugged men and the other practitioner guests became dazed. Even though they didn't know what exactly happened, they knew that they had met an expert.

This young man was not easy to mess with!

The inn instantly became silent, and everyone's eyes were focused on Feng Fei Yun. Many were secretly guessing his identity. With such an extraordinary cultivation, he must be a young genius from a grand clan.

"Whoosh whoosh!"

The wall that was destroyed by the rugged man earlier became a huge hole and a cold wind blew in, causing everyone to feel the coolness.

"Ahh!"

A shrill and miserable scream came from the outside. This voice was mixed with horror, causing listeners to feel their hairs standing on ends.

However, this scream flared up and then immediately became silent; it was like something had bit his neck, and he couldn't make any other sounds.

"This is the voice of Li San!"

The two rugged men that were surrounding Fei Yun left and right realized that the miserable scream was from the man knocked out of the inn by Fei Yun earlier.

What terrible thing did he see in the end?

Right now, the night curtain had completely fell down; Dragon Stone Town recently had not been calm. Even though the two rugged men were awkwardly huge, they were the careful type. They took down the two Goose Feather Grand Sabers, weighing one hundred jin each that were hanging from the wall, and they then rushed to the outside through the broken wall.

“Thump thump!”

There were sounds of metals colliding, and then there were two miserable screeches; silence came again.

There were experts in the inn that wanted to use the Thousand Miles All-Seeing Eyes to see the events outside clearly, but, no matter how much they stared, it was only a pitch black scene without boundary; it was as if it wanted to devour the souls of people.

The three rugged men of the early Spirit Realm continuously disappeared in the night’s curtain, creating an eery atmosphere, suffocating the spectators.

At this moment, everyone inside the White Horse Inn was frightened. Someone quietly whispered:

“I heard recently there was an ominous thing dug out from Jing Huan Mountain. There were some unclean things that made it outside…”

“Don’t speak nonsense!”

Someone reprimanded. It was apparent that this was a taboo matter.

This time, Feng Jian Xue was actually scared; she timidly said:

“From your perspective… Are there really monk’s corpses that eat humans?”

Two flames arose from Feng Fei Yun’s eyes. He channeled his spirit energy into his pupils, and he activated the Heavenly Phoenix Gaze. Even the walls of the inn were seen through; he looked towards the infinite darkness.

A corpse stench from the far distance was blown in, carrying a strong decomposed corpse smell that caused the aura of the Heavenly Phoenix Gaze to be shattered.

The Heavenly Phoenix Gaze only managed to get one glance before it was instantly destroyed by the corpse aura!

Even though it was only a glimpse, he saw a scene that would frighten the souls of others. The eyes of the three rugged men were hollowed out by something, and their blood was sucked dry; it was as if the three were dried corpses taking a stroll outside of the inn.

It was like there was an unknown creature controlling their bodies!

“Oh heavens! Could this be the Corpse Controlling Technique of the Western Regions Prefecture?”

This thought suddenly came up in Fei Yun’s mind, but it was quickly extinguished. If it was really a Corpse Controlling Technique’s user killing them, they wouldn’t take out their eyes or drink their blood.

Then what the heck is this demonic thing?

“Bang!”

Not giving him time to think too much, a rugged man rushed in from the broken hole in the wall. His whole body was stained by blood, and he had hollowed out eye sockets. The blood in his body was sucked dry by an unknown creature, leaving behind only dry black flesh.

He couldn’t have become any more dead. He was akin to an apparition solder, and he headed straight towards a middle-aged man in the inn.

The middle-aged man’s cultivation was at the intermediate Spirit Realm level, and his reaction was very fast. In a flash, he took out a battle sword from his back, and, with both of his hands, he unleashed a powerful strike.

The strike’s destructiveness was quite huge; the blade broke the air, creating a sharp wind sound.

“Thump!”

However, this sword struck the head of the dried man like it was hitting a layer of steel. A sound of metal hitting steel resounded as large sparks were emitted.

It was enough to crush a ten thousand jin boulder, but it couldn’t cut through the flesh of the dried creature!

The middle-aged man became extremely frightened as this matter was too strange! The rugged man was only of the early Spirit Realm level when he was alive. How come after death, his head became as hard as a diamond? Could it be that within that short amount of time, his corpse was already refined by someone else?

“Boom!”

The power of the dried corpse increased an unknown amount of times, and its hand immediately knocked away the battle sword from the middle-aged man's hand. The moment the sword reached the floor, the corpse immediately grabbed the man's waist.

"Crack!"

The sound of broken bones appeared!

The upper body and lower body of the middle-aged man split apart!

The stench of blood permeated the air; flesh and blood was everywhere, driving people to near unconsciousness!

"Oh god! What the hell is this monster? Could it be that we're running into a person from the Corpse Controlling Cavern?"

A cultivator, frightened by the scene ahead, bellowed.

"Everyone has to fight this monster together, otherwise, all of us will die… Ahhhh…"

An older man wanted to organize everyone together to kill the dried rugged man; however, he was only able to say half the sentence when the second dried man had rushed in and tore him into two pieces with its steel-like hands.

"Poof!"

The dried man opened its mouth, and he started eating the body and drinking the blood; it was as if it was enjoying a delicious meal!

Feng Jian Xue almost vomited from seeing the scene. She hid in a corner while she shivered all over. Her beautiful face, capable of toppling a city, was as pale as a dead person in a coffin.

"Watch out!"

Feng Fei Yun's ears moved slightly, and then he quickly rushed forward and grabbed her slender waist with his two hands, lifting her off the ground.

"Bang!"

Right after the two rolled to the side, the wall Jian Xue was at earlier was shattered by another dried corpse, destroying the stone table on the ground as

well.

If earlier Feng Fei Yun didn't throw her to the floor, then she would have been slapped into smithereens by this dried man.

"I-I'm… so… afraid!"

Feng Jian Xue hugged Feng Fei Yun's neck tightly, and she buried her head into his chest. Her voice was trembling. She was frightened to tears.

Even though her cultivation was extraordinary, she was only a fourteen year old little girl. Essentially, she couldn't compare to someone that had lived for two lives like Feng Fei Yun. Her mind was relatively weak, so, when she encountered such a bizarre situation, it was natural that she would be scared into confusion and fear.

It was a visceral type of fear; she couldn't pretend even if she tried.

Not only Feng Jian Xue, but, when the three corpses invaded the inn, everyone who were laughing cheerfully earlier had been frightened to the point of trembling with their whole bodies. Only three or five people were able to remain calm.

Feng Fei Yun gently hugged her, and he stroke her silky black hair with his fingers. He kept her in his arms, and he said:

"Don't be afraid, I am here!"

Chapter 50 : Master

The three rugged men became three mysterious ancient corpses – they were extremely powerful and invulnerable to weapons. No one knew what exactly happened to them, but it was even more terrible than just Corpse Transformation.

“Bam!”

One dried corpse caught a young female cultivator, and it opened its mouth to bite her throat. The strong smell of blood permeated the air. He swallowed all of it into his throat while she issued a “gurgling” sound.

“Bang!”

Once the blood in her body had been completely drunk, he ruthlessly threw her body to the ground.

The dried corpse went on to find a new target to make his move!

The practitioner guests inside the White Horse Inn were not few in number, around forty to fifty people, but at this moment, everyone was backing off and cowering in fear; they even lost the courage to fight.

“We wouldn’t all die in this place, right?”

A teen of a slightly younger age was frightened out of his mind.

“I had said earlier that Jing Huan Mountain was an ominous place, but you all still wanted to come. Now we are in big trouble!”

As an older brother from an immortal sect started to complain, the little brothers, along with the little sisters behind his back, were also in perpetual regret.

“Older Brother, don’t you practice the Frozen Ten Thousand Miles spirit technique? Now is the perfect time to use it here and show them your godly might; freeze them to death!”

An innocent and sweet little sister said; her eyes were filled with admiration,

and, while staring at this older brother, they hoped that he could lead them away from this path of no return.

The older brother initially didn't have any will to fight, but, after seeing his little sister's stunning looks, he didn't want to lose face in front of her. So, he had to forcefully suppress the fear in his heart, he activated a spirit talisman in his palm, and then he quickly formed forty-nine finger gestures.

The spirit talisman transformed into a cold ray of light, covering an entire dry corpse.

After the ray of light disappeared, the dried corpse had been frozen inside the light blue ice; it was immobilized.

"Older Brother, you were successful! You are indeed worthy of being the young talent of our Great Development Immortal Gate."

The beautiful eyes of this little sister were teary, and then she excitedly jumped up and down in her exclamation; it was as if her older brother was the world's number one expert.

This older brother proudly smiled. He wanted to say a few dignified lines in order to consolidate his coolness in front of the little brothers and little sisters; however, right at that moment…

"Poof!"

The ice layer surrounding the dried corpse was shattered, and a crazy screech filled the air. One punch caused the head of this older brother to fly downward into his stomach. Even his shoulder bones were completely broken.

In this short amount of time, desperate screams continuously rang out, and the innocent little sister almost became unconscious from fear. Even her older brother was killed; she was afraid that no one else in this world would be able to suppress the three monsters.

There was a feeling that the end of the world was here that resonated in the hearts of each person!

"Now I will let you know: if you dare to tease my wife, then I will turn you into a dismembered corpse. Even though all of you had become dried corpses, I still

want to split your bones apart!”

Feng Fei Yun carefully placed Feng Jian Xue on a bench, and, without any fear, he went forward to the front. His palm touched the shoulder of a dried corpse, and he secretly used spirit energy to activate the Infinite Spirit Ring on his thumb to borrow its godly power. He crushed half of the body of the dried corpse into little pieces, resulting in bones scattering all over the ground.

“Boom!”

The hand that was as hard as steel and the arm like a bronze pillar suddenly collapsed into powder.

If Feng Fei Yun actually made a move, then it would be a shattering scene.

“The dried corpse was close to being invulnerable like diamonds, yet half of its body was destroyed by just one palm from him!”

Everyone stared at Feng Fei Yun like they were looking as a demon’s spawn!

Even Feng Jian Xue moved her gaze towards him. Deep in her pupils was an abnormal sense of astonishment. He was so powerful; could it be that he was also hiding his cultivation?

She naturally didn’t know that Feng Fei Yun had a spirit treasure, so she thought Feng Fei Yun used his own strength to disintegrate the dried corpse into powder.

“Thud thud!”

Feng Fei Yun kept a steady pace. Even though he was carrying a spirit treasure in his hand that was powerful enough to deal with several cultivators at a higher realm than him, he had to tread carefully against the three mysterious dried corpses.

“Boom!”

Feng Fei Yun’s palm dissipated into vast tracts of flames; inside the flames was a killing power of the spirit treasure. It immediately pierced through the chest of another dried corpse, causing its entire skeleton to be shattered.

The power of Feng Fei Yun became increasingly stronger, and the immortal foundation inside his dantian flashed brilliant aura like a blooming star. At this

moment, he no longer hesitated. He quickly stepped forward, making others feel a power capable of destroying the heavens.

“Break!”

He lifted his foot up then slammed it down on the head of the remaining dried corpse. The extreme power emanating from the sole of his foot crushed the body of the rugged man into pieces, turning it into ashes flying in the air.

He only used three moves, yet each move destroyed one dried corpse. It was neat and tidy, showing the graceful bearing of a prominent master.

Even though it was not equal to frightening an entire generation like Du Shou Gao, but it could still be considered an outstanding rare talent like phoenix feathers and unicorn horns.

Earlier, the cultivators were scared stiff by the three dried corpses, but now they were frozen by Feng Fei Yun’s cultivation.

Too powerful!

“His cultivation is even stronger than master, plus he is still so young…”

The innocent little sister with a stupefied gaze stared at Feng Fei Yun intensely. Her slender hands were placed tightly on her chest, and her big round eyes were blinking with excitement.

Feng Fei Yun stood proudly in the center of the scene with the appearance of an incomparable master. His gaze was tranquil and graceful, carrying the temperament of an immortal. Him standing gallantly caused the little girls from the other immortal sects to be bewildered with crazily beating hearts.

Feng Jian Xue knew this person was pretending, and she wanted to kick his legs twice; however, when she saw the white bones all over the ground, she felt a cold chill throughout her body. She couldn’t help but shrink her delicate body, and she only dejectedly snorted!

“Hmph!”

The displeasure in her heart was very large.

Hearing this cold scowl, Feng Fei Yun naturally knew that the young wife was angry, so he quickly strolled over, seriously saying:

“Little Sister Jian Xue, I know you are very scared right now. If you are okay with it, then sleep together with me tonight; I will protect you.”

“Hmmmph! I’m more scared of sleeping together with you!”

How could Feng Jian Xue not know what devious things he was thinking of in his mind. Naturally, she would not let him win, but, at this moment, there were black lights flashing outside of the inn; it was as if an evil creature sped through the night.

“Xshh Xshh!”

Next were faint sounds of monsters grinding their teeth. Listening to it caused people’s scalps to become numb!

“Sleeping with you isn’t impossible, but you cannot move your hands and legs; plus, you have to wear clothes to bed!”

Feng Jian Xue hugged her knees with both hands, and her whole body rolled up into a fetal position. At this moment, she truly looked like a timid little girl.

Feng Fei Yun’s whole body exuded an aura of righteousness, but then he frowned:

“Little Sister Jian Xue, isn’t this making things difficult for me? You know I have a habit of sleeping naked ah. Fine, fine… Today I won’t sleep naked; today, I will definitely not sleep naked.”

A cultivator was still a human, and they cannot be lacking in sleep!

Feng Fei Yun and Feng Jian Xue didn’t sleep last night. If they didn’t sleep again tonight, then, not only would they be lacking strength, their combat prowess would also be greatly reduced. They wouldn’t be as lucky if they were to meet another dried corpse monster.

The three dried corpses were just puppets. In the boundless unknown night, there could be other hidden monsters; these were the real dangers.

There were still many cultivators inside the White Horse Inn. There were many that couldn’t sleep tonight, so they took turns keeping watch.

Feng Fei Yun was naturally excited. He held the soft hands of Feng Jian Xue, and he didn’t wait any longer, headed to the resting room of the inn. As for the

mysterious creature, if it dared to disturb our good Young Master Feng, then Young Master Feng would be extremely angry.

Du Shou Gao was a person that had never feared the night. Since childhood, he grew up around dead corpses. Sometimes, he would be without a place to sleep, or he would even sleep next to the roadside graves.

His pace was fast. Even though the night was pitch black, his eyes were still shining bright enough to find the way.

He raised his head, looked at the endless darkness, and he noticed a house in the far distance. Even further away were giant mountains. Wolves were howling, and the chilling air was blowing the smell of blood.

He gently touched his nose, and he sniffed; then he muttered:

“I have finally arrived at Dragon Stone Town!”

“Rustling!”

The moment he entered the town, he immediately paused. His perennial assassin’s instinct told him that there was an invisible danger quickly approaching.

His whole body trembled. Over the years, this was the first time he felt such terror in his soul; it was as if behind him stood a god of death with a long tongue.

“Who is it? Come on out!”

Du Shou Gao’s heart felt the chill, but he still attempted to remain calm. His body exuded a sharp sword killing pressure.

“Poof!”

A dried hand protruded from the ground. This hand that was covered in bloody mud grabbed his pants; it looked like it would drag him into the depths of hell.

“Whoosh!”

Du Shou Gao unsheathed his saber. This speed was many times faster compared to when he was pursuing Feng Fei Yun the other day. One saber slash came out; however, not only did it chop off the arm, the blade energy became increasingly stronger, turning into a dragon tornado before hitting the ground; it

was as if it wanted to devour the monster underground.

“Rumble!”

However, at this moment, a second hand, a third, and a fourth protruded from the ground in succession!

Countless dried hands appeared from the ground; each hand equally stained with bloody mud. The corpse’s hair was long, and there were even bones showing; however, these dead hands started to form different Buddhist gestures, showing a variety of forms.

“Buddhist spirit techniques, Buddha’s thousand-hands!”

Du Shou Gao’s heart chillingly shivered. He leapt up into the sky while he stomped the air, flying to the top of a bamboo tree.

The soil on the ground started to slowly move, forming honorable Buddhist marks in the form of statues, and these hands of the dead protruding from the ground were trapped inside these marks.

On one hand, there were monstrous bloody hands, and, on the other, there were Buddha palm gestures creating a juxtaposition of two opposing things that instilled a sense of involuntary curiosity in others. Could it be that even the dead could successfully practice peerless Buddhist spirit techniques?

What on earth was actually underground?

Chapter 51 : Clay Buddha

"Boom!"

The mud above the ground started to move, and it condensed into a five meter high statue of a clay Buddha. The Buddha eyes, Buddha ears, Buddha body, and Buddha's robe were meticulously brilliant and had bright auras; the statue exuded the charm of a supreme Buddhist.

On the Clay Buddha were many long arms. Each arm was dried but awe-inspiring. They were in the shape of different Buddhist palm seals, and, in the middle, there were layers of devilish flames.

Du Shou Gao's experiences up to this point could not be considered little, but, at this moment, his whole body shivered. He couldn't help but to stare at the devious yet awe-inspiring Clay Buddha.

"Rumble!"

Suddenly, this Clay Buddha statue flew up from the ground, bringing along rays of lightning straight into the sky, and it unleashed dozens of Buddhist palms.

Du Shou Gao didn't dare to stand still any longer. He channeled his whole body's energy, and activated the power of the spirit saber in his hand; a saber aura like the galaxy split straight down the middle.

Meanwhile, the Qi image "Stars of the Last Generation" appeared from his body, just like the celestials suspending above his head. It caused shock and awe with three hundred and sixty celestial's power.

This technique was his strongest blow; it was even sufficient to level someone of the elder level into smithereens!

"Boom!"

However, once this move was released, he felt as if his body was hit by a mountain. The corner of his mouth was ripped and blood spurted out like a spring.

His chest was struck by a Buddhist palm, and it almost pierced through his

body.

He had met many powerful cultivators throughout his whole life, but he had never felt a hopelessness like now. This was also the first time he fell to the floor, face down, without any hope of standing up.

The bones in his body felt like they were shattered. He wanted to persevere and stand up, but he couldn't crawl upward no matter how hard he tried.

"Phoosh!"

The five meter tall Clay Buddha dropped back down to the ground. It was spinning over to approach him like it wanted to kill Du Shou Gao.

"My life is over!"

Du Shou Gao gritted his teeth, and he closed his eyes.

Even though he was unwilling, but had no choice other than to accept his fate.

"Boom!"

A shattering explosion resounded near his ears, like the rolling thunders. A ray of lightning from the sky struck down causing the Clay Buddha to retreat to the far distance.

"Could it be that someone will save me today? No, even if this person wants to save me, they will absolutely not be a match for this Clay Buddha!"

Du Shou Gao suddenly opened his eyes, and he saw a bright moon hanging on the willow; the faint brilliant aura gave off an infinite beauty.

A girl not tainted by the dust of the mundane world approached with her feet on the moon. Her long black silky hair fluttered in the night curtain. Her graceful posture was like a moon goddess, and in her hand was an ancient crimson fragrant lute.

A white veil, engraved with a seemingly alive butterfly, covered her beautiful face that was capable of toppling cities. Even though her face was covered, the presence from her body caused an assassin unfazed by physical lust, like Du Shou Gao, to shiver.

That blow was definitely Dong Fang Jing Yue using the power of the Haotian

Spirit Mirror in order to push back the Clay Buddha.

Only the Haotian Spirit Mirror would have such godly power!

Her slender fingers slightly stretched forward. Spirit energy from the tip of her fingers overflown, and, along with the Haotian Spirit Mirror, they covered the sky.

Another lightning ray from the Haotian Spirit Mirror exploded towards the outside, destroying all of the arms on the Clay Buddha. Even its body was starting to crack; each of the large arms started to fall down to the black earth.

“Boom!”

The moment when all of the arms disappeared on the muddy ground, an ancient monk appeared from the inside.

Inside the Clay Buddha was an ancient monk!

The ancient monk stood upright with both hands clasped together in front of his chest like a solemn statue, but the monastic robe on his body had soon decayed by more than half. The flesh on his body was dark like black paint, and there were some places that were empty, possibly from being eaten by ants or insects.

His face was also dried and withered. The locations where the nose and cheeks used to be were now bones, and, on his lips and forehead, there were some leftover flesh and blood.

This scene was truly scary; it was enough the frighten a coward to death.

Even though Dong Fang Jing Yue was a girl, she remained poise. She quietly stood there nodding her head, and she said:

“It seems like the news was not wrong. They truly dug out an ominous thing from the mines in Jing Huan Mountain!”

Dong Fang Jing Yue originally wanted to go to Violet Firmament Ancient City to find traces of Feng Fei Yun, but she happened to encounter a messenger from the Yin Gou family; heard that a worldly horror had been dug out from the mountain. So, for the interest of the family, she traveled the whole night to arrive at Dragon Stone Town.

As for catching the brat Feng Fei Yun, it could only be put on hold.

“Boom!”

Dong Fang Jing Yue activated the Haotian Spirit Mirror in her hand, and once again aimed towards the ancient monk’s corpse for her offense. She wanted to completely destroy this evil existence. However, this monk’s corpse was much stronger than her expectations as it was able to block an attack from a spirit treasure. At this time, it had fled into the darkness and out of sight.

“This was such a powerful demon; its power is not under a cultivator of the peak God Base realm.”

Dong Fang Jing Yue was not familiar with the terrain of Jing Huan Mountain, so she didn’t dare to carelessly pursue. She had to let the ancient monk escape.

“Assassin from the Pinnacle Fate Ending Palace!”

The wisdom of Dong Fang Jing Yue and Feng Fei Yun were similar, but her cautious nature was much higher than Feng Fei Yun’s. Just a glance, and she was able to recognize the marking patterns behind Du Shou Gao’s ears.

This was a unique pattern from the Pinnacle Fate Ending Palace’s assassins!

“Hmph! A woman!”

Du Shou Gao coldly scowled, and he didn’t try to hide the disdain in his voice. He slowly stood up from the ground. His back was still upright, but he was limping towards Dragon Stone Town.

He was stubborn and a type of person who didn’t want to lose to anyone!

“Today you saved my life. In the future, I will kill ten people in your place to repay this debt!”

Du Shou Gao didn’t turn his head around, and his voice didn’t carry any emotions.

Dong Fang Jing Yue said:

“You can help me kill one person, and that will be enough!”

“Who?”

Du Shou Gao stopped in his path.

“Feng Fei Yun!”

Dong Fang Jing Yue couldn’t forget the shame from being knocked down to the ground by Feng Fei Yun’s fist. That guy was truly a bastard.

With Du Shou Gao’s talent, as long as he stayed alive, then his accomplishments in the future would be unimaginable. If he had to kill someone, then this person would almost surely die!

At this moment, Feng Fei Yun naturally didn’t know that Dong Fang Jing Yue had invited the most frightening assassin in the world to kill him, because, at this moment, even if your father Jade Emperor came, he would still definitely ignore him.

“Feng Fei Yun, why are you wrapped around by a blanket like this?”

Feng Jian Xue clenched her fist; she really wanted to punch him twice.

“I naturally have to be wrapped by a blanket when going to bed!”

Feng Fei Yun didn’t feel that there was anything wrong with this situation.

“But didn’t you say that you wouldn’t sleep nude?”

Feng Jian Xue’s face became contorted.

Feng Fei Yun had soon jumped on the bed, stripped completely naked, and he tightly wrapped himself in a blanket. He happy smiled while he stared at Feng Jian Xue.

“Being wrapped in a blanket wouldn’t be consider as sleeping nude!”

Feng Fei Yun revealed his naked arm, grabbed her hand, and he then smiled:

“Jian Xue, didn’t we used to sleep in the nude together when we were young? Just think about the old times, then you wouldn’t be so embarrassed now. Why is it that you are so bashful now as a grown up? and not as honest as you used to be?”

“Honest? If I was as honest as before, then wouldn’t you instantly take advantage of me?”

Feng Jian Xue angrily stomped the ground; this Feng Fei Yun was a person without shame.

“Yeah right, what advantages have I not taken on your body?”

Feng Fei Yun laughed loudly; however, after seeing the increasingly unfriendly gaze from Feng Jian Xue, he immediately changed his tone, saying:

“Wife, ah! It is best if Wife closed the door in order to get a good rest. Otherwise, how are we going to find the Mortal Life Cavern tomorrow?”

After hearing the three words Mortal Life Cavern, Feng Jian Xue’s expression softened up. She said:

“Then you sleep on the bed, I will sleep on the floor!”

“Who in their right mind in this world would let a woman sleep on the floor?”

Feng Fei Yun continued:

“We’ll both sleep together on the floor then!”

As soon as Feng Fei Yun was finished with those words, he immediately jumped down from the bed, wrapped in his blanket. Feng Jian Xue didn’t have a chance to react until she was already wrapped in the blanket as well, falling to the ground.

One had to know that Feng Fei Yun was not wearing anything, so the feeling was absolutely stimulating.

At first, Feng Fei Yun thought this was no big deal; however, after he got her wrapped as well in the blanket, he felt something was wrong. It seemed like when they were young, certain things were not as big. Hers were bigger in many places, and his was also bigger; it seemed as if it was not listening to its master’s command!

Feng Jian Xue, who originally turned pale from being scared, blushed with her whole body, but, between her brows, a venerable image jumped about; it was like a fiery sprout spreading throughout her body.

Her whole person changed, and even her eyes became cold; it was as if she was a different person. No longer embarassed, her fingers became like iron claws that directly aimed for Feng Fei Yun’s throat in order to grab it; it was as if wanting to squeeze his neck broken.

Chapter 52 : The Strategy Surround Wei to Save Zhao

Feng Fei Yun seemed to have expected that she would suddenly make a move as he was even faster. He slightly shifted his neck, and he was able to dodge her sharp fingers. One hand fiercely attacked and struck her jade arm.

Feng Jian Xue didn't expect Feng Fei Yun's reaction to be so fast. After all, the both of them were wrapped in the blanket, and they were hugging each other tightly, only separated by a layer of clothes. Under such an intimate situation without distance, he was still able to have time to return the blow.

This could only mean one thing, that he had expected her to make a move earlier!

The flame in the middle of Feng Jian Xue's brows became even more sprightly. It spread throughout her whole body; even her face started to transform and her facial features became even more meticulously beautiful. Her presence became a bit ethereal, with a layer of mist starting to form around her face.

Compared to the bewitching young man that Feng Fei Yun met the other night, she was quite similar; however, the bewitching young man was wearing male clothing, and he had tied back his hair – extremely handsome. Right now, her hair was a complete loose mess, with flirtatious silky eyes; she could cause all living beings to go crazy.

A person's temperament and appearance could even change so much!

She suddenly shook her soft figure, wanting to escape from the blanket; however, Feng Fei Yun's hands were like two serpents gripping her. His hands entwined with her shoulders and her two legs, and then he immediately circled and flipped over her body.

"Who the hell are you? Where did you hide Little Sister Jian Xue?"

Feng Fei Yun had always felt that this person was not like Feng Jian Xue. When she thick-facedly wanted to go with Feng Fei Yun to Jing Huan Mountain, Feng Fei Yun had felt that something was amiss; thus, he decided to force her to show her true colors tonight.

His speculation was not wrong; Feng Jian Xue was indeed the handsome bewitching young man. No, rather, she was a beautiful bewitching young woman.

She restored her original appearance. If she was disguised as a man, she would bewilder all the girls in this world; if she wore women's clothes, then her blushed features would invite calamities and disasters.

"None of your business!"

Feng Fei Yun tightly hugged her body, sometimes he squeezed her jade like back and sometimes he held her soft and slender legs, so that she had no chance of escaping. It was just as Feng Fei Yun said, her entire body was taken advantage of by him.

Feng Fei Yun naturally didn't really want to take advantage of her, but her cultivation was higher than his by several levels; if he let her escape the blanket, then, even with a spirit treasure, he would have no path to survival.

If there was no escape, then lets kill this bastard with one palm!

A cold aura bursted from Feng Jian Xue's eyes. Her slender arms protruded from her clothes, and a large spirit light flew out of her palm, striking Feng Fei Yun's back.

At this moment, she was surrounded by Fei Yun, this palm was indeed very ingenious.

"Oh, no!"

Feng Fei Yun could feel the energy wave coming furiously from behind, and his spine felt like it was frozen. If he didn't take action now, then he would definitely die in her hands.

Feng Fei Yun's expression became serious, and he gazed straight towards the jet black spirited eyes of Feng Jian Xue.

"Feng Fei Yun, you are dead for sure…"

Feng Jian Xue's words only half came out, and then they suddenly stopped. She felt that her chest area was very breezy. This Feng Fei Yun, there was nothing he wouldn't do! He stretched out his hands, and he tore the clothing in

front of her chest, revealing her milky white dudou.

Feng Fei Yun had forcefully took countless innocent daughters, and he romantically and heroically rode an innumerable amount of women. The citizens of Spirit State City had been calling him the reincarnation of Xiao Yao Jade Emperor Bodhisattva, but, before that, there was the matter of him tearing the clothes off of women. This, he had done plenty of times, so his experience was naturally quite rich.

Tearing off women's clothing was a living art! Without numerous practices and effort, one couldn't tear them off with perfection!

Some people used way too little strength, so naturally they couldn't tear the clothes apart. Some people used way too much power, and it hurt the girl. There were some who didn't tear at the right location; when they should be tearing off the chest area, they were tearing the back location instead. Clearly, they wanted to tear the dudou off, but they ended up ripping the panties away instead.

If even the panties were ripped off, the last secret would be exposed; where would the delightful pleasure in ripping clothings off go?

These situations above were all mistakes from inexperienced people; Feng Fei Yun naturally wouldn't commit these mistakes.

He was an experienced and aged man on this Dao!

The story regarding the oil selling old man with the talent of shooting an arrow through a willow leaf from one hundred steps away reminded people that, only as one repeated a task continuously without rest, then they would be familiar with it; they would become the most brilliantly talented person in the field.

This strategy, "surround Wei to save Zhao", was truly remarkable; just this one action was enough to break through the killing palm of Feng Jian Xue.

"Feng Fei Yun, you're shameless!"

Feng Jian Xue quickly returned her hands, and she covered her chest. Even though this happened, the chilling aura in her eyes intensified, and her slender jade foot stomped forward, carrying along the power of one thousand jin towards the area below the stomach of Feng Fei Yun.

Feng Fei Yun's body was spasming from the pain; she truly caused a lot of damage. If this kick was a few parts lower, then the thing of our Young Master Feng — that mounted countless females — with would fall from its godly altar; he was afraid that, if hit, his prized possession would never move again for the remaining half of its life.

A successful kick! Feng Jian Xue naturally kept on with her momentum. Her extremely slender jade legs filled with alluring eroticism still wanted to keep on kicking. She had to successfully kick the treasure of a man.

"Whoosh!"

Feng Fei Yun once again used the strategy "surround Wei to save Zhao", and he directly ripped her pants. Cough cough, everyone don't think that our Young Master Feng was committing those sorts of low level mistakes. This was really a sharp reaction, one couldn't be so conservative with ancient traditions.

A sound of cloth tearing happened between her two legs. It resounded from the thigh area, and, of course, the result was remarkable.

Feng Jian Xue's legs no longer moved, and, on the contrary, it was clamped really tight. She was afraid that by lifting her legs, a spring sunshine would emerge to bring the world to life.

The both of them stopped, and even their breaths were on hold; they remained still.

However, at this moment Feng Fei Yun was feeling somewhat embarrassed. When he rubbed his palms together, he could feel a sense of warmth on the fingertips; it was as if they had just slipped by the underbrush from deep inside a valley. This lingering sensation made one forget themselves.

"Feng Fei Yun, could you stop being so shameless for a little bit?"

Black lines appeared on Feng Jian Xue's forehead. One hand was holding her torn shirt and covering her chest, and the other hand was gripping her skirt tightly. She was afraid that, if her skirt was lifted even a tiny bit, Feng Fei Yun would be able to see everything without exception.

"Cough cough! I had no other choice! It was only out of righteous self-preservation!"

Feng Fei Yun was no longer a tiny bit embarrassed. His muscular arms, like a tiger, tightly held Feng Jian Xue's slender body without any intention of letting go.

Even though Feng Jian Xue was about go to crazy from anger, she couldn't do anything. If she used a killing technique again, then only god would know the despicable method this turtle, Feng Fei Yun, would employ.

"You… Why do you have three hands?"

Feng Jian Xue couldn't stay calm. She felt that there was an abnormal thing moving under her abdomen, radiating boiling heat that caused her to feel very uncomfortable. She thought Feng Fei Yun was making a move again, another despicable act.

This time, Feng Fei Yun was really embarrassed. He wasn't wearing anything at this time and was extremely sensitive. Just a little lack of caution, and the evil flames were born; he was unable to suppress it.

"Cough cough, how could I have three hands. This is because I summoned my extremely powerful magical treasure. If Little Sister dares to make a move, then it won't be just your clothes torn apart. Be careful or other places would all be torn apart as well."

"Strongest? Magical treasure?"

Feng Jian Xue's expression greatly changed as she didn't expect Feng Fei Yun's scheme to be so deep. He was still hiding a secret card after all of this.

The magical treasure under her stomach became increasingly hot, like a burning flame; hard and sharp, just like a "dagger"; it was placed three inches below her bellybutton. If she actually made a move, then this "dagger" would pierce through her body.

Sweat permeated through her forehead. She was in such a dangerous situation, the line between life and death, yet Feng Fei Yun was sinister enough to add such an unstoppable killing card.

Even though Feng Fei Yun's face was thick enough, but to use a "dagger" to threaten a female was a bit too much even for him. Even so, he pretended to be calm, and he said:

“You are not Little Sister Jian Xue; who on earth are you?”

The girl in his grasp was a peerless beauty with the features to stun the whole world. Even though Feng Jian Xue was very beautiful, but, compared to her, she was a few notches below.

Moreover, her cultivation was very high; it was no less than characters of the elder ranking. Feng Jian Xue naturally couldn’t compete. Her temperament was also completely different from Feng Jian Xue; how could they be the same person?

At this moment, her life was in Feng Fei Yun’s hands. Even though she wanted to rebel, her mind was willing; however, her strength was lacking, so she said:

“I am Feng Jian Xue, from the beginning till end, it was always me.”

“Hmph, your words could only be used to fool three year old children.”

Feng Fei Yun naturally didn’t trust her words.

The flame in the middle of Feng Jian Xue’s brows no longer jumped. Her appearance became like Feng Jian Xue again, and the dual pupils appeared in her eyes with a faint sword aura moving between them.

“If I wasn’t Feng Jian Xue, then you would have died countless times!”

Feng Jian Xue’s eyes carried a complex emotion, and she said:

“Last night, Du Shou Gao and I were pursuing you. If I didn’t secretly slow down Du Shou Gao’s hands last night, then, with your current cultivation, do you think you would be able to escape his blade?”

She was not wrong, Du Shou Gao was capable of killing someone of the elder ranking with just one blade. If he used his full strength, then Feng Fei Yun wouldn’t be able to take half a blow from him. Of course, this was under the situation where Feng Fei Yun didn’t use his spirit treasure.

“I was aware that the bamboo block recording the Mortal Life Cavern was in your hands. If I wasn’t Feng Jian Xue, then, since the beginning, I would have killed you and taken the bamboo block at the Hidden Dragon Courtyard; how could you still live until now?”

Feng Jian Xue said.

Feng Fei Yun’s eyes softened up, and he somewhat puzzlingly asked:

“Then why did you do these things?”

“I…”

Feng Jian Xue gently bit her lips, and some misty tears were in her celestial eyes. She slowly lowered her head, and, buried it in Feng Fei Yun’s chest, she mumbled:

“I’m foolish. You said you remembered when we were younger, we used to play house. I was your new bride, and you were my new groom; the witness was the wild dog sitting at the other street! These words of yours were only meant to fool girls, but I trusted them…”

Chapter 53 : Entering Jing Huan Mountain

Her two hands gently hugged Feng Fei Yun, and her head was nestled against his chest; she appeared to be tranquil and happy.

However, Feng Fei Yun was shocked. He couldn't fully adapt to this sweet feeling. Even though he normally called her his wife, these were just teases. If he truly wanted to take her as his wife, then he knew there was a tribulation he had to go through.

Because a single Shui Yue Ting had caused him to lose all trust in women!

"Cough cough, this… If Little Sister really knew those were all lies, then don't believe it anymore."

Feng Fei Yun quickly let her go. He opened the blanket and stepped outside, and then got dressed in a hurry.

Even though he was standing very far away from her, his heart couldn't calm down.

He was not afraid of women wanting to kill him; he was only afraid of women treating him well!

Feng Jian Xue's eyebrows gently wrinkled. She hesitated for a moment, and then she said:

"The truth is my real name isn't Feng Jian Xue. After foster father took me in, he named me Feng Jian Xue."

Her foster father was Feng Fei Yun's second uncle, Feng Wan Li.

"Then what was your name before? Why are you hiding in the Feng family?"

Feng Fei Yun's thoughts were very meticulous, and he quickly came up with a possibility.

Between the big families, there were many chess pieces. One particular chess piece would be very well hidden, and they would play a greater role in the future. It was easy to see that Feng Jian Xue was a chess piece that was secretly placed

in the Feng family many years ago.

The higher her position in the Feng family, the more effective she would be in the future!

If she wanted to climb to a high position of the Feng family, then she would have to show all of her talents in the Hidden Dragon War. This was why she wouldn't hesitate to use any methods to increase her power and cultivation, so she hired Du Shou Gao to kill Feng Yu in order to obtain the bamboo block.

She was searching for the spirit spring water inside the Mortal Life Cavern to use it to breakthrough again for the upcoming Hidden Dragon War.

Even though she only said one sentence, Feng Fei Yun had speculated many different things.

Feng Jian Xue said:

"I can't tell you everything right now, Feng Fei Yun; please don't force me, okay?"

"Fine, I won't force you! You will still be my wife!"

Feng Fei Yun smilingly said.

Even though it was just a joke, Feng Jian Xue was touched in her heart: "Brother clearly knows that I have detrimental plans that are especially disadvantageous towards the Feng family, but he can pretend to not know anything. Could it be that he really likes me? If he didn't like me, then how could he not care about the family's safety?"

The more she thought about it, the more red her face got, revealing a timid expression. Her fingers wouldn't stop playing with her sleeves, and she wanted to find a corner in the room to hide at.

"This person is truly my "enemy". If I really was Feng Jian Xue, then I would definitely marry him and watch over him to not allow him to be a licentious son anymore… Oh heavens! How could I have so many nonsensical thoughts?!"

Her face became increasingly red!

She also didn't know that Feng Fei Yun, for a long time now, was not the real Feng Fei Yun. Regarding the Feng family, his sense of belonging was not strong.

Later on, even if Feng Jian Xue's identity was exposed and unaccepted by the Feng family, he could even stand by her side and become enemies of the Feng family with her.

He only cared for people who were good to him. He would not be chained or limited by the clan!

A whole night without speaking. The White Horse Inn also didn't have any more strange events; it was like the dried corpses from yesterday were only a frightening nightmare.

Next morning, at sunrise, many people quickly went on the road to leave Dragon Stone Town.

Within this crowd, many people originally wanted to go to Jing Huan Mountain to find treasure and collect ores; however, after the events last night, these people didn't want to enter Jing Huan Mountain, not even one step.

Of course, there was not a lack of courageous people, they were not deterred by the evil dried corpses. Instead, they wanted to enter the mines of the Yin Gou family in order to find out the truth. Their hearts were curious about the temple under the ground and the matters that had transpired there.

These people became friends and went together. The cultivation of each person was not ordinary, but also not frightening.

Feng Fei Yun and Feng Jian Xue also left the White Horse Inn, and they went straight towards the ancient Jing Huan Mountain.

Because the big families were extracting all year long, there were many carriages going back and forth. This created a stable running trail. The bronze ancient heavenly deer carriage rushed on the old road like there was a heavenly wind blowing it along from behind. It quickly passed the group of cultivators, and they disappeared in the green lushful forest.

"Those two young people are really courageous. They dared to go alone on the road."

"That young man's cultivation is exceedingly high. He was able to destroy a dried corpse last night with just one palm. Of course he would be courageous due to his high talents!"

***

Feng Fei Yun stood on top of the ancient carriage's roof. The two flames in his eyes lit up; he was looking towards Dragon Stone Town disappearing in the far distance, and he could only see the qi image flying in the air inside the town like they were celestials occupying the sky.

Three hundred and sixty celestials forming a compass shape, encompassing half of the sky.

"Qi image of the Stars of the Last Generation… Du Shou Gao indeed came to Dragon Stone Town. It is fortunate that he didn't go to the White Horse Inn last night."

Feng Fei Yun used his eyes to observe the Qi fortunes, and he felt lucky.

Feng Jian Xue, with the black iron chains in her hands, lifted her head to look at him and surprisingly said:

"You also know how to observe Qi images. This is a special skill of wisdom masters and treasure hunting masters!"

"Oh! It is only a different vision that can distinguish things, it is nothing too special."

Feng Fei Yun smilingly shook his head.

At this moment, the two could be viewed as understanding each other, and they no longer hid their cultivation. Last night, the two were embarrassed the whole time, and they didn't speak a word to each other this morning. Until now, they have only started speaking again.

Feng Jian Xue shook her head, and she said:

"There are cultivators that have powerful visions, but those visions are also divided into many types. My practicing the Double Gaze Fragmenting Moon Sword; this is a power type. Other's visions can see things a thousand miles away with just one glance; this is a spiritual type. However, to be able to see Qi and read the stars, this is definitely someone with great wisdom that does not only rely on vision, but also on the calculation of the brain in order to reach this step. These people are relatively few in number, but their success in the future will

definitely not be mediocre.”

She seemed to have notice something bad, glared at Feng Fei Yun, and she said:

“You can also see through?”

“Hehe! What do you think?”

The flames in Feng Fei Yun faintly appeared, and he opportunely stared at her figure while happily smiling.

“Shameless!”

The sword lights in Feng Jian Xue’s eyes condensed into an explosive black ray that turned into a sword edge that pierced straight towards Feng Fei Yun’s evil eyes.

“Bam!”

Feng Fei Yun hurriedly tilted to the side to narrowly avoid this dangerous sword.

He jumped down from the ancient carriage’s roof, sat next to Feng Jian Xue, and he withdrew the flames in his eyes. He smiled:

“You think too much, my eyes can’t see through anything. Plus, the biggest temptation of a girl’s figure is its mysteriousness. If I could see everything with just one glance, then what’s the point?”

“You have already seen everything of mine. Could it be that I am no longer alluring to you?”

Feng Jian Xue blinked her eyes while her long eyelashes fluttered.

Feng Fei Yun paused for a moment, and he said:

“That was a matter of when we were younger. Even if I saw it then, it was nothing special.”

“What about now?”

Feng Jian Xue asked.

Feng Fei Yun was a little stunned. He looked around and nervously swallowed,

and then he said:

“Jian Xue, can you not be so blunt like this? Even though this is the middle of nowhere right now, I have been very polite recently; however, if you dare to take it off, then I will dare to watch!”

“Hmph, your head is always full of disgusting thoughts!”

Feng Jian Xue said.

“Hehe, I’m only teasing you!”

Feng Fei Yun’s laugh echoed throughout the mountain accompanied by the angry and chilling “hmph” of Feng Jian Xue. The two seemed to have began pinching each other.

The bronze ancient deer carriage quickly went into Jing Huan Mountain, and they passed by countless peaks and valleys. The scenery in front of them finally changed, and a stone forest emerged.

The heavenly deer stopped. Feng Fei Yun came out from inside the carriage, and he stood next to the stone forest. He looked at the bamboo block in his hand, and he compared it to the surrounding landscape.

“So? Is this the right place?”

Feng Jian Xue came closer.

“There are a few similarities, but there are also some differences.”

Feng Fei Yun looked at the scenery ahead, and she only saw a straight cliff in the distance. The surface of the cliff was smooth like it was split by someone’s sword a few hundred thousand years ago.

There were many giant stone forests under the cliff, covering dozens of acres. Each stone was dozens of meters high, and it weighed tens of thousands of pounds.

On the other side of the stone forest was a deep valley without a visible bottom, filled with white mist. There was a cloud crane flying straight up from below, but they definitely could not see the bottom of the valley.

“According to the bamboo block, the Mortal Life Cavern is located at the

bottom of the valley.”

Feng Fei Yun was standing next to the stone forest, and he stared towards the bottom of the valley wanting to use the Heavenly Phoenix Gaze to see how deep the valley was.

However, there was a strange force under the valley blocking his gaze. He could only see around one hundred zhang, then he couldn’t see anything else clearly.

It became increasingly strange. Could the Mortal Life Cavern really be under this valley?

“Rumble!”

Feng Fei Yun focused on listening. He faintly heard that under the ground, there were melancholic voices very deep below like there were people around a few hundred meters under the ground, digging with a hammer.

Feng Jian Xue naturally could hear this sound as well, and she said:

“This is the banging sound from the mines deep within the mountain!”

“The sound of mineral extraction could travel this far?”

Feng Fei Yun asked.

“Sound in underground travels faster than it does in the air, so it can be heard even more clearly.”

Feng Jian Xue continued:

“Plus, the underground mines stretch extremely far. It could be that the mine’s entrance was ten miles away but the diggers are extracting right beneath our feet.”

Feng Fei Yun nodded, and he said:

“Our goal of this trip is for the spirit spring water from the Mortal Life Cavern. After we get the water, we will immediately leave Jing Huan Mountain. I have this feeling that not long from now, the entire Jing Huan Mountain will become a fierce location of death.”

Chapter 54 : Valley in the Mountain

With the cultivation of Feng Fei Yun and Feng Jian Xue, even though they still couldn't approach the hollow sky, descending down a cliff was not a difficult matter.

The landscape engravings on the bamboo block was very similar to this location. The location of the Mortal Life Cavern and the depths of the valley fit as well.

The dense fog in the valley caused one to be unable to see anything but complete whiteness even ten meters away.

There was no vegetation on the ground, the rocks were stained with blood, and countless broken weapons were scattered about, causing others to see an unlimited killing intent.

"What the hell is this place? Could it be an ancient battlefield?"

Feng Jian Xue picked up the broken swords from the ground. The blades were covered in rust that looked just like red muddy clay.

Feng Fei Yun held a broken sword fragment that was covered with rust, and he wiped it clean. Under the rust, a white light was revealed. It seemed to contain ancient engraved seals from an unknown amount of years ago.

"This was crafted from Pure Flower Divine Stone and Silver Frost Ancient Iron. This sword fragment even weighs twelve jin. This was definitely crafted by a Grand Blacksmith Master, extraordinary!"

Feng Fei Yun's visual perception was amazing. Even the materials of the broken sword were perfectly clear to him.

Grand Blacksmith Masters were extremely rare, and each was master of metal refinement. When they create armors and weapons, even if they are not of the spirit treasure rank, they would still definitely be abnormal. A tiny sword fragment already had such a great origin; the ground was filled with weapon remnants, so it would be hard not to find treasures.

Feng Fei Yun picked up a few broken weapons from the ground. There were spear tips, bronze cauldron horns, fragments of ancient pagodas, red mirror handles… These broken weapons were all treasures crafted by a Grand Blacksmith Master; there were even two that were fragments of spirit treasures.

What terrifying battle had actually occurred here to the point that even spirit treasures were broken?

“Strange, these weapons have been here for at least one thousand years. Even if they are broken, they are still absolutely priceless. Why is it that no one had picked them up in all these years?”

Feng Fei Yun bought the Crimson Dragon Saber at the Yin Gou family. This was a broken spirit treasure, but the price was already three thousand gold coins. One could see the high values of the weapon remnants on the ground here.

Feng Jian Xue contemplated for a moment, and then he said:

“It is indeed a little strange. With Feng Yu’s personality, if he truly came to this valley, then he definitely wouldn’t leave these broken weapons behind.”

“Da da!”

From the white mist came cluttering sounds; it was as if they were footsteps of someone, the hooves from a fierce beast, or even a crawling creature creeping on the ground.

A chilling air came about!

“Not good!”

Feng Fei Yun’s foot stomped on the ground. A green light came from the bottom of his sole and traveled to the four surrounding directions, knocking all the weapons on the ground away from them.

“Boom!”

A black shadow was knocked flying away, but it was not clear what it was!

The valley regained its silence at this moment, but Feng Fei Yun couldn’t remain calm. Even though the black shadow was forced to retreat, this proved that there were some existences inside this valley.

There was even the possibility that everyone who came to this valley were all killed by these creatures.

“Early Immortal Foundation realm!”

This was the first time Feng Jian Xue actually witnessed Feng Fei Yun’s cultivation, and she was a bit surprised by him.

Remember that a year ago, when she saw Feng Fei Yun, he didn’t know any cultivation methods. Only a year had passed, and he had reached the early Immortal Foundation realm; this cultivation speed was truly unheard of.

If she knew that Feng Fei Yun only really cultivated within the last three months, it wouldn’t be just a simple astonishment like this.

Could it be that under the guise of a carefree playboy was a cultivation genius?

Feng Jian Xue felt an inexplicable sense of joy. Thinking about it, whether he has cultivation talent or not, why would I be happy about it? The stronger he becomes, the more bad things he will do in the future.

“It is only the early Immortal Foundation, and you are already at the intermediate God Base. I’m lower by four levels compared to you, so there’s nothing to be proud of.”

Feng Fei Yun admired her from the bottom of his heart. She was so young, yet her cultivation was already so strong; this was definitely not only a remarkable innate talent. Behind this matter, she had to suffer many arduous hardships and pay in countless sweat.

Reaching the Spirit Realm was entering the cultivational door. Reaching the Immortal Foundation was to become an expert of one domain. As for the ones that could reach the God Base, the number became fewer and fewer; they were the strongest in the clans and immortal sects.

In the Feng family, once one achieved the God Base realm, then one could become an elder and gain great power.

Feng Jian Xue was only fourteen, but she was able to reach the intermediate God Base realm, and she was comparable to an elder; her future accomplishments were limitless.

Feng Fei Yun was currently only at the early Immortal Foundation. Even with the special Immortal Phoenix Physique, he could only fight one level higher; that was equal to the intermediate Immortal Foundation. Combined with the power of a spirit treasure, he would be barely able to fight against an early God Base opponent, but he definitely wouldn't be a real match.

Moreover, even though he had a spirit treasure on his body, he couldn't use it carelessly; so his battle power was greatly reduced.

"This is because, since a young age, I used spirit medicines to refine my physique, so it improved my cultivation speed. However, you are different. You are so smart, plus your aptitude is very high. As long as you work hard, your future accomplishments will definitely be greater than mine, and you could even become the number one master in the Feng's younger generation."

Feng Jian Xue said this in a serious manner. It was easy to tell that she has high expectations regarding Feng Fei Yun.

"Haha, my cultivation is not even equal to a little girl like you, yet I will be number one in the young generation? I'm afraid a few heavenly defying talents from the Feng family had also reached the God Base realm; defeating them wouldn't be so easy."

Feng Fei Yun knew that his cultivation path started late. If he wanted to catch up or even exceed these people, then he could only use the spirit spring water. If he could obtain one drop of spirit spring water, then he could be certain of breaking through to the intermediate Immortal Foundation within three days.

If there were ten drops of spirit spring water, then, with just a month, he would be able to successfully break through the third level of Blood Purification and be close to the God Base realm.

The most important thing was that once the third level of Blood Purification was achieved, he would be able to fight two levels above himself. He would be able to use a peak Immortal Foundation to fight an elder with the intermediate God Base ranking. If combined with his spirit treasure, then this was enough to kill a master of the peak God Base.

However, spirit spring water was too rare. Not mentioning ten drops, even just finding one was considered an immortal fortune.

“Rumble!”

The ground suddenly shook and cracked into a small opening. From below, black mist rose into many shadows of ghosts.

This sudden change was too surprising. A ghost left a claw wound on Feng Fei Yun’s back. The wound became black and a black smoke rose from within.

“Where did this ghost came from?”

Feng Fei Yun channeled his Immortal Phoenix Physique, and his blood energy boiled through his body, expelling the blood tainted by the ghost energy out of his body.

“Boom!”

Feng Fei Yun and Feng Jian Xue took action at the same time. They focused energy into their palms, and they turned it into the First Dark Origin Flame; they then threw out two walls of flames blocking the ghosts away.

“Rumble!”

At this same moment, the crack on the ground increasingly winded. The crack was half a meter wide, enough to swallow a person inside.

“There is something underneath the crack!”

Feng Jian Xue said.

“This is… a stone platform, just like an entrance to a cavern. There are words written in blood on it; the words are… ‘Mortal life has already ended, all existences will disappear’.”

Feng Fei Yun’s vision was frightening. Even though the light was faint underneath the crack, he could still see the entrance to the Mortal Life Cavern.

Mortal life has already ended, all existences will disappear.

This is naturally the Mortal Life Cavern!

Who thought that the Mortal Life Cavern would be deep underground. This place seemed to be connected to a spirit vein because Feng Fei Yun felt a strong fluctuation of spirit energy; it was as if a grand river of spirit energy was flooding from the ground.

At this moment, the valley was no longer calm. The shadows of the ghost increased in number, and they let out deafening screams; it was like the ferocious ghosts were crying.

The broken weapons that were originally lying on the ground began to float like invisible hands were holding them, and they headed towards the cavern underground to unleash a strike.

There was an invisible power controlling them; it was as if it wanted to destroy the seal and release something to the outside.

“Rumble!”

The entrance to the underground cavern exploded from the blows of the broken weapons, releasing thunderous sounds that could be heard ten miles away – quite soul shattering.

Feng Fei Yun and Feng Jian Xue were in close vicinity, so these explosions shook their whole bodies. This caused their blood to churn, and they almost simultaneously spewed out a mouthful of blood.

“What in the world happened? Why is this place so sinister?”

At this moment, Feng Jian Xue was wounded. Her face was frighteningly pale, and she looked like she was about to fall unconscious.

Feng Fei Yun said:

“This place originally was not dangerous. In the end, a person with a mortal body like Feng Yu could leave this place unscathed, so I think there must have been a secret inside the Mortal Life Cavern that was triggered, turning this place into a murderous forbidden ground.”

“Boom!”

Feng Fei Yun’s words had just ended when the underground entrance of the Mortal Life Cavern opened from the offense of the broken weapons. A white blinding light exploded from the entrance, and it pierced through the white mist of the valley, directly breaking the sky.

“Whoosh!”

The light carried grievances and ferocities, like a bright rainbow around the

sun; it was even hotter than sunlight. The eight hundred miles around Jing Huan Mountain could all see this brilliant light.

At this moment, many people noticed this light in the horizon, this light was truly too blinding; it was as if a heavenly sword was connecting the heavens and the earth.

Feng Fei Yun was frightened:

“I wanted to quietly obtain this fortune, seize the spirit spring water, and then leave, but there is such a big commotion now. I’m afraid the entire Grand Southern Prefecture and Violet Firmament Ancient City were alarmed. Within a few days, all the experts of the big families will definitely arrive.”

The explosion earlier was really too big; it was no less than a godly dragon coming into the world, alarming all the experts within Jing Huan Mountain. These people were riding their horses without break, and they were running at full speed towards the valley.

Within a short time, there were many figures flying above the sky without stopping. The sound of the wind breaking continuously resounded without rest, and it was simply like the wind sighing and the crane calling.

A sense of impending rain and greed assaulted the people’s hearts.

Chapter 55 : Great Development Immortal Gate

Within the valley, the ghost shadows became more and more materialized and ferociously horrible with exaggerated facial features. Some had eyes as big as a fist, some with teeth like steel plate, and some had long hairy ears.

They felt the presence from the Mortal Life Cavern underground, so they became increasingly crazy. Using their corrosive claws, they broke through the First Dark Origin Flame wall formed by Feng Fei Yun and Feng Jian Xue.

“Boom!”

Inside the blinding brilliance, many flame sparks fragmented and fell down, burning the stones on the ground and creating a burning sound.

“Rumble!”

The crack in the ground widened even more. In the beginning, it was only as wide as a finger, then a palm, afterward was one meter, and finally it was wider than ten zhang.

It was just like a deep valley lying horizontally in front of them. The bottom was hazy and there were shrill screeches coming from the bottom like countless swords were flying below.

The entrance was suspended in the middle of the depths. On the entrance was an ancient stone tablet above the door with blue and red engravings:

“Mortal life had already ended, all existences will disappear.”

Many thousand years have passed, and the mundane world had changed; the months and years continued to alternate, so the ancient rune engravings had faded quite a bit. It was almost to be point of being unable to be seen clearly!

Above the entrance, a glossy brilliance was shot out from the crack, causing others to be alarmed. It was as if it was the light of the sun, not allowing others to direct stare at it.

“Ahh! What is it?”

Feng Jian Xue, who was standing besides the crack, suddenly felt that from behind, there was a hand grabbing her neck. She couldn't control her body, and she fell down below.

"Bam!"

A piece of stone was trampled by her collapse. She released a white energy towards the above, wanting to fly back to the sky, but the power from below greatly exceeded her imagination; her white light was broken in a flash.

"What kind of monster is this?"

Feng Fei Yun jumped down into the crack without any hesitation, and he grabbed Feng Jian Xue's hand. His other hand struck the wall, and the entire hand was drilled into the stone wall.

During this critical juncture, one could truly see the real thoughts of someone. Feng Fei Yun knew that it was very dangerous below and there were hidden unknown creatures of terror, yet he still jumped to save her without any hesitation.

Could anyone else in the world do the same as him?

"And you still said you don't like me?"

Feng Jian Xue's heart was extremely moved. She understood that she would be willing to die for Fei Yun in the future.

This was a youngster's first love, and love (foolish emotion) was not foolish!

"First let us go up, then talk!"

Feng Fei Yun's hands exerted energy, and the blood inside his body was like oil in a pan, producing frightening energy. He wanted to throw Feng Jian Xue up to the surface.

However, at the same time, a gigantic palm seal from the depths flew upward. This palm struck Feng Fei Yun's chest. The power of this palm was enough to move the mountains and flip the oceans; it directly made his chest cave in, fresh blood began to trickle down in streams.

However, he still didn't let go. The fresh blood dripped down from his arm, drop by drop, onto Feng Jian Xue's face.

He tightly gritted his teeth, and he once again exerted his strength.

“Bang!”

A second palm seal from the depths flew upward; this palm seal was like a large black cloud. It directly hit Feng Fei Yun, and it caused him to fly up one hundred meters. He then came crashing down back into the valley, creating a “bang” noise.

Dust flew up as his fall created a pit with a human shape.

“Your mother! Why is there such a powerful presence in the Jin Dynasty!”

Feng Fei Yun wiped his butt, and he clutched his chest again, coughing up black blood.

He crawled towards the crack, looked down into the depths, and saw an invisible power from within, dragging Feng Jian Xue into the Mortal Life Cavern.

“Clank!”

Feng Fei Yun felt something was trembling in his chest. It was issuing a bell-like sound similar to the sound of the bell used by Corpse Controllers.

“Bamboo block!”

The strenuous vibrating thing was the bamboo block that was as big as a palm. However, at this moment, the map engravings on the bamboo block were completely changed, and they move crookedly, forming the shape of a talisman in the end.

The words “Mortal Life Cavern” on the bamboo block also turned into “Mortal Life Talisman”.

“Could it this that this bamboo block… No, this Mortal Life Talisman will lead to an existence inside this cavern, that is why there is such a great frightening change in this place?”

Feng Fei Yun felt that it was not only just this. There was certainly something else as well that he had experienced; however, couldn’t remember it at this moment.

At this moment, Feng Jian Xue was dragged into the Mortal Life Cavern. It was

unknown whether she was dead or alive. If he wanted to save her, the only choice was to rush into the Mortal Life Cavern.

Feng Fei Yun wanted to enter, but, suddenly, he looked up and saw a chilling aura from above with an extraordinary presence.

“I can’t believe someone else had come here this quickly!”

Feng Fei Yun hurriedly retreated to a corner in the valley that was filled with white mist. He wanted to let these people go first to scout.

“Older Brother Mu, this Little Brother feels that this bright light is an auspicious sign. Maybe a spirit treasure will appear soon.”

“If there was really a spirit treasure here and we managed to take it and gift it to our ancestor, then our positions in the Great Development Immortal Gate would be even higher than the direct disciples.”

Two men wearing yellow apricot robes entered the valley from above, stomping on the rocks to quickly reach the ground.

Each of their steps firmly aimed for the protruding rocks with extreme speed. They very quickly stood upright on the ground.

These two were 27 to 28 years olds with ancient magical swords on their backs. They were surrounded by a faint energy aura, like an armor protecting their bodies.

It was obvious to see that these two were very cautious.

The fog in the valley was extremely heavy. Even though they were at the early Immortal Foundation realm and considered to be experts of one domain, they only dared to maneuver forward step by step. They seemed to feel the ancient killing aura from the valley.

“Not good, Older Brother Mu. I feel that this place doesn’t look like one where an auspicious event will happen. On the contrary, it looks like an ancient fierce monster will come out from the ground.”

The voice of one of the men was shaking and he didn’t dare to step forward.

“It is indeed sinister. Earlier, I heard the sound of ghosts crying. Let’s get out of here, we’ll immediately leave this place and report to the sect’s elders.”

The two men were both experts, but their courage was limited. They just got to the valley, yet their feet were shrunken in fear. However, everything was too late.

“Roar…”

Seven or eight black ghost shadows came out from the mist and surrounded these two, and they started to rush forward.

“Careful, kill!”

The two men had never met anything so strange before, and they were already frightened. Even though their hands held ancient swords, they felt that their hands were weak and legs were cramped. Ten parts of power, and they couldn’t exert even three.

“Poof!”

Even though their ancient swords cut through these ghost shadows, these ghost shadows immediately condensed together and clawed off one of the men’s ear.

“My ear! Older Brother Mu, save me, save me… It is over, it is over… Death for sure, death for sure…”

The man swung his sword wildly, releasing cluttered sword auras while he cried for help.

However, his Older Brother Mu was not doing any better than him. There were dozens of wounds on his body, and he was also sobbingly calling for help.

Feng Fei Yun became more and more angry as he watched. In the end, he couldn’t hold it back and stepped forward, and he loudly scolded:

“The two of you are still experts at the Immortal Foundation rank, plus you have lived until this age; why is it that your heads cannot think?”

The two disciples from the Great Development Immortal Gate were in exaltation! They were surprised to see someone else in the valley. It was like meeting a savior during the time of certain death.

“Senior, Senior, please save us. We are disciples of the Great Development Immortal Gate, and our master is the sixth elder, Fa Hua Zi. If Senior saves us, we

will surely repay you later.”

Feng Fei Yun naturally heard the name of the Great Development Immortal Gate before. This was a great power of the Grand Southern Prefecture, and its power could be comparable to the Feng family. Rumor has it that there were a few ten thousand disciples and characters of the elder ranking were more than three hundred.

More than three hundred elders yet their master was ranked the 6th, this means that the status of their master at the Great Development Immortal Gate was very high with a great cultivation. By saving them, it was the same as forging a good relationship with a character like the sixth elder of the sect.

This business was definitely doable!

Feng Fei Yun coughed twice, and he said:

“These ghost shadows are afraid of fire, you both could use the First Dark Origin Flame to attack them – that is how you force them back.”

The two disciples quickly gathered their energy and casted the First Dark Origin Flame. In a flash, they were able to force back the ghost shadows that eventually disappeared in the white mist.

“Haha! These ghost shadows couldn’t take one blow from me. Our great techniques are indeed unbeatable, slaying ghosts and slaying evils!”

The two bursted out laughing, like two immortals. They no longer had the same appearance as when they were yelling for their father and mother like earlier.

“Senior! Thank you, Senior, for the rescue. This is merely a small token to show our respect.”

Older Brother Mu took out a piece of yellow stone from his chest, and he respectfully placed it in Feng Fei Yun’s hand.

This yellow stone was the size of a fist, and its surface was coarse with a loose texture. It was seemingly ordinary, just like a random rock on the street.

Casually picking up a piece of rock, then gifting it to others, this really was… just a small token!

Chapter 56 : True Brilliant Spirit Stone

Feng Fei Yun opened his eyes wide. With faint flames in his eyes, he quickly accepted the yellow stone; he then smilingly said:

“Another True Brilliant Spirit Stone, ahem… This little token is definitely not small.”

Feng Fei Yun gripped his hand, and he instantly crushed the yellow stone, turning it into yellow sand; within the yellow sand shone a five colored light.

A small spirit stone the size of a pinky came out. The surface was extremely smooth and cold to the touch, continuously emitting a white mist.

This was not ordinary mist! Because the density of the spirit energy had reached a certain level, it allowed others to see the energy with the naked eye.

Older Brother Mu of the Grand Development Immortal Gate quickly took out, from his chest, a small jade box, and handed it to Feng Fei Yun. He became even more respectful as he said:

“Senior is indeed a grand character. To be able to see through the yellow stone and know that inside it was a True Brilliant Spirit Stone, could it be that senior is an honorable Treasure Seeking Master?”

Hearing the three words “Treasure Seeking Master”, even the disciple to the side felt a sense of respect. One has to know that the status of a Treasure Seeking Master in this world was extremely high. Even one with the lowest rank would not be lower than an elder!

The amount of Treasure Seeking Masters were even fewer than Wisdom Masters. In the vast Grand Southern Prefecture and the wide kingdom, to be able to find ten Treasure Seeking Masters, was a very difficult matter.

Regarding treasure seeking, it was the search for treasures, dragon veins under the ground, ancient godly remnants, spirit and ore mines, and so on… This matter was very demanding, and it required the mastery of peerless vision, meteorology, celestial reading, ancient literature, calculations, and so on and so forth…

One could say that Treasure Seeking Masters were among the wealthiest in the world. This was also the most mysterious group as they traveled in the deep mountains or grand valleys, prowling in the ancient forbidden burials, fighting against fierce beast, challenging deadly spirits, and were ready to face the challenges of nature and ancient sealing sanctuaries.

Of course, to become a Treasure Seeking Master also required the Iron Order of the Wan Xiang Pagoda; there was no exception within the five grand mysterious masters.

Feng Fei Yun's ability was not weaker than first rank Treasure Seeking Masters, but he didn't know how to obtain an Iron Order from the Wan Xiang Pagoda. He couldn't confirm nor deny the two, so he just smiled and placed the True Brilliant Spirit Stone into the jade box to prevent the spirit inside the stone from dissipating.

The True Brilliant Spirit Stone was one of the eighteen mysterious stones, and it was also one of the most ordinary within the eighteen. It was formed from the pure energy of the world, and, even though it was only as big as a pinky, the spirit energy inside was enough for a cultivator of the early Immortal Foundation to use for three years.

Using spirit stones to cultivate was double the speed of simply absorbing the world's energy.

In other words, using this True Brilliant Spirit Stone to cultivate for three years was equivalent to the result of another cultivator practicing for six years.

Even though the True Brilliant Spirit Stone was the most ordinary spirit stone within the eighteen types, it was still considered priceless. If one wasn't a talented character of a big family, then they couldn't own one; it was even more expensive than magical treasures.

"You two are way too polite. It's our first time meeting, yet you already gave me such a great gift; how could I accept such good will?"

Although Feng Fei Yun was saying this, he already placed the jade box inside his chest, and he slightly pulled his robes together — it was naturally impossible to take it back out.

Older Brother Mu was also a wise person, so he smiled:

“We can’t fool senior. There is a mine of the Grand Development Immortal Gate in Jing Huan Mountain. Each year, it can produce more than one hundred spirit stones. We brothers have been guarding the mine for fifteen years, so taking out a spirit stone to give to senior was not a difficult matter.”

The two people’s cultivation had reached the early Immortal Foundation, and they could be considered to be experts of one domain; for them to protect a mine, they were more than sufficient. Looking at them up and down, they only seemed to be twenty years old; could it be that they had come here since they were only five?

Feng Fei Yun naturally didn’t believe that the people from the Grand Development Immortal Gate would send two children to guard the mine, so he asked:

“How old are you two?”

“Thirty-eight!”

“Thirty-six!”

More than thirty years old!

Feng Fei Yun suddenly remembered that humans with higher cultivation could be youthful and immortal. It was no wonder why they called him ‘Senior’ even though Fei Yun looked so young. It turned out they thought Feng Fei Yun’s youthfulness was due to his cultivation, and he reserved the natural order, white hair turning black.

“Senior is a grand character, successful in the Dao; do you know what big matter happened in this valley that caused the light to fill the blue sky and piece the heavens?”

Older Brother Mu asked.

“This… There was indeed a big event that happened. I predict that within a few days, there would be a ferocious demon coming to the world.”

Feng Fei Yun wanted to scare the two away. In the end, there was an unimaginable power inside the Mortal Life Cavern; if it came to life, then even

with the strength of the entire Jin Dynasty, they wouldn't necessarily be able to suppress it.

Feng Fei Yun was a person who sees far and wide, understood the matters of life, and he was seemingly able to depict a scene of blood painting one thousand li.

"So there is really a ferocious demon coming into this world; we need to immediately report this to the sect's elders."

Older Brother Mu took out a Flying Jade Talisman from his chest, bit his fingertip, and he used his blood to draw on the talisman. Once finished, he activated the spirit of the talisman, turning it into a white light; like a flying sword that flew straight to the nine heavens, it disappeared amidst the white clouds and blue mountains.

Naturally, he was reporting the matter that happened here to the Grand Development Immortal Gate.

"Senior, you can rest assured that the disciples of our Grand Development Immortal Gate are all true heroes, and they would not be frightened by a mere evil demon. I have already reported to the sect's elders. At the very most, within six hours, the experts of the sect will ride the wind and arrive here."

Older Brother Mu had a smile on his face, but he was secretly thinking that with regards to this ominous ground, along with godly treasures coming into place, this senior just wanted to scare them away; he definitely wanted to seize the godly treasures alone! Heh heh, once the elders in the sect arrived to claim the godly treasures, they would have accomplished a great contribution.

Feng Fei Yun couldn't help but to smile. These two earlier were so scared that they called for their father and mother, yet they still dared to call themselves true heroes. He wanted to persuade these two cowards to quickly leave this place so that they could save their own lives, but he did not think that they would stay and even report to the elders of the Grand Development Immortal Gate.

It would be a miracle if these elders could oppose the ancient power in the Mortal Life Cavern!

The only outcome would be adding a few more old corpses!

Feng Fei Yun knew more than anyone else about the terrible force from this ancient power earlier. If there was really someone who rushed out from the Mortal Life Cavern, then even one hundred elders wouldn't be enough for it to massacre.

"Someone else is coming!"

The three quickly hid in a corner of the valley.

A person wearing a gray colored robe jumped down from the top of the valley. He didn't borrow the momentum from stomping on the rocks of the wall; he only directly jumped down to the ground. Plus, he didn't make a single sound; it was as if he was a leaf falling down.

His clothes were very worn down, his age was around seventeen, and there was a skinny sabre on his back, making others feel pressured by an invisible aura.

There were ghost shadows rushing towards his direction, but he didn't move once. The sabre from his back emitted a blinding light, and it directly shattered the ghost shadows into many pieces.

"Truly amazing power! this is also another senior!"

Older Brother Mu quietly whispered.

"If he wasn't a senior, then he wouldn't have such powerful strength."

The little brother continued.

Feng Fei Yun remained silent. It seems like these two had lived in the mines for too long. Could it be that they didn't know that there were many young talents in this world that were even stronger than the elders?

"He is the Pinnacle Fate Ending Palace's assassin, Du Shou Gao!"

Feng Fei Yun verbally warned them.

"Pin-Pinnacle Fate Ending Palace!"

The two shiveringly took a deep breath. They were clearly in awe by this name, and they didn't dare to look over towards Du Shou Gao's direction. They then stopped breathing in fear of being discovered by Du Shou Gao.

Feng Fei Yun knew earlier that Du Shou Gao had arrived at Jing Huan Mountain. This was a young talent that could kill an elder in one move; if he rushed into the Mortal Life Cavern, then this was not a good event.

“Whoosh whoosh!”

More people were coming, and it was not a small number!

“Du Shou Gao, the sixteen protectors of the Feng family are here, you need to take a trip with us!”

Sixteen figures jumped from above the valley. They were all wearing black armor, and they had heavy sabers the size of a wide door that radiated a silver aura. Their falls impacted the ground, creating sixteen deep craters.

The killing intent from their bodies combined into a chain, turning into a mountain, suppressing Du Shou Gao’s own killing intent.

“Oh heavens, sixteen protectors from the Feng family. Rumor has it that they are the elites of the elite; they have frightening battle prowess! How did this Du Shou Gao offend the Feng family and even cause the sixteen protectors to mobilize?”

Older Brother Mu seemed to understand these big characters, and he was quite alarmed.

Feng Fei Yun’s mind was also clear of the fact that Du Shou Gao brazenly entered the Hidden Dragon Courtyard and killed four elders from the Feng family. It would be strange if the Feng family didn’t send experts to deal with him.

The sixteen elders had powerful ox-like figures, and they were all characters of the elder rank. It seemed like today, Du Shou Gao was ten parts death, one part life.

Feng Fei Yun, with a piece of grass in his mouth, smiled, and he observed the sixteen protectors. He noticed that within the sixteen protectors, there were some older men with white hair; however, there were also some with jade eyes and refined brows — their ages definitely did not exceed twenty in appearance.

Especially the youth standing in the middle of the sixteen protectors; he was

even more exceptional. Even though he was wearing an armor weighing a few hundred jin, his feet did not leave a mark on the ground; it was as if he was standing on a flat water surface.

His eyes carried an ominous aura, but his pupils were extremely deep. Even the Heavenly Phoenix Gaze of Feng Fei Yun couldn't completely see through him.

'Could he be one of the heaven defying talents within the Feng family?'

Feng Fei Yun thought in his mind.

Du Shou Gao was still gallantly standing there. He was without a hint of nervousness when he saw the sixteen protectors; he nonchalantly said:

"What can the likes of you do against me, Du Shou Gao? Your Patriarch sending you here was only to make you accept your death."

"Hmph! Du Shou Gao, you think too highly of yourself. Today, this Feng Jian will be renowned for killing you. No one else take action; I want to see how much skill a Pinnacle Fate Ending Palace's assassin possesses."

The heaven defying talent from the Feng family's name was Feng Jian, and he unexpectedly wanted to fight one on one versus Du Shou Gao! This courage and confidence was quite convincing to spectators.

Feng Fei Yun, standing to the side, contemptuously smiled:

"Challenging a genius assassin; isn't this courting death? It seems like the natural intelligence of the heaven defying talents of the Feng family is too low, ah!"

Chapter 57 : Ominous Ground

If Feng Jian dared to declare his challenge towards Du Shou Gao, then he would naturally possess extraordinary abilities.

The energy of his entire body ragingly overflowed, like a winding serpent. He unleashed a thunderous punch, sending forth a powerful shadow fist.

This momentum shocked the spectators. The power of the fist was terrifying, it caused the wind to crazily flutter about.

Feng Fei Yun also withdrew his contempt, and he approvingly nodded. This Feng Jian only unleashed an ordinary punch, yet within this punch appeared many different sword energies.

One punch, along with sword energies, came out with exceedingly high spirit power. It was even one step stronger than an expert like Feng Jian Xue at the intermediate God Base.

“Worthy of the title ‘heaven defying talent’. If he doesn’t die today in Du Shou Gao’s hands, then, in the future, he will definitely be a ruler within the Feng family.”

Feng Fei Yun didn’t blink once. He really wanted to see the outcome of this one move because, from the beginning till now, the assassin Du Shou Gao had always only used one move.

“Whoosh!”

Feng Jian was indeed very strong. The power of this one fist was enough to cause the debris and dust to blind the sky, but, in a flash, the fist’s energy suddenly disappeared without a trace. The sabre on Du Shou Gao’s back was unknowingly unsheathed, and the one blade chopped off Feng Jian’s right arm.

Even though it was just one blade, Feng Jian couldn’t avoid it completely.

Too swift!

Feng Jian seemed to not feel any sensation of pain, and his whole body was frozen without movement. At first, he thought he was a genius without peer in

this world, but the one blade of Du Shou Gao shattered all of his confidence.

It was as if he turned into a slow-witted statue. He ignored the blood spurting down his shoulder like a stream, and the spirit in his eyes became increasingly faint.

Feng Fei Yun sighed, and he said:

“Feng Jian is useless!”

Feng Fei Yun had met many geniuses, but the ones with strong willpower were few in number. Feng Jian was absolutely a top genius, but his willpower was not comparable to Du Shou Gao.

If Du Shou Gao’s arm was cut off by someone else, then he would become even more resolute; he was not like Feng Jian who became someone who has currently lost his spirit.

Du Shou Gao returned his blade, and he said:

“I originally wanted to take your life with this blade; however, you were able to avoid it, and I could only cut off one of your arms. Your cultivation and aptitude is extremely high; if you keep working hard, then, in the future, it might not be impossible for you to kill me.”

Feng Jian remained motionless; it was like he had lost his soul.

Du Shou Gao coldly glared at Feng Jian, and he seemed to notice the ashes in his eyes; he then said:

“I thought you were a good opponent, so I was going to spare you life; however, I didn’t think that you were already a cripple. If that is the case, then you no longer need to live.”

“Poof!”

A lightning fast blade suddenly flew forward, and it directly cut Feng Jian into two pieces.

The moment Feng Jian fell to the ground, the fifteen protectors of the Feng family finally reacted. They quickly encircled Du Shou Gao in the middle.

“Du Shou Gao, you dared to kill the great grandson of the eighth great

grandfather; you are calling a grand calamity upon yourself!”

“The Feng family will not tolerate being under this sky together with you! Today will be your funeral!”

Du Shou Gao remained poised; he glared at the armored protectors, and then he said:

“Only with you guys?”

When those words came out, Du Shou Gao, who was originally trapped in the middle, suddenly disappeared, leaving no trace behind; this caused others to feel astonished.

Someone exclaimed:

“This is the Earth Shield Technique, one of the mysterious spirit techniques. I can’t believe Du Shou Gao was successful in learning it!”

Spirit techniques in the cultivation world were numerous, but there were rankings for these spirit techniques from high to low. For instance, Du Shou Gao’s technique was a mysterious technique that was extremely hard to cultivate. Ten thousand cultivators wouldn’t necessarily have one person that could learn it successfully.

Feng Fei Yun truly couldn’t stand the fifteen protectors standing like flies without their heads, so he reminded them:

“He jumped down the crack, and he ran towards the Mortal Life Cavern!”

“Thank you, Senior, for the information. We will go capture this villain!”

There was a protector standing near the crack, and he opportunely saw Du Shou Gao jumping into the Mortal Life Cavern as well; the fifteen protectors all rushed into the crack, and they went into the crevice of the cavern.

Waiting half the time it takes to drink a cup of tea, Feng Fei Yun came forward, and he also crazily rushed towards the crack. At this moment, Du Shou Gao and the fifteen protectors were leading the way, so he could finally rush into the Mortal Life Cavern.

After his departure into the cave, Dong Fang Jing Yue had also arrived. The Haotian Spirit Mirror was floating on top of her head, just like a bright moon.

The mirror manifested the scene where Du Shou Gao and Feng Jian were fighting earlier. Even though it was a simple technique, inside, many tricks were hidden.

“Du Shou Gao is indeed strong. If I could recruit him for the Yin Gou family, then, in the future, he could be a god of death.”

Dong Fang Jing Yue’s sleeves were dancing in the wind, and her immortal presence extended into the distance, carrying along an illusory spiritual influence that moved the hearts of spectators.

People couldn’t help but to want to worship her!

The image on the Haotian Spirit Mirror changed, and a shadow appeared on its surface. It was none other than Feng Fei Yun!

Seeing Feng Fei Yun’s figure jumping down into the depths and then rush into the Mortal Life Cavern, Dong Fang Jing Yue’s expression became even more emotionless. A chilling mist escaped into the air, causing the two disciples from the Grand Development Immortal Gate, who were hiding in valley, to almost freeze to death.

“Feng Fei Yun, let’s see how you will escape this time?!”

Dong Fang Jing Yue turned into a shadow and flew directly into the Mortal Life Cavern.

“Th-This is surely another senior; her strength must be even higher than Master!”

Older Brother Mu was lying face down on the ground, covered in white mist.

“It seems like this female senior and Senior Feng have a great quarrel. Both of them are grand characters; if they fight each other, then it would definitely be heaven frightening and earth shattering.”

“Inside the Mortal Life Cavern will definitely be a belligerent battle!”

*** ***

The two disciples of the Grand Development Immortal Gate were in awe by Dong Fang Jing Yue’s presence, and they didn’t dare to remain in the valley a second longer; they quickly headed outside.

After Feng Fei Yun entered the Mortal Life Cavern, he felt as if he was entering an icy glacier. There definitely was no signs of Du Shou Gao and the fifteen protectors; they had obviously entered deeper inside the cavern.

The path was filled with blood and sword markings. Even though he didn't personally see the battle, he could guess that they were running and fighting at the same time — it was extremely cruel and bitter.

"Their lives have nothing to do with me. The most important thing, at the moment, is to find the cowardly miss, Little Sister Jian Xue. This place is scarily eerie, so she must definitely be crying from fear."

Feng Fei Yun quickly rushed forward, not knowing how far he had gone. Suddenly, the front loomed of chantings of a monk; it was as if he was transcending the dead souls.

Why are there monk's chantings beneath the ground?

Feng Fei Yun suddenly paused, and his expression slightly changed. He suddenly remembered the words of the servant boy back at the White Horse Inn.

"The Yin Gou family's mine dug out an ominous thing, and there was a temple from a few thousand years ago. The monks inside the temple had underwent Corpse Transformation — living for thousands of years without a change in their bodies."

"I can't be this unlucky, right? If the Mortal Life Cavern was connected to that mine, then am I not going straight to the ominous location? If this was the case, then everyone here who stepped inside the Mortal Life Cavern will die today!"

There was cold sweat on Feng Fei Yun's forehead. Compared to others, he understood the most about the dangers of a place undergoing Corpse Transformation. Without a cultivation of the Heaven's Fate realm, then essentially, there was no chance of survival.

"Heaven's Fate" was a realm higher than "God Base". Only the ancestors of the Feng family could reach this Heaven's Fate realm.

The people at the Immortal Foundation and God Base realms were considered experts, but they were ten thousand miles behind Heaven's Fate cultivators.

Feng Fei Yun really wanted to turn back; however, he thought of Feng Jian Xue shivering in fear, so he gritted his teeth and continued forward.

There were many paths underneath this cavern that extended in all four directions. They were filled with corpse gas all year round, so any early Spirit Realm cultivator intruding this place would be poisoned by the corpse gas within an hour.

After knowing the dangers of this place, Feng Fei Yun became even more cautious. After every path, he used spirit energy to carve a rune into the walls as a tracking marker.

“The chanting is becoming more clear!”

Feng Fei Yun leaned towards the wall and focused on listening.

“Boom!”

Suddenly, a violent explosion came about from the wall that almost shattered Feng Fei Yun’s eardrums.

“Someone is fighting! Also, it is the sound of a girl; could it be Jian Xue?”

The sound of the cavern intensified, and it sounded like someone wanted to destroy the entire Mortal Life Cavern. Feng Fei Yun’s feet stomped on the ground, and he quickly headed towards the battle location.

“Shit, why is it this damned woman?”

Feng Fei Yun said.

Three ancient monk corpses, wearing tattered monk robes, were in a grand battle with Dong Fang Jing Yue. Even the walls were broken into little pieces!

The bodies of the three monks were half-rotten withered bodies with hollow eye sockets, and their foreheads were filled with bloody scars.

They were chanting verses while forming Buddhist palm marks. Their cultivation was extremely frightening, causing Dong Fang Jing Yue to be trapped in a dangerous situation. Even when she summoned her Haotian Spirit Mirror, it was knocked away by a monk corpse, cornering her into the rocky wall.

“Haha! Dong Fang Jing Yue ah! Dong Fang Jing Yue! This day finally happened

to you?”

Feng Fei Yun hid to the side while watching the show. He felt a great sense of joy.

Of course, he was also secretly admiring the powerful cultivation of Dong Fang Jing Yue. To be able to fight three one thousand year old ancient corpses; if it was someone else, then they would have been eaten by them much earlier.

Chapter 58 : Big Brother Fei Yun

Three one thousand years old monk corpses — each had an adamantine like body that was impervious to damage and legs as hard as steel. Plus, the spirit energy in their bodies was always being channeled, and their dantian was occupied by a treasure stone as big as a fist, emitting a dense black light.

They had died for several thousand years, so, not only did their bodies undergo Corpse Transformation, even their God Base that they had cultivated was changed into Corpse Base.

“Does Little Girl Dong Fang Jing Yue require me lending a hand or not, ah?”

Feng Fei Yun leaned on the rock wall, and he laughed by the side.

Dong Fang Jing Yue’s status was extremely prestigious, and her cultivation transcendented the mortal boundary. No matter where she went, there would be countless numbers of people prostrating themselves to greet her; no one ever dared to call Dong Fang Jing Yue a ‘little girl’.

However, at this moment, she was surrounded by the three monk corpses, and her jade hands were stained with blood. There was a claw wound from one of the monk corpses, creating a line that would pain others to look at. With a more careful observation, her slender neck also had a wound, and the black corpse poison had entered her skin, corroding her energy.

“Feng Fei Yun, if you take action and help me, then all of the grudges between us will be erased!”

At this moment, Dong Fang Jing Yue had been backed into a corner. After the three monks were exposed to the blood on her body, they became even more violent, their battle power increased.

Feng Fei Yun happily smiled:

“I heard that the Yin Gou family was unbeatable in this world, and the status of Dong Fang Jing Yue was unreachable. If I could hear your gentle voice calling me “Big Brother Fei Yun”, then I will definitely get you out of danger.”

Feng Fei Yun naturally wouldn't save Dong Fang Jing Yue. This girl, no matter if it was her cultivation or intelligence, exceeded others. The younger generation didn't have many people that could keep up with her. By saving her now, the first person she would want to kill in the future would be Feng Fei Yun.

Feng Fei Yun knew that she was extremely prideful and she would absolutely not call him "Big Brother Fei Yun", so he decided to tease her.

It would be better if this ferocious and damned woman died to avoid being chased by her for three days and three nights!

"Big Brother Fei Yun!!!"

The beautiful voice fluttered through the blue sky, and it was gentle like the surface of a river. After hearing it, any man would be numb to the bones.

"Poof!"

Feng Fei Yun almost fell head-first to the ground. She actually said it! Plus, the voice made it so that others couldn't refuse, just like two lovers calling each other.

"Ahem… This…"

At this moment, Feng Fei Yun had a hard time standing straight. Only the heavens would know that Dong Fang Jing Yue didn't care for this trivial matter; this time, Fei Yun made it hard for himself.

"Feng Fei Yun, what are you waiting for? Do you want to be a person that can't keep his words?"

The voice of Dong Fang Jing Yue suddenly changed. It was filled with coldness and no longer had the hint of gentleness from earlier.

"Of course I will save you! A man will stay true to his words!"

Even though Feng Fei Yun was filled with regret, he had to make a move out of moralistic ideals. In the worst case, he would just have to save her, and then he would drag her to an isolated place, killing her afterwards.

Naturally, Feng Fei Yun couldn't be like a brute and rashly fight against the three monk corpses. He gathered a faint light on his finger and engraved incantations down on the ground. Each runic word connected with others, and it

slowly became nine palaces of incantations in the same place, turning into a nine parts altar.

Ordinary offensive means cannot be used to deal with these thousand year old corpses. One would need to engrave corpse refining incantations in order to form a corpse refining altar.

Use the power of the altar to refine the ancient corpses!

Feng Fei Yun's heart was aching as he took out the True Brilliant Spirit Stone, lamenting:

"I didn't even hold it long enough to warm my body, and it is already gone!"

A large amount of spirit energy was required to activate the corpse refining altar. Feng Fei Yun's current cultivation was extremely lacking, so he could only use the spirit stone to activate the altar to refine these three ancient corpses.

"Go!"

After placing the True Brilliant Spirit Stone onto the altar, it was like the altar came into life; it quickly rotated under the control of Feng Fei Yun, flying towards the three ancient corpses.

"Capture!"

The power of the altar, supported by the True Brilliant Spirit Stone, became increasingly stronger. A devouring force escaped to the outside causing the extremely powerful monk corpses to be sucked in.

"Bam!"

Feng Fei Yun suddenly jumped up from the ground, and he stomped on the altar, creating an explosive sound.

The three ancient monk corpses were finally suppressed. The light on the altar was still shining, and the chanting of the three monks could still be heard. This was not enough to refine the three ancient monk corpses!

Even though Dong Fang Jing Yue was still as cold and emotionless as before, her white robe was stained with blood; beads of sweat rolled down on her long black hair. It was clear that she was severely injured, and the corpse poisonous gas had corroded her spirit energy.

Even though she was still wearing the concealing veil, Feng Fei Yun knew that she was pale as a piece of paper.

She deserved to be called an extraordinary woman. She used her powerful cultivation to forcibly suppress the corpse poison in her body, still wearing an arrogant expression. She coldly snorted, and she said:

“Feng Fei Yun, I didn’t think you would be able to use this mysterious technique. Your talents, compared to the heaven defying geniuses of the Feng family, are many times greater. However… no one had ever dared to bully me, so you must die today!”

Dong Fang Jing Yue felt that she was extremely humiliated today. Then, she was also coerced by this Feng Fei Yun to call him “Big Brother Fei Yun”. This was truly… This matter gave her the urge to puke!

If this matter was spread, then she absolutely wouldn’t have the face to meet anyone!

She gently flipped her hand, and the Haotian Spirit Mirror that was initially stuck in a wall, flew back to her hand. An ancient energy that overflew from her fingertip caused the godly energy of the Haotian Spirit Mirror to activate.

The power of a spirit treasure was enough to destroy the heavens and earths. Once activated, it could shatter and tremble an entire region.

“This damned woman really wants to destroy the bridge after crossing the river.”

However, Feng Fei Yun suddenly felt that the corpse refining altar under his feet was violently shaking; it was as if the three ancient monk corpses wanted to break the altar and rush out.

“Little Girl Dong Fang Jing Yue, stop messing around. The ancient corpses of this place had reached the second level of Corpse Transformation. This corpse refining altar simply can’t refine them; they are about to escape!”

Feng Fei Yun’s expression changed. This was much more serious than before!

He initially thought this place was just an Ominous Ground. Even with some ancient Corpse Transformation, he would still be able to find a way to live.

However, he didn’t expect that the ancient corpses in this place had underwent their second Corpse Transformation — this was too frightening!

What the hell was this evil place?

Even though Dong Fang Jing Yue didn’t know what a second Corpse Transformation was, she also noticed that something was wrong; she saw that the altar underneath Feng Fei Yun’s foot beginning to collapse, crack after crack appeared.

“Mother ah! Run away!”

Feng Fei Yun turned around and ran. All of the spirit energy in his body was channeled, and his speed reached its extreme.

“Boom!”

A shattering explosion came from behind. The three ancient monk corpses broke the seal, and they rushed outside. Their corpse energy became even more consolidated, and their body turned as dark as coal. Their mouths were full of fangs, and they suddenly coughed out a large breath of corpse poison.

They lifted their heads, and they deafeningly shrilled; they then chased towards Dong Fang Jing Yue’s direction.

Even though Dong Fang Jing Yue was holding the Haotian Spirit Mirror, it couldn’t penetrate the invulnerable adamantite bodies of the monk corpses. At most, it could only knock them flying away, but then they would immediately rush back on the offensive.

In the end, she didn’t have another choice outside of running away.

“Dong Fang Jing Yue, don’t follow me. Do you want to kill me as well?”

Feng Fei Yun was fleeing for his life in the front only to find out that Dong Fang Jing Yue was chasing right behind him; the three monk corpses were also ferociously moving towards this direction.

“Feng Fei Yun, even if I die, I will pull you under with me!”

The corpse poison inside Dong Fang Jing Yue’s body was starting to spread. Her wound began to bleed black blood resulting in the pathway being dyed a blackish red.

And the ancient monk corpses were following the smell of blood to chase after them, so it was impossible to leave the corpses behind.

Feng Fei Yun was angry to the point where he wanted to curse at someone's mother, but he clearly knew that cursing at Dong Fang Jing Yue's mother wouldn't have any effect at this moment. The only important thing was to quickly escape this place.

On their escape path, they didn't know where they were running to. The road ahead became increasingly wide and open; it was as if they were going into a valley. An underground lake appeared before them. Except… the water was the color of blood.

Feng Fei Yun, without any hesitation, rushed forward. In reality, the three ancient monk corpses were chasing too fast, so he didn't have the choice to wait.

He wanted to stomp on the water surface and rush over it; however, beneath the lake was an unknown power with a powerful suction, and it directly dragged him into the water.

"Poof!"

Dong Fang Jing Yue also followed his steps and fell into the lake of blood, directly hitting Feng Fei Yun in the head, almost rendering him unconscious.

"Fuck! You damned woman, did you do it on purpose? Oh mother, they are here again!"

Feng Fei Yun struggled to float towards the top of the water; however, right at this moment, he saw the three monk corpses arriving. Their bodies were half rotten, but their monk robes were still brightly golden; they wanted to catch Feng Fei Yun.

He quickly pedaled in the water with his body leaning backward. One of his hands grabbed the sash of Dong Fang Jing Yue, who was swimming behind him, and he suddenly pulled, wanting to borrow the momentum to retreat and escape the ancient monk corpses.

However, he used too much strength! The white silk sash of Dong Fang Jing Yue was pulled straight down, and her entire body was revealed. A large portion

of her snow white bosom was revealed — simply too alluring.

It’s over, another great calamity was brought forth!

This damned girl Dong Fang Jing Yue was already a very narrow-minded and petty person; he simply forced her to call him “Big Brother Fei Yun”, yet she was already shouting about wanting to kill him. At this moment, he had pulled down her entire sash — it would be a miracle if she didn’t lose her mind!

Chapter 59 : The Appearance Under the Veil

The three ancient monk corpses seemed to fear the lake of blood, and they essentially didn't dare to step in the bloody water. They only waited on the shore, screeching while they spewed black corpse fog nonstop.

Feng Fei Yun and Dong Fang Jing Yue quickly swam in the water. Their clothes were dyed red by the bloody water, and their hair was also full of bloody residue; even their skin was covered by a layer of bloody mud.

After making it to the shore, the two were out of breath, sitting on the ground. Their bodies were wet and without any strength. It was fortunate that the three ancient monk corpses did not come; otherwise, they could only sit and wait for their death.

"Little Girl Dong Fang Jing Yue, how did you offend the three ancient monk corpses in the end? Why were they always chasing you down?"

Feng Fei Yun had a difficult time breathing as he asked.

Feng Fei Yun was lying on the floor for a while, but he didn't hear an answer — could it be that this girl had died?

Feng Fei Yun's hands struggled to support his body as he got up. He turned his head and saw that Dong Fang Jing Yue was lying behind him with her eyes closed shut, motionless. It was like she was dead.

Because she was soaked in the blood water for so long, her clothes were tightly attached to her body, revealing the curvaceous outlines of her body vividly and thoroughly. The white silk robe was also soaked with watery blood; the two twin peaks stood erect, perfectly round and fragrantly voluptuous — truly enough to fill one's grasp. Not a single trace of excess flesh could be found, and there was also the pair of slender and long legs…

Feng Fei Yun quickly turned his head away, afraid that if he kept on staring, then he would commit certain uncontrollable acts.

This couldn't go any other way. For a woman like Dong Fang Jing Yue, any man who saw her couldn't help but have the impulse to hug her in their arms. Plus, at

this moment, she was lying down on the ground motionlessly, as if deliberately waiting for Feng Fei Yun to make a move towards her.

“No wonder she didn’t go crazy when I pulled off her sash. It seems like the corpse poison inside her body had already spread to the God Base in her dantian!”

Because the sash of Dong Fang Jing Yue was torn away by Feng Fei Yun, her outer robe was loose, revealing her skin below her neck. One could faintly see her slightly purple dudou; it seemed to be sending an alluring fragrance.

This was absolutely a woman that could bewilder someone to pay with his own life. She could make any man in the world forget his road home because of her.

Feng Fei Yun’s gaze was directed towards her neck and chest, and his mind was filled with an internal struggle.

At this moment, Feng Fei Yun was considering one problem. Naturally, it was not to rush over and kiss her, and then force himself on her; it was to save her or to kill her.

Dong Fang Jing Yue’s neck and chest both have wounds caused by the ancient corpses, and she was invaded by the corpse poison. The wounds were pitch black. When Fei Yun casted the Heavenly Phoenix Gaze, he could see a faint black mist emitting from the wounds; they were slowly corroding her flesh.

Without a doubt, if Feng Fei Yun took action at this moment, he could easily kill her then throw her corpse into the river of blood. Then, he would never need to worry about her killing him in the future as well as the pressure from the Yin Gou family.

Even the “Haotian Spirit Mirror” spirit treasure would be his!

If this was the action, it would definitely be lucrative.

“Dong Fang Jing Yue, don’t blame me for being too merciless. Just blame your bad luck in meeting I, Feng Fei Yun. Today is the day where ‘the sweet fragrance dissipates and the jade is destroyed’.”

No poison, no great man.

Feng Fei Yun knew clearly that if he didn’t kill her now, then, when she healed,

she would definitely tear him into thousands of pieces.

This was the best time to take action. After killing her, he would destroy her corpse and the evidence — who would know that Feng Fei Yun was the one who killed her?

Feng Fei Yun changed his palm into a fist, wanting to smash her head with one blow. The fist's energy was fierce; it was still three zhang away, but it was enough to cause the stones around her body to shake.

"Whoosh!"

The wind from the fist energy caused her veil to be blown away, revealing a beauty capable of toppling cities and countries.

Her eyebrows were long and slender like the willow leafs; her curving eyelashes were still stained with glimmering blood drops; and that pair of lips, they were crafted to the point of perfection. They were just like two thin roses.

The face beneath the veil was captivatingly suffocating; any descriptions were pale compared to her matchless beauty — she was simply one in a million.

Seeing this face, Feng Fei Yun's whole body quivered as if he was struck by lightning. He originally wanted to kill her with one blow, but now, he suddenly and forcefully withdrew his punch.

"Poof!"

The reverse power of the fist caused him to spew out a mouthful of blood!

"Shui Yue Ting… No, she is Dong Fang Jing Yue. No… She is Shui Yue Ting… She has to be Shui Yue Ting…"

At this moment, Feng Fei Yun felt an excruciating pain in his chest. With one knee on the ground, his hands tightly clasped his chest, and was unable to rise from the ground for a long time.

The first time Feng Fei Yun met Dong Fang Jing Yue, he mistook her for Shui Yue Ting; however, that was simply because their presence was too similar. However, who could have expected that under the veil, she was exactly the same as Shui Yue Ting.

It was truly the same person!

Feng Fei Yun's heart regarded Shui Yue Ting with hatred, extreme hatred, and, at this moment, it fully exploded. His expression became ferocious, and he roared:

"Shui Yue Ting, your heart is truly cruel. Since you didn't successfully kill me at that time, today will be your funeral!"

Feng Fei Yun stumbled up and down towards Dong Fang Jing Yue, and he got on top of her body. A fist suddenly struck her chest. Because Feng Fei Yun was wounded earlier by the reverse power of his fist, this strike was not too powerful.

This blow struck her chest; however, it essentially didn't pierce through her body, and instead, more than half of its power was dissipated by her two towering twin peaks.

Nobody expected that this blow from Feng Fei Yun also pushed out half of the corpse poison inside Dong Fang Jing Yue's body.

"Poof!"

Dong Fang Jing Yue's cherry lips spat out a mouthful of dark blood directly onto Feng Fei Yun's face.

Feng Fei Yun's expression was already ferocious, but it became even more frightening.

"You actually dared to spurt on my face… You dared to spurt on my face…"

Feng Fei Yun, again, wanted to take her life with another blow.

"Mmmmm…"

Dong Fang Jing Yue slowly woke up. Her beautiful pair of eyes opened. Her body seemed to still be extremely weak. She could feel the pain coming from her chest, and she saw Feng Fei Yun riding on her slender waist — she immediately thought of something.

Thinking about the things that could have occurred, Dong Fang Jing Yue almost vomited blood from anger. This bastard Feng Fei Yun was so wretched; he took advantage of her being unconscious, and then…

She felt a terrible pain in her chest; it was as if Feng Fei Yun was kneading them

for a long time. Moreover, he also used great strength to knead them; how could this bastard be so low life!

Dong Fang Jing Yue then thought about other things that could have happened to her body, and suddenly, a teardrop fell from her eye; she mercilessly gazed at Feng Fei Yun:

“Feng… Feng… Fei Yun, I… until now… have never seen… such a low life and shameless bastard like you…”

“Peh!”

Dong Fang Jing Yue, again, spat on Feng Fei Yun’s face. At this moment, her mind was confused, and she had the impulse to commit suicide.

“You spat on me? You spat on me again…? Shui Yue Ting, when it comes to being shameless and a low life, I am not equal to one part of you. Today, I will make you pay all of the debts you owe me.”

Feng Fei Yun’s eyes turned red, and his hands became sharp claws wanting to suffocate her.

One couldn’t blame Feng Fei Yun for becoming so berserk; it was simply because his hatred towards Shui Yue Ting was too deep. In this world, only Shui Yue Ting could cause him to become so confused and distraught.

“Feng Fei Yun, you committed outrageous deeds, yet you still dare to blame me? You are essentially not worthy to be a man!”

Dong Fang Jing Yue’s anger was no less than Feng Fei Yun’s. Her pure holy body was ravaged by Feng Fei Yun; her not cursing was proof to see how trained she was.

“Not worthy of being a man? Not worthy of being a man? You say I am not worthy of being a man? Hahaha! I am already a man; this is an indisputable fact, and it impossible to change… Hahaha!”

Feng Fei Yun lifted his head, and he laughed; it was an extremely carefree and unrestrained laughter.

The person he was referring to was naturally Shui Yue Ting and not Dong Fang Jing Yue!

However, after hearing this, Dong Fang Jing Yue's expression became sickly pale; her chest was angrily rising and falling, and she inadvertently vomited blood onto Feng Fei Yun's face again:

"You… You, you actually… You actually…"

She initially thought that Feng Fei Yun only touched her breasts, but she didn't expect Feng Fei Yun to be such a beast, destroying her purity…

Her mind went black, and she immediately passed out.

After his laughter, he became calm again. He saw that he was riding on top of Dong Fang Jing Yue's body. He noticed that her chest was bruised by his blow.

"Dong Fang… Jing Yue, it is over, finished. I mistook her for the wrong person again! Hitting women is not the style of I, Feng Fei Yun!"

Even though he still hated Dong Fang Jing Yue — he could still kill her with a direct blow instead of tormenting her like this — but this was not his style.

Hitting a woman and killing a woman are two different concepts!

"No wonder she said I am not worthy to be a man; when I was clouded by uncontrollable anger, I struck her chest. Fine, even though I, Feng Fei Yun, am not a virtuous gentleman, I am clear and open with my own morality. Today, I will save your life to make it up for that blow earlier. It was meant for Shui Yue Ting, but I wrongfully struck you instead."

Of course, Feng Fei Yun didn't know that by saving this one life, in the future, there would be even more trouble for him!

Chapter 60 : Underground Temple

“Damned grandma, you should have died in my hands. I, Feng Fei Yun, am feeling extremely charitable today, and I will save your life. In the future, if you keep on entangling with me, then I will definitely not show any mercy.”

Feng Fei Yun grabbed the struggling hands of Dong Fang Jing Yue, and he moved them behind her head. Then, he started to suck out the corpse poison from her smooth and delicate neck, and he spat out the pitch black poisoned blood to the ground.

“Feng Fei Yun, let me go! I don’t want to be saved by you. If you dare to touch me again, I will risk my life against you!”

Dong Fang Jing Yue gritted her teeth. The feeling of Feng Fei Yun’s lips creeping around her neck made her want to slap him, but at this moment, she didn’t have any strength; she only could let Feng Fei Yun’s lips continue to kiss her jade like neck.

Yes, this was a kiss — at the very least, she thought so!

This made her want to vomit…!

“Don’t move, if I become infected by the corpse poison as well, then both of us will die in this place.”

Feng Fei Yun’s mouth had been covered by spirit energy, so he was not infected by the corpse poison.

Feng Fei Yun, once again, sat on her slender waist, and in one “rip” later, he tore off her dudou. He then buried his head in there, and he continued to suck out the poison.

“Slurp, Slurp!”

The wound that was infested by corpse poison on her chest was even deeper and longer. If the poison wasn’t sucked out quickly, then her chest would begin to rot all the way to her belly, resulting in death.

However, at this moment, Dong Fang Jing Yue would rather have her chest

corroded to her stomach and die rather than have this low life Feng Fei Yun take advantage of her in this situation, at least, from her perspective. This Feng Fei Yun was truly a beast out of all beasts. His mouth was even letting off “slurping” sounds; it was as if he was truly intoxicated by the act.

“Feng Fei Yun, I’m telling you that from now on, I will not leave you alone. I will cut out your dirty eyes, cut off your lowly hands, and… and… and your tongue; it must be cut away as well…”

Dong Fang Jing Yue didn’t even have the strength to berate someone. Her forehead was filled with sweat, and she was breathing heavily. Her cheeks were blushed red; it was not certain that it was because the poison was being removed from her body, her blood energy became stronger, or from embarrassment.

“Dong Fang Jing Yue, who do you think you are? I, Feng Fei Yun, could be considered a womanizer, but I will absolutely never consider you. Even if you were standing in front of me, completely naked, I would not touch you once.”

After Feng Fei Yun spat out a mouthful of poison blood to the ground, he covered her chest again with her clothes. No longer riding her waist like a water serpent, he immediately stood up.

His words were the truth. Even if Dong Fang Jing Yue was naked to seduce him, he wouldn’t be moved at all. He couldn’t accept a woman who looked so similar to Shui Yue Ting. The only reason he saved her was because he wanted to make up for the guilt in his heart.

The corpse poison was all sucked out of her body; her eyes regained their color, and she some spirit; however, because she lost too much blood, her body was still very weak.

She coldly glared at Feng Fei Yun, and then she took a spirit pill out of her chest, placing it in her mouth. She then assumed a meditation pose, and she began to recover her energy.

It was clear that this spirit pill was not ordinary one. Even though it was already swallowed, it was still emitting light, resulting in her body being enveloped by its brilliance.

At the same time, the Haotian Spirit Mirror also slowly floated upward to the top of her head, and it protected her with its mirror light. Of course, this was a precaution against Feng Fei Yun; she did not trust this shameless beast.

'Feng Fei Yun! Wait until I recover three tiers of my strength, then I will absolutely kill you in this place.'

Even though Dong Fang Jing Yue was not a narrow-minded person, she was definitely a prideful woman. She absolutely would not allow the Feng Fei Yun who had tainted her innocence to leave the Mortal Life Cavern alive.

This would be a scar for the rest of her life. Only by killing Feng Fei Yun would she obtain a sense of solace!

At this moment, Feng Fei Yun naturally didn't know Dong Fang Jing Yue's thoughts. He squatted on the ground, and he began to analyze the ancient corpse poison on the ground. The poison that could render a powerful person like Dong Fang Jing Yue unconscious must be extremely powerful.

'If I collect this blood, then use it against elder level characters, I could definitely turn them into a pool of pus and blood within two hours!'

Feng Fei Yun took out the jade box that originally stored the True Brilliant Spirit Stone, and he carefully packed the tainted blood inside.

Having done all of this, Feng Fei Yun was very tired. He also sat in a meditation pose to begin to recover his energy.

On the other side of the river of blood, the shrill screeching of the three monk corpses continued. The mournful tone shook the river, causing ripples to form.

Feng Fei Yun and Dong Fang Jing Yue were meditating next to the blood lake, and they closed their eyes to heal. The screeching had no effect on them.

Behind them was a scene of black emptiness, and they essentially couldn't see what was there. There were faint sounds of footsteps, but no one ever walked out. In other words, it was not the footsteps of humans!

The injury of Feng Fei Yun was much lighter than Dong Fang Jing Yue's, so his recovery was faster. He stared over at Dong Fang Jing Yue, who was still healing, and he gazed at her magnificent face that was unmatched in this generation.

This kind of beauty, with this kind of temperament, was enough to lure any man's heart.

'No wonder why she always has to wear the veil. This beauty does not belong to the mortal world. If people with lower self control were to see her, then they would lose their minds instantly.'

'Such an alluring face can endlessly captivate others; she is not only beautiful, but she is also proud. With such a face that's capable of murdering people; if she wasn't so petty, then Dong Fang Jing Yue could be reckoned to be the first or second best woman of this generation.'

Dong Fang Jing Yue naturally was not a petty woman. If it wasn't for Feng Fei Yun striking her once for no reason, then she wouldn't be pursuing him. If it wasn't for Feng Fei Yun mistaking her for Shui Yue Ting again, she wouldn't hate Fei Yun to this extent.

If Shui Yue Ting didn't exist in this world, then there wouldn't be so many misunderstandings; Feng Fei Yun would absolutely fall madly in love with her — this was for certain, and even Feng Fei Yun wouldn't deny this.

Of course, regarding Feng Fei Yun at this moment, Dong Fang Jing Yue lamented the fact that she couldn't immediately kill him and drink his blood. The moment her cultivation was restored by one level would be when he would be brought nearer to the gate of death.

"I gotta get out of this place before she wakes up!"

Feng Fei Yun removed his gaze from her city-toppling beauty, stood up, and he started striding to the pitch black space.

There were still faint footsteps in his ears. In the beginning, Feng Fei Yun thought that it was his own footsteps but, when he stopped, the footsteps were still ringing.

It was as if there was someone wandering in the black curtain back and forth!

In front of him was a never disappearing darkness, and it was like there were layers of black mists covering his eyes.

"Who on earth are you, come out!"

The Immortal Foundation within Feng Fei Yun's dantian exuded wave after wave of godly senses, and the energy in his entire body was channeled; he was ready to make a move at any time.

"Who are you, come out…?"

"Who are you, come out…!"

***

Besides the echoes — along with the footsteps — in his ears, there was no one else appearing.

"Pretending to be gods and devils, show yourself!"

Two flames rose up in Feng Fei Yun's pupils. The Heavenly Phoenix Gaze bursted out a shooting light towards the darkness. This scene caused him to frighteningly jump, and he couldn't help but take several steps back.

This was an extremely shocking scene!

In front of his eyes was an empty space with a ruined temple that was suspended in the air. It was unknown for how many years this temple had been abandoned, but the walls and the broken rooftops were covered with spider webs.

This temple was extremely huge. There were Buddhist chambers, pagodas, and a courtyard planted with great towering trees, but, because it had been buried for many years under the earth, the trees were already dead, bare, and austere.

Of course, the thing that really frightened Feng Fei Yun was not the ancient temple underground, but the monks walking back and forth inside the ancient temple. These monks had died for who-knows-how-many thousand years, but they were still holding their Buddhist beads. They seemed to be chanting, but there were no sound of chants.

The ancient monk corpses inside this ancient temple numbered around one thousand. Each of them were enveloped with a thick killing aura; they were definitely not any weaker than the three ancient monk corpses that were chasing Dong Fang Jing Yue earlier.

If these ancient monk corpses in this underground temple were to run

rampant outside, then it would be an earth shattering calamity. The entire Grand Southern Prefecture, or even the entire Jin Dynasty, may no longer exist.

‘It seems like they are imprisoned by something, and they simply couldn’t escape from this broken temple.’

Feng Fei Yun was slightly relieved. If these ancient monk corpses truly rushed outside, then there would absolutely be no one that could stop them.

“Feng Fei Yun, you still dare to escape? I want to see where you will run to today?”

The voice of Dong Fang Jing Yue rang about and became increasingly closer. She had chased to here and swore to not let this go without killing Feng Fei Yun!

“Damned grandma, don’t come over here! Do you want to die?”

Feng Fei Yun was angered to the point where he started cursing.

Dong Fang Jing Yue naturally wouldn’t believe his nonsense, so, after hearing his plead, she smiled instead:

“Today, even if you have wings, you wouldn’t be able to fly away!”

Chapter 61 : Accidentally Rushed into the Temple

The outside of the Haotian Spirit Mirror was covered with a layer of white light; this was its spirit awakening through a formation within the spirit treasure!

This dazzling light radiating from the mirror was truly majestic; it carried the seal of an ancient beast's claw, and it ferociously attacked towards Feng Fei Yun's direction.

Rumor has it that there was a fierce beast sealed inside the Haotian Spirit Mirror even though only a claw was revealed, at this moment; however, it was enough to intimidate others.

"Whoosh!"

A destructive force came about, rattling Feng Fei Yun until he couldn't stand still; he had to take three steps back to regain his balance.

Even though Dong Fang Jing Yue's cultivation suffered great loss, with the spirit treasure in her hand, her battle prowess was still formidable. If Feng Fei Yun didn't have a spirit treasure ranked weapon, then he would definitely die under this blow without a trace of his remains.

At this moment, Feng Fei Yun was also hesitating without end; only the Infinite Spirit Ring could compete with the Haotian Spirit Mirror. Both the spirit treasures were activated, and their spirits — along with formations — were both released to the outside.

The Infinite Spirit Ring flew out from his thumb, and it was in rapid rotation; because the formation inside was activated, the ring became ten times larger. Each ancient rune engraving began to move, accompanied with a black aura.

The Infinite Spirit Ring broke past the Haotian Spirit Mirror's spirit circle, and they suddenly crashed into each other.

"Boom!"

The collision of the two spirit treasures were extremely shocking and radiated waves and waves of blinding brilliances. It caused the blood of Feng Fei Yun and

Dong Fang Jing Yue to churn, almost having to vomit immortal blood.

“You… Someone like you also has a spirit treasure!”

Dong Fang Jing Yue was not without astonishment.

“Don’t make a move, this place is extremely dangerous!”

Feng Fei Yun turned around and he saw that the ancient monk corpses in the underground temple were aware of the changes; their dead eyes were all staring towards this direction.

Clearly they were alarmed by the sound just now!

Although Dong Fang Jing Yue’s cultivation was higher than Feng Fei Yun, she didn’t have the Heavenly Phoenix Gaze spirit technique; thus, she naturally couldn’t see the changes in the shadows. She gravely said:

“Even if you carry a spirit treasure, it absolutely cannot be compared to the Haotian Spirit Mirror. We will fight again.”

With the mirror in her hand, she created a crescent moon. Her slender and graceful body flew upward, and she directly aimed straight for Feng Fei Yun’s head, intending to quell him.

‘It’s over, it’s finished. If I keep fighting with this crazy woman, then it would definitely lead the monk corpses out here from the temple; then there would truly be no escape!’

Even though there was something imprisoning the ancient monk corpses in the temple, they weren’t completely without a way to escape. The three ancient monk corpses that were chasing Dong Fang Jing Yue were the perfect proof of that.

If the two kept on using the spirit treasures offensively, then surely it would cause the heavens to fall and the earth to crumble. A true calamity would arrive once the imprisonment of the temple was broken.

Feng Fei Yun had no choice, and he could only recall the Infinite Spirit Ring; he used his bare hands to attack Dong Fang Jing Yue.

“Capture!”

Feng Fei Yun's body was like a swimming fish, shuttling between the gaps of the spirit energies, and he went in front of Dong Fang Jing Yue, suddenly catching her waist.

Even though Dong Fang Jing Yue's face was still calm, her heart was lamenting the unfavorable situation. She knew that Feng Fei Yun's tricks were truly shameless, and she thought that he would commit some low life actions. She immediately channeled all of her spirit energy, just like a roaring river, and she used it to directly strike him.

"Boom!"

The power of the spirit energy was extremely powerful, like a mountain of qi traversing the sky, and she directly knocked Feng Fei Yun away.

The internal organs of Feng Fei Yun were violently shaken, and he was extremely uncomfortable; however, he gritted his teeth and he didn't let go with his hands. He continued to hold her waist, causing her to fly alongside him as well.

"Let go of your hands!"

"I won't!"

The two of them exchanged some moves in the air before they fell onto the ground.

"Boom!"

The two of them crashed into the ancient broken temple, into an empty dried well, causing the broken debris on the ground to turn into dust.

Chilling bleak air permeated the temple along with black markings on the ground, like dried blood.

"Not good, this is big trouble now!"

Feng Fei Yun crawled up from the ground, and he stared at the vicissitudes of the temple. In the far distances were Buddhist chambers. Inside were dusty Buddhist statues along with Buddhist lamps as well as the ferocious looking monks.

Fortunately, the two of them fell down in the most remote corner of the godly

temple without any ancient monk corpses nearby. Otherwise, at this moment, they would have been nibbled away without a trace of bones left.

“Where… where is this place? A godly temple underground? The ominous mine?”

Dong Fang Jing Yue also slowly crawled up from the ground. Even though the fall was not light, her presence was not affected; she was still ethereal and elegant, like a rose falling onto a wall.

Of course, she also felt the danger and evil presence around, and she didn’t make a move against Feng Fei Yun, afraid of alarming the corpses’ souls.

When her gaze fell upon the rotted monks that were still walking normally in the distance, her eyes couldn’t help but widen. No matter how unfazed she was in the past, she couldn’t suppress the fear in her heart.

“A godly temple sank underground, and ancient monks were forever trapped inside! This is not the Mortal Life Cavern; why is it more like the ominous mine?”

Dong Fang Jing Yue muttered to herself.

Feng Fei Yun spoke in a serious manner:

“Essentially, it is the same place! This is not a place to stay for long. If we can’t leave within an hour, then the monks will notice our presence. Leaving this place is the main concern.”

The two knew that this was not the time to act upon their emotions. If they didn’t work together, then both of them could die here.

Dong Fang Jing Yue, at the moment, very much wanted to slap Feng Fei Yun to death; however, if Feng Fei Yun died, then she most likely wouldn’t be able to survive either. She could only restrain her emotions.

The wall of the ancient temple was broken by the two, creating a gap, and they planned to escape to the outside using this hole.

When Dong Fang Jing Yue’s foot had just stepped to the outside, the ground gave birth to a blood spring surging upward in a spiral manner towards this direction, pulling her leg into the ground.

It was as if there was a skeletal ghost hand underneath the ground!

“Boom!”

She quickly pulled back her foot and the bloody spring from the ground disappeared in a blink of an eye; the pulling force was no longer there.

“This temple is actually prepped with the Sea of Blood Formation and Bewilder Grand Formation from the high ancient era!”

Feng Fei Yun said.

At this moment, Dong Fang Jing Yue didn’t dare to carelessly take another step; her heart was still trembling when she asked:

“How do you know this?”

“Earlier, if you didn’t pull back your foot, then you would have been dragged into the sea of blood by the formation, becoming liquid blood. Also, even if you could take another step, there would be no chance of escaping the temple; you most definitely would have been taken to another forbidden ground.”

Feng Fei Yun furrowed his brows, and he continued:

“I finally understand why the ancient monk corpses can’t leave this temple; it turns out to be the Bewilder Grand Formation. No, this isn’t right, these monks are all super powerful experts; just the Bewilder Grand Formation alone couldn’t imprison them forever. Inside this godly temple must exist another formation from the high ancient era.”

The temple was extremely desolate, and this corner was even more lone. There was only a yellow stone ancient well and three ancient trees, that had died an unknown amount of years ago, and there was also an old mill with a radius of one zhang.

A few thousand years ago, this place must have been the backyard of this godly temple. At that moment, this temple had not sunken into the ground. The blue sky with fresh sunlight was probably enjoyed by white robed monks smiling happily and carrying water from the well, with a donkey rotating the mill to make fresh soybean milk. Everything was so peaceful, but one day, they encountered a huge change and all of the monks died. Even the temple sunk into the ground.

Originally a holy land of the Buddhist faith yet it became a frightening

forbidden ground.

The formations in this temple were not few, plus each of these formations couldn't be created by an ordinary person. Under these circumstances, it was clear that the monks in this temple all died within one night.

"Without my instruction, you are not allowed to take even one step."

Feng Fei Yun said with an utmost serious expression.

Naturally, Dong Fang Jing Yue replied with a contemptuous glance, but she didn't dare to mess around. After all, it was her first time experiencing a dangerous situation like earlier.

"Is it finished yet?"

She asked.

Feng Fei Yun was squatting on the ground, and his finger drew a lotus on the ground; however, the shape was not like a lotus flower, it was more like someone's footprint.

A bright light expanded and the lotus flower suddenly emitted a bright green light; it was as if an immortal was sitting at this location.

"Finished!"

Feng Fei Yun smiled.

"What are you doing?"

Dong Fang Jing Yue felt that Feng Fei Yun was doing strange actions; it was essentially not like the methods of humans, they were more like the methods of the primitive demon races.

"Crossing Lotus Seat Formation! As long as the engraver has enough power, this formation could control the lotus to cross any rivers in this world!"

Feng Fei Yun proudly smiled.

Dong Fang Jing Yue almost bursted out in laughter. This person was too good at bragging. There were so many formations in this world; there were some that were simple as well as ones that were complex. They were also separated into different categories such as killing, offense, and defense; plus, they were

classified into nine different ranks.

The formations in this godly temple — at the very least — reached the third rank; even channeling a spirit treasure wouldn't be enough to break through. Only relying on this lotus seat and using their feet to move it, would this be enough to cross the Sea of Blood Formation and Bewildering Grand Formation from the high ancient era?

Dong Fang Jing Yue's knowledge was boundlessly broad, and she had cultivated at the Godly Spirit Palace for a period of time. She definitely didn't hear anything like a Crossing Lotus Seat Formation, so she naturally didn't believe in the shameless and nonsensical words of this Feng Fei Yun.

Chapter 62 : Spirit Spring Water

The underground godly temple was pitch black, full of humidity, and grim looking; even though, in the far distance, there was a lit Buddhist torch on top of the pagoda, the light couldn't dissipate this darkness.

No one knew why this godly temple sunk into the ground for the past few thousand years, or why the Buddhist torch still was lit; it radiated a divine light, just like the lotus seat's light, traveling towards all four directions.

The shape of the lotus seat was the same as a human's footprint.

The two people standing on the lotus seat were Feng Fei Yun and Dong Fang Jing Yue.

The two were originally like fire and water, refusing to stand beside each other, but at this moment, they were leaning on each other like one's figure and shadow. Even though Feng Fei Yun was just a young adult, his stature was not small. With a wide chest and standing at seven feet tall, he was seemingly higher than Dong Fang Jing Yue by half of a head.

The lotus seat was truly too small as there was not enough space for one person standing on top, let alone two people squeezing together. Dong Fang Jing Yue was standing in front of Feng Fei Yun, but her orientation was that of leaning close to his chest.

Dong Fang Jing Yue was wearing a white veil. Her emotionless expression seemingly had forgotten about the earlier hatred, but Feng Fei Yun knew that if it wasn't for his understanding of formations and deduction of the arts, then he would have been a lost ghost by her hand.

"Feng Fei Yun, could it be that all of the Feng young children have the same understanding of formations just like you?"

Dong Fang Jing Yue, in the end, couldn't restrain her curiosity, and she seriously asked.

Earlier, Feng Fei Yun carved the Corpse Refining Formation to suppress the three ancient monk corpses, and now he created a Crossing Lotus Seat

Formation to easily escape the Sea of Blood Formation and the Bewildering Grand Formation.

It was her first time seeing these two methods. Even the formations of contemporary masters wouldn't be as proficient; however, in the hands of Feng Fei Yun, it was as if every word he wrote became poetic proses.

If all the children of the Feng family were this wonderful, then it would truly be frightening.

Dong Fang Jing Yue was a child of the Yin Gou family, so she naturally had the responsibility to destroy any power that could threaten the clan. If Feng Fei Yun was truly this powerful, then she must kill him without mercy and destroy the grass to its root.

For a family as powerful as the Yin Gou family, wanting to destroy one hundred Feng families was an easy matter.

Feng Fei Yun was very clever, and, with just a glance, he knew what Dong Fang Jing Yue was calculating in her mind; thus, he smiled:

"No, of course not; unless it was a person with an extreme aptitude, the elders of the family absolutely wouldn't allow us to learn it. In the end, learning these unorthodox methods would slow down our cultivations, ah!"

And he continued:

"It is also clear that I have an extreme aptitude, hahaha!"

"That is why your cultivation is so weak; it seems like the elders of your family didn't worry without reasons."

Even though Dong Fang Jing Yue was teasing Feng Fei Yun, the wariness in her heart had lowered by quite a bit.

Of course, out of ten phrases coming out of Feng Fei Yun's mouth, nine couldn't be trusted. Dong Fang Jing Yue naturally would still maintain some sort of caution. Once leaving the Mortal Life Cavern, she would definitely investigate this matter thoroughly to achieve a real peace of mind.

Feng Fei Yun ignored her teasing; in the end, his cultivation time was very short and he couldn't compete with her. If he also cultivated for eight or ten years,

then he would definitely disappear right before her eyes.

“Shh! Do you hear a sound?”

Feng Fei Yun focused on listening, and he felt that there was something next to him dripping down. He was ecstatic. He stomped on the lotus seat, flew outside of it, and he reached out his hand to grab a translucent drop of dew.

This drop of dew, from a gap between the brown tree barks, was from an ancient tree that had died many thousand years ago. It was filled with spirit and life energy. It was originally going to fall into the ancient well’s mouth, but it was discovered by Fei Yun and caught in mid air.

“Such a powerful spirit, could this be a drop of spirit spring water?”

Dong Fang Jing Yue was also extremely excited, and she directly gripped Feng Fei Yun’s wrist, forcing him to open his palm, and took away the drop of dew.

“It is indeed a drop of spirit spring water.”

Dong Fang Jing Yue acted like there was no one next to her, and she carefully observed the drop of dew. Inside the spirit spring water was a shadow of a small girl the size of a rice grain; it was as if she was sleeping calmly.

This was naturally not a little girl; it was simply the spirit condensed inside the spirit spring water.

Feng Fei Yun came to the Mortal Life Cavern precisely to find spirit spring water to increase his cultivation. Through arduous hard work, he finally obtained a drop of it in his hand, yet it suddenly changed its owner.

“I can’t imagine that a grand character from the renowned Yin Gou family would commit such a robbery!”

Feng Fei Yun shook his wrist back and forth. This damned grandma Dong Fang Jing Yue’s move was too vicious, and a bloody bruise was left on his wrist by her.

“The ancestor of our Yin Gou family indeed became prosperous from robbery!”

Of course Dong Fang Jing Yue also wanted the spirit spring water to break through to the next realm, so she absolutely wouldn’t give the drop back to Feng Fei Yun. Her eyes slightly raised upward towards the sky, and she carefully stared at the dead and dried ancient tree. Spirit spring water was dropping from its

body, but there was something odd going on.

This ancient tree was one hundred and thirty zhang tall, with a radius of four to five zhang. Its exterior was dry like the yellow soil on the ground, and there were many weather parts in the tree trunks, riddled with thousands of holes on its body.

The life of this tree had ended many thousand years ago, so how could it give birth to spirit spring water?

One has to know that spirit spring water was a wonder medicine in this world. When a mortal drank a drop, he could live for two hundred years. When a cultivator consumed a drop, not only could it refine the body and increase one's innate talent, but it could also help them break through to the next realm.

Obtaining one drop could already be considered a grand immortal fortune!

Feng Fei Yun was also looking for clues. In the end, he would be such a rich man if he could find the originating location of the spirit spring water.

His gaze finally locked onto the ancient well with a layer of yellow mud under the ancient tree. If Feng Fei Yun didn't make a move earlier, the drop would have fallen down the ancient well; so this ancient well was certainly not ordinary.

Feng Fei Yun didn't feel like there was anything strange, but after looking at the well a few more times, he felt some tightness in his chest. It was as if all of his internal organs were wanting to burst open.

"Poof!"

Feng Fei Yun's entire body was in shock, his chest in great pain, and he vomited a mouthful of blood.

'How could this be… Can't even look at it… What mysteries could be hidden inside this ancient well?'

Feng Fei Yun wiped the blood from the corner of his mouth; he was not deterred but even more excited.

Dong Fang Jing Yue coldly sneered:

"You don't know life from death? Don't you know that there are some forbidden things in this world? Not to mention a gaze, even thinking about them

is impossible!”

“The more taboo the place is, the more worthy it is to take a risk. Maybe this yellow ancient well is filled with spirit spring water. If we get a spirit spring water well, then imagine how many masters we could cultivate? Not mentioning the Yin Gou family, we could even overthrow the Jin Dynasty!”

Feng Fei Yun radiantly exclaimed.

Dong Fang Jing Yue quickly grabbed Feng Fei Yun’s neck, and she whispered:

“Do you not want to live any longer? The Jin Emperor’s cultivation is mysteriously powerful. One gaze is enough to see matters within one million miles, and one ear is enough to hear the canary bird’s singing outside of ten thousand miles. If those words of yours were heard by him, then it won’t only be you; the nine clans of your Feng family would all be massacred.”

“Cough cough!”

Feng Fei Yun’s neck was in pain from her grip, but he still smiled:

“Don’t worry! Chicken Dong Fang, the Jin Emperor’s cultivation might be powerful, but he totally cannot detect the godly spirit inside this underground temple; so nervous my ass!”

At this moment, Dong Fang Jing Yue let go of Feng Fei Yun and she coldly said:

“Your mouth is truly very vulgar. It is best to remember my words well, otherwise, sooner or later, you will suffer an unnatural death. There was crying inside the ancient well; in my eyes, that is not a spirit spring water well but a corpse water well. You still shouldn’t act rashly.”

Dong Fang Jing Yue naturally was afraid that; if Feng Fei Yun died in the well, she wouldn’t be able to control the lotus seat formation and thus, she reminded him.

Feng Fei Yun had soon noted this matter, and that was why he didn’t make a move. However, if it was only a strand of crying remnants, giving up the spirit spring water well would make him feel very hesitant.

Just then, from the darkness came many heavy footsteps.

“Third Uncle, what the hell is this place? Causing twelve out of our fifteen

protectors to die. Will we die in this place as well?”

The voice of a middle-aged man appeared.

“Shut up. As long as we don’t meet those ancient monk corpses again, we will definitely escape this godly temple.”

An older voice sounded, but it was not filled with much confidence.

“When Seventh Uncle was bitten to death, Sixth Uncle was decapitated, and even Feng Xiao Lin was dragged into the Buddhist hall, only his white bones were thrown out; then there was also…”

The middled aged man said.

The fifteen protectors came into the Mortal Life Cavern in order to chase down Du Shou Gao, and they also mistakenly went into this temple. However, their luck was not as good as Feng Fei Yun, and they went into the main entrance of the temple; eight of them were ripped into pieces by the monk corpses.

The other remaining seven hid in the temple, and they met all types of ghostly creatures. In the end, only three were left, and all of them were heavily wounded. They fled toward Fei Yun’s direction.

“Third Uncle, there are people ahead!”

The middle-aged man excitedly exclaimed.

The three of them quickened their pace and ran towards Feng Fei Yun; it was as if they had seized the last path of survival.

Feng Fei Yun carefully gazed at the old man leading the way. He was a bit surprised; the heavy armor on this old man was taken off, and he was only wearing a Feng family robe. The white robe was embroidered with an ancient pine and inscribed with three black words: “Feng Zhi Zi.”

Feng Zhi Zi was the name of this old man.

After seeing this name, Feng Fei Yun suddenly froze. Wasn’t his grandpa’s name Feng Zhi Zi?

Of course Feng Fei Yun was able to recognize his grandpa. After all, when he was a child, he had met him a few times. Even though the body armor was taken

off, the steel helmet on his body was not removed; it still covered half of his face. Without a careful look, he naturally couldn't recognize him.

Feng Fei Yun was alarmed by this; Feng Zhi Zi had never been so tattered before. What terrible things did they meet in the end?

"An expert from the Yin Gou family? We are saved this time."

The middle-aged man recognized the iron token on Dong Fang Jing Yue's waist, and he spoke with great admiration.

"Expert from the Yin Gou family?"

Of course Feng Zhi Zi knew just how powerful the Yin Gou family was, definitely more than the other two. In front of the Yin Gou family, he couldn't act rashly; this matter had been told to him earlier by the Feng Patriarch.

This girl was able to carry the white jade iron token of the Yin Gou family, so she was definitely a descendant. He couldn't be late on the courteous formality; he had to bow down, otherwise it would be disrespectful.

Chapter 63 : Person Coming out of the Ancient Well

Dragon Lake spanning three thousand miles, white jade represents the Yin Gou!

The iron order on Dong Fang Jing Yue's waist was made from refined royal jade and carved into a silver hook, proving her noble identity. As long as she carried this order around Violet Firmament Ancient City, all cultivators would have to kneel down to greet her.

Even the heaven defying geniuses of the big families or elders and protectors were no exceptions!

This was the power of the Yin Gou family, one of the four grand families of the Jin Dynasty. In their eyes, a big family like the Feng family could only be considered a local lord.

Although Feng Zhi Zi's age had exceeded 60, because he practiced a particular cultivation method, he seemed younger than other practitioners at the same age — who had white hair and a face covered with ravines.

However, his body appeared to be very strong, just like a young military general.

Feng Fei Yun, seeing his grandpa limping over, initially made him want to help him, but at this moment, there were also two other middle-aged men with him; they were both half kneeling on the ground.

"Boom!"

All three of them were kneeling with one knee and they respectfully clapped their hands together:

"The three protectors of the Feng family respectfully greet Grand Character from the Yin Gou family; we beseech you to help us escape from this place."

The three were all seniors from the Feng family, but at this moment, they were half kneeling before Dong Fang Jing Yue with a very reverent expression.

Feng Fei Yun wanted to help Feng Zhi Zi, but seeing his grandpa kneeling… If he

walked forward, then wouldn't it be Feng Zhi Zi kneeling right in front of him?

This lack of filial piety, Feng Fei Yun naturally couldn't do.

Dong Fang Jing Yue was already deeply wounded so she essentially didn't care for this sort of thing, but after hearing that these three were seniors from the Feng family, she suddenly became interested. These are the Feng elders, ah! Interesting, very interesting, hahaha!

"Dong Fang Jing Yue, you dare to accept their reverence? Are you not afraid of shortening your lifespan? Hurry up and tell the three seniors to stand up!"

Feng Fei Yun gravely said.

Dong Fang Jing Yue smilingly replied:

"They're just some small characters from the Feng family, why would I not dare to accept?"

Her mind was very meticulous and saw Feng Fei Yun's strange expression, so she said:

"Feng Fei Yun, why are you so worked up? Maybe…"

"Not maybe anything!"

Feng Fei Yun said.

Dong Fang Jing Yue removed the silver Yin Gou order from her waist and held it in her hand, like a supreme ruler of this world, and raised her voice:

"Three protectors from the Feng family, hear my order: this junior, Feng Fei Yun of the Feng's fifth generation, saw this seat yet he didn't kneel down, what offense is this?"

Feng Fei Yun didn't expect this damned grandma Dong Fang Jing Yue to resort to this method. If these were different seniors from the Feng family then he definitely wouldn't care, but this time, one of the three was his grandpa. Could he only lay down his hands and await his own death from her teasing?

"Feng Fei Yun?"

Feng Zhi Zi lifted his head and glanced again, then he saw that the person standing behind Dong Fang Jing Yue was his blood grandson, Feng Fei Yun.

Not mentioning the crimes this little bastard committed at Spirit State City — with the power of the Feng family, they could completely take care of it — but today, if he offended a grand character from the Yin Gou family, if this wasn't taken care of in a satisfactory manner, then the whole Feng family could be negatively impacted.

"Evil creature, hurry and kneel down and accept your unbecomings to the grand character of the Yin Gou family."

Feng Zhi Zi loudly yelled with an expression filled with anger.

On the other hand, the other two protectors were two extremely powerful experts of the Feng's fourth generation; they were also uncles of Feng Fei Yun. At this time, they were also quite frightened. If the grand character of the Yin Gou family, because of Feng Fei Yun, would also punish the family, then the consequences would be disastrous.

If they didn't tread carefully, they risk the calamity of a clan's annihilation!

Feng Fei Yun naturally wouldn't kneel down, and he said:

"Grandpa, stand up, the Yin Gou family isn't something special. I only kneel down to the heaven and to elders, but never kneel in front of a woman."

"Disgraceful."

Feng Zhi Zi withdrew his gaze and turned to Dong Fang Jing Yue with a bow, then he quickly said:

"Respectable Fairy, my grandson does not know how to speak. I humbly ask you to let it go, and don't be angry with him. Today, hand him over to me; I will definitely punish him heavily. If he didn't lose a layer of skin, then his legs would be broken into three pieces. Today, I will definitely perform a grand gesture to you and make him kneel down in front and accept his faults."

Even though Feng Zhi Zi was speaking very ruthlessly, he only wanted to keep Feng Fei Yun's life. If he had to hand Feng Fei Yun over to the Yin Gou family, then his death would be without a doubt.

Flesh and blood's love was thicker than water!

"Grandson?"

Dong Fang Jing Yue asked.

“Correct, this evil creature is the grandson of this old man. This old man has three sons, but only one grandson; I beg Immortal Fairy to spare him his life.”

Feng Zhi Zi said.

After hearing these words, Dong Fang Jing Yue was ecstatic. She was heavily wounded and at the moment, she had no way of suppressing Feng Fei Yun. She didn’t expect the heaven to help her by bringing Feng Fei Yun’s grandpa in front of her.

Feng Fei Yun ah Feng Fei Yun! I want to see whether you will behave and listen or not!

Dong Fang Jing Yue gestured her hands behind her back and stared at the surroundings, giving off an aura of a peerless expert, then she calmly said:

“Since the beginning of time, the wise teachings of the Jin Dynasty placed filial piety in first place, royalty to the emperor second, teachers and students were next, and then the Dao of husbands and wives was last. Feng Fei Yun ah, you wouldn’t even listen to your grandfather’s words? Truly an unfilial grandson. I was going to spare your life but an unfilial person like you, how would you have the face to continue living in this world!”

Of course, Feng Fei Yun clearly knew that Dong Fang Jing Yue didn’t really want him to die; at least, not before escaping this godly temple. These words were only for Feng Zhi Zi’s ears.

“Dong Fang Jing Yue, if you don’t stop, then do you think I wouldn’t tell everyone the matter of when you were corpse poisoned? If this matter got out, then it would definitely be more interesting compared to killing an unknown nobody such as myself.”

Feng Fei Yun whispered next to her ear. The warm comforting breath caused her ear to gently shiver.
Hearing Feng Fei Yun’s threat, Dong Fang Jing Yue’s expression soured and her slender jade fingers tightly clenched — her killing intent ran strong.

Feng Fei Yun was aware that she definitely wouldn’t make a move, so he smiled and said:

“Grandpa, and also uncles, all of you stand up. We are all part of one family, ah! Jing Jing was spoiled when she was younger so she is very naughty — truly disobedient. Earlier, she only wanted to tease the three seniors a little bit, how could she actually let her future grandpa kneel down like this!”

Hearing Feng Fei Yun call her “Jing Jing”, Dong Fang Jing Yue was shivering from anger.

Feng Zhi Zi and the others didn’t know heads from tails; what was actually happening here?

Feng Fei Yun raised his voice, that carried a hint of menace, and told Dong Fang Jing Yue:

“Jing Jing, hurry and tell the three seniors to get up.”

Dong Fang Jing Yue’s five fingers were clenched even tighter, even her teeth were grinding from anger. However, in the end, she couldn’t do anything except to compromise due to Feng Fei Yun’s threat, and she said:

“The three seniors, please stand up. Earlier, it was truly just a little joke.”

At this moment, the three finally stood up and anxiously stared at Dong Fang Jing Yue and Feng Fei Yun. They finally discovered some subtle things in this moment.

The grand character of the Yin Gou family was nested in Feng Fei Yun’s chest, it was easy to tell that their relationship was very close. Could it be that this little brat, Feng Fei Yun, was favored by the grand character of the Yin Gou family?

Feng Zhi Zi’s heart was ecstatic. If this was the truth, then Feng Fei Yun’s future would be incalculable and even the Feng family would gain boundless benefits from this.

“What is the name of Immortal Fairy?”

Even though Feng Zhi Zi felt that Dong Fang Jing Yue’s status in the Yin Gou family was very high, he still wanted to find out the exact position, so he asked for her name.

“Dong Fang Jing Yue!”

Dong Fang Jing Yue mockingly said, aiming at Feng Fei Yun.

After hearing this name, Feng Zhi Zi's group was shocked and glanced at each other. Their expression became more and more respectful, and they almost fell down kneeling again on the ground.

"Oh, so it is the fourth young miss' appearance. Please forgive us for the lack of courtesy."

Feng Zhi Zi deeply bowed.

"Hmph!"

Dong Fang Jing Yue coldly snorted; it was easy to see her dismissive attitude.

The inside of the godly temple was dangerous and menacing, but the yellow muddy ancient well was quiet to the point of horror. There were no ancient monk corpses traveling towards this direction, or any signs of living beings. It seemed as if everything stayed far away from here.

Suddenly, the sound of a bell ringing came from a Buddhist pagoda of a distant peak.

"Onggggg!"

Even though the sound was very low, it painfully shook the eardrums. It was not any weaker than the power of the winds and thunders.

The menacing smoke from the ancient well began to come out even more. Even the normal eyes could see a strand of green smoke from the well, just like a corpse well.

However, at the moment, there was a strand of brilliant light within the green smoke. These lights escaped to the outside, just like a Buddha or an immortal coming down to the mortal world, giving birth to a godly light that caused others to think that there was a spirit treasure inside the well.

"Poof!"

A senior from the Feng family was injured and struck flying away because he was intensely staring at the well, becoming heavily injured in the process.

"You cannot stare at this well. Staring for a long time would result in being killed by the taboo existence inside."

Feng Fei Yun reminded.

At this moment, the bell rang a second time, coming from the far Buddhist pagoda.

“Ongggg!”

The Buddhist bell sound was still low but enough to frighten the souls of people!

The yellow muddy well changed again. The smoke from inside was coming out even more fiercely and suddenly, a person wearing a white robe with disheveled hair slowly emerged from the well.

This weird scene caused Feng Fei Yun and the others to take a few steps back in horror.

This person stood on the smoke curtain, standing on top of the ancient well. People could finally see that she was a magnificent woman that was unmatched in her generation. However, her pale expression scared others, as if there was no sign of life in her body.

Spirit auras were still radiating from her body. Even though she had died for several thousand years, her skin was still as bright as jade, as if she just got out from a goat milk bath.

Her hair was long like silk, accompanied with a country topping beauty. Her figure had a holy aura and wore a pure Buddhist robe. She slightly lifted her head and looked at the light coming from the Buddhist pagoda.

“Even though we have no opportunity to get to know each other, long beads of red lily, spider lily flowers!”

Her lips slightly opened, as if she remembered something, even with her lifeless body.

This was an immortal memory, it was as if she was unwilling to forget something. Even though she had died for many years, she still couldn’t forget the red spider lilies!

Chapter 64 : Gathering of Grand Characters

Everyone was intimidated by the corpse woman that appeared from the ancient well. Although she had been dead for many years, her body was without flaws, and she was even able to recite poems, which caused others to be astonished.

She wore a Buddhist robe that was very different from the monk corpses. Her flesh was still normal, and her features were extremely fine. One could only imagine that, before death, she was a supreme beauty capable of toppling the whole world.

With a woman as beautiful as an immortal god at a Buddhist temple, who could be cruel enough to kill her here? Did they also throw her corpse down this ancient yellow muddy well?

She stood on top of the ancient well, silent, and stared at the Buddhist pagoda that was at the far distance where there was an immortal flame from the Buddhist candle.

“Third Uncle, do you think this woman is a human or a ghost?”

Feng Zhi Zi had live for more than fifty years but had never seen such a strange thing, so he said:

“There is not a single strand of life from her body and she emits a bone chilling aura; of course she has been dead for many years and her life disappeared long ago on the Yellow River.”

“Ah! It’s so unfortunate for such a beautiful woman to have fatefully met her end at this place — being buried in such such a well after death!”

A protector from the Feng family lamented.

It seemed as if even Dong Fang Jing Yue was touched as she coldly said:

“The majority of beauties in this world suffer a sad fate. After her death, her beauty remained intact and her body didn’t rot. However, in the end, many otherworldly beauties still became old women and were shunned by others for

their age before ending up dead in small graves as they turn into the yellow earth. Who would remember that when they were younger, they were the most beautiful women in the world?”

When Dong Fang Jing Yue opened her mouth, the three protectors of the Feng family immediately fell silent and didn’t say anything else.

At this time, the third bell came from the Buddhist pagoda and the woman wearing the monastic robe, once again, went into the yellow ancient well, disappearing before everyone.

It was as if Heaven’s daughter was buried here, which caused others to lament and not want to leave!

“I said earlier that this well was definitely a corpse water well, so do you believe me now?”

Dong Fang Jing Yue only wanted to convince Feng Fei Yun to take her out of this forbidden ground soon so she kept on telling him to not approach this well.

Feng Fei Yun shook his head and said:

“No matter how powerful this Buddhist girl used to be, if she was soaked in corpse water for this long, then she would have been reduced to bones ages ago. However, after a few thousand years, her body didn’t rot and she even kept some godly sentiments. Doesn’t this make you feel a little suspicious?”

Even though the girl had submerged into the ancient well again, the smoke and light didn’t dissipate and the light became even brighter. There was also a faint fragrance emanating from the well that was like the sweet scent of an eighteen year old virgin, like the ultimate aroma of herbs and spirit medicines.

It was as if there really was a great treasure inside the muddy yellow ancient well!

“Boom!”

The ground suddenly shook and thunder sounded from above.

A white sword aura cut through the dark night, slicing the sky and causing the beasts to roar with its massive presence and frightening aura.

With the godly sword leading the way, a huge beast that towered at ten zhang

flew forward, stomping on the sky.

The huge beast was like a small mountain and had the head of a crocodile, the tail of an ancient bird, fish scales as large as a palm that covered its entire body, and there was a pair of giant scaly wings on its back.

This was an ancestral wind beast, an extremely rare existence with unlimited battle potential!

Even though this ancestral wind beast's spirit was sentient and had hidden spirit energy, it couldn't ride a sword to fly in the air.

On the back of the ancestral wind beast was an iron carriage, like a sealed castle, that was decorated with iron mirrors and white pillars.

Even the curtain of the iron carriage was made out of iron so the heavy wind couldn't even blow away a corner. Of course, outsiders couldn't see who was inside the iron carriage.

"Phoosh!"

The white flying sword aura flew around the godly temple, then flew back, before hinging itself on top of the iron carriage. The brilliant lights of the godly sword were surrounded by a rotating aura that seemed to have its own spirit.

"Such strong pressure, where did this Ju Qing came from?"

Feng Fei Yun felt his blood boil, as if there was a giant mountain on top of him.

"This… This is the Sky Breaking Spirit Sword. This is a sect's protection spirit treasure! Could it be… that he came?!"

Feng Zhi Zi was knowledgable and had guessed the powerful character.

"The ancestor of the Great Development Immortal Gate, Yue Chong Zi, has arrived!"

A group of Great Development Immortal Gate disciples, wearing yellow apricot robes, rushed out from the darkness. The two disciples that Feng Fei Yun had met before also appeared inside the group.

They rushed straight to the godly underground temple and stood outside, looking at the iron carriage with reverence in their eyes as they shouted in

unision:

“We disciples greet the ancestor!”

All the disciples from the Gate immediately kneeled down to the ground.

The calmness had finally been restored.

“I can’t believe that the Mortal Life Cavern also attracted the ancestor of the Great Development Immortal Gate. Yue Chong Zi was a person who obtained the title of Ju Qing three hundred years ago with his Sky Breaking Spirit Sword dominating the Grand Southern Prefecture.”

Said a protector of the Feng family who had heard of Yue Chong Zi.

“This is a real Ju Qing who has sealed his sword for more than two hundred years to calmly pursue the immortal Dao. It seems like he must be aware of some secrets regarding this godly temple as he couldn’t wait until his isolated cultivation ended and rushed here.”

Even the arrogant Dong Fang Jing Yue stood silently. In the end, a giant powerhouse like Yue Chong Zi would always garner respect no matter where he went.

“Boom!”

A flame from the west burned out the pitch black night. Wave after wave of fire encompassed the Nine Floors Pavilion with enough power to render an ancient castle into ashes.

Another grand character had arrived!

Outside the godly temple, the flames burned quickly as the high rolling flames condensed into a large shadow. It was terrifyingly ferocious with fangs, like a huge demon.

“This person… This person… Could it be the former Third Lord of the Sen Luo Temple? He was a fierce demon, but he was suppressed in the prison for several hundred years. How is he still alive?”

Dong Fang Jing Yue’s expression soured greatly as she felt an ancient power pushing down on her.

The cultivation of this demon was extremely high. He had used his own strength to carry a mountain range that was a few hundred miles long, wanting to destroy the godly capital and challenge the prestige of the Jin Emperor, but he was suppressed by one palm of the Emperor and imprisoned in the thirteenth floor of the prison.

To be able to withstand a strike from the Jin Emperor without dying was already enough to prove the strength of this demon. He was most definitely a powerful Ju Qing.

This was a story from several hundred years ago, but this demon had unexpectedly escaped the prison and come to this place.

Hearing the ferocious reputation of the demon caused the expressions of the three Feng protectors to become pale as they broke into a cold sweat.

The fierce reputation of this demon had been passed down for several hundred years, but it was still enough to instill shivering fear into others!

The flames became a shadowy figure that was dozens of zhang tall. Its size compared to others was like comparing humans and ants, but the problem was that the ferocious flame was burning even the soil, creating a layer of dense gas.

Earlier, it was the ancestor of the Great Development Immortal Gate, now it was the Third Lord of the Sen Luo Temple. Both of them had heaven shaking cultivations, so unless it was a major event, it wouldn’t alarm them and force them to appear in this place.

The ancient monk corpses inside the godly temple naturally detected the uninvited guests outside of the temple. They roared loudly and the rotting flesh on their bodies emitted a black smoke; their hunger for battle was great as angry flames reached the high sky.

At this moment, they were no longer chanting Buddhist mantras. It was as if seeing enemies caused them to rush out of the godly temple and forced the sealing formations outside to activate, causing giant explosions.

This impressive scene truly shocked the spectators for if more than one thousand cultivators at the God Base Realm suddenly made a move all at once, there would absolutely be no one that could stop this power that was enough to

paint ten thousand miles with blood.

“Wondrous Wisdom!”

A deep, ancient voice came from the Buddhist pagoda where the Buddhist candle was located, as if there was an old monk chanting.

The sound was so quiet that it made others wonder if they had misheard. In the end, because the ancient temple had been buried for many thousand years, it naturally wouldn’t have a living old monk.

However, this old voice was the reason why the raging monk corpses suddenly stopped and withdrew. Each of them sat down again and started to chant with their prayer beads while striking their Buddhist block.

These Buddhist blocks had become tattered pieces and the prayer beads were also shattered.

Chapter 65 : Immortal Phoenix

The peace within the entire godly temple was restored, but this peace and quiet carried a false sensation.

The Buddhist candle on the highest floor of the Buddhist pagoda remained bright and forever eternal.

Outside of the godly temple, the atmosphere became tense. In a flash, another Ju Qing appeared.

This Ju Qing sat in an ancient bronze carriage, driven by a godly deer that held an aura no less powerful than the other two Ju Qings in front, which denied others the sense of ease.

An invisible pressure also followed the carriage and became increasingly stronger, causing the energy in the air to create traction and it turned into a huge source of power.

Even though it was just an ordinary bronze carriage, its presence felt like a heavenly army on an expedition!

The driver was a handsome young teen, adorned with a gold robe and a long sword on his back, around the age of seventeen. With this age, he was no longer considered an infant, yet on his neck was a silver locket meant for infants.

Qin Ming stretched his back and looked at the godly temple in the far distance, then gazed at the crowd near his vicinity. His legs were uncomfortable from the long distance travelling.

He jumped off the bronze carriage and took off the sword on his back. The long sword in his hand was indeed extremely swift and in a flash, there were many sword auras appearing on the ground.

“Bang, bang, bang…”

Dust on the ground was scattered about and when the dust storm settled, domineering characters appeared at the scene.

“The Qin family ancestor has arrived!”

The power of the Qin family in the Grand Southern Prefecture was great. It was one of the leading families with power identical to the Feng family — definitely an overlord of one direction.

“Within the bronze carriage is an ancestor of the Qin family, this is really not good!”

Feng Zhi Zi’s face became serious and carefully gazed at the ancient bronze carriage outside of the godly temple.

Feng Fei Yun didn’t understand and asked:

“Why is it not good?”

“The Qin family and the Feng family are the two top families of the Grand Southern Prefecture with similar power, so only the Prefecture Governor is able to suppress our two houses. Of course, the Prefecture Governor was a character of the Tian Hou level in the Jin Dynasty so our two houses definitely cannot catch up. However, he also doesn’t care about the conflicts between major powers.”

“The Qin family and the Feng family have many grievances throughout the years; many talented Feng disciples died in the hands of the Qin family. Of course, Qin disciples also died in the hands of our own experts. The hatred between our two houses became deeper and deeper; if it wasn’t for the Prefecture Governor taking charge, our two families would have fought to the bitter end already.”

“The clan masters of both the families, throughout the generations, have always been ones with great foresight and knew that our powers were not quite different. If we truly fought to the bitter end, then both houses would suffer greatly, so both sides were waiting for just the right opportunity.”

Feng Zhi Zi truthfully brought out all of the grievances between the two families into the open and his eyes became more anxious with contemplation.

“What opportunity?”

Feng Fei Yun asked.

Feng Zhi Zi continued:

“When the balance between the two families is lost, one side will attack the

other while not giving them a chance to turn around. At this moment, there must be a heaven shattering secret in this godly temple. If the ancestor of the Qin family was to seize this treasure, his battle power would definitely soar. At that point, our Feng ancestor wouldn't be a match for him."

"When the Feng ancestor is defeated or dead, the destruction of the Feng family would be easy for the Qin family."

Sometimes, the war between families were simply decided by a battle of the masters. Whoever won would become king; the loser would become lost souls!

The Qin ancestor was a reclusive person. If there wasn't an appearance of a great treasure, then why would he rush here so quickly? It was clear that there was something unfathomable inside this godly temple, attracting the Ju Qings from all directions to quickly rush here.

Feng Fei Yun's eyes slightly shrunk and he channeled the Phoenix Heavenly Gaze towards the ancient bronze carriage, but he couldn't see through to the inside. Who on earth was inside the carriage? He could only see strands of shadows flying around the ancient carriage, as if the Qin ancestor was practicing a certain cultivation method.

"A junior from some little hole dares to peek at our house's ancestor!? Your one glance, I will pay you back with one as well."

Qin Ming felt the gaze of Feng Fei Yun and his eyes also focused, then turned into a tiny needle.

"Whoosh!"

A sword energy around the size of an ox's hair flew out from his pupil!

The reaction of this person was extremely fast and he had a high awareness; worthy of being a young genius. Also, his sword gaze was even faster compared to the dual gaze technique of Feng Jian Xue, rendering others unable to escape.

"Immortal Phoenix Physique!"

Feng Fei Yun naturally couldn't escape this sword, but he channeled his Immortal Phoenix Physique and the blood in his body quickly channeled, allowing this sword aura to pierce through the middle of his eyebrows.

“Phoosh!”

The tiny sword energy was extremely sharp and in a flash, it penetrated Feng Fei Yun’s forehead.

The sword energy invading the body was extremely painful, but once it came into contact with Feng Fei Yun’s channeled blood, this invincible sword energy began to dissipate.

Just like ice meeting boiling water!

Of course, this was because this sword gaze energy of Qin Ming was far too small; this was why Feng Fei Yun was able to use his boiling blood to melt it so quickly. If this was the Dual Gaze Fragmenting Moon Sword from Feng Jian Xue, even if the power wasn’t as focused as this sword energy, Feng Fei Yun absolutely wouldn’t meet it with his body — doing so would be akin to seeking death.

After Qin Ming saw that his sword energy had pierced through Feng Fei Yun’s forehead, he mockingly smirked and said:

“Can’t even block one blow!”

Even though Feng Zhi Zi and the other two protectors of the Feng family were standing very close to Feng Fei Yun, they were too slow to react. When they tried to stop the sword energy, it had already pierced through Feng Fei Yun’s forehead.

Feng Zhi Zi’s heart was filled with anxiety; his old gaze became crimson. He actually had to watch his only grandson die in front of him.

Dong Fang Jing Yue, standing in front of Feng Fei Yun, saw with her own eyes the sword energy piercing his forehead and even heard the sound of flesh being cut through.

There was a red dot of blood on Feng Fei Yun’s forehead. His eyes were dull and he remained motionless, as if he was dead.

“Feng Fei Yun, I tried to kill you twice yet you still survived; how could you die at the hands of an outsider?”

Dong Fang Jing Yue suddenly punched Feng Fei Yun’s chest.

Once Feng Fei Yun was dead, there would be no one able to control the lotus seat so escaping the godly temple would be very difficult. As a result, she was naturally angry.

“Ouch! Not so hard, all of my bones feel like they’re almost breaking!”

Feng Fei Yun covered his chest and kept on coughing.

Dong Fang Jing Yue’s tender body shuddered, and naturally, she was scared out of her mind by Feng Fei Yun. This little brat still wasn’t dead?

How could this be?

He was pierced by a sword through the forehead, how could he still survive?

Not only was Dong Fang Jing Yue in a daze, but Feng Zhi Zi was also shocked and unable to react. It was as if he was a stone statue.

“Clank clang!”

In the far distance, the sword in Qin Ming’s hand suddenly fell to the ground!

Even the three characters of the Ju Qing rank wanted to rush over. Although it was just a glance, the three Ju Qings had noted this strange Feng Fei Yun character.

He was pierced by a sword through the forehead yet he still didn’t die; could it be a reincarnation of a demon’s spawn? Many people here shared this same line of thought!

Dong Fang Jing Yue was, of course, the most depressed. She began to doubt: With her own ability, would she be able to kill this shameless man in the future?

Chapter 66 : Secrets of the Temple (1)

There were many predecessors present; not only characters of the elder ranking, but even three characters of the ancestral ranking were here. If two juniors fought at this moment, then it would truly be disrespectful towards the predecessors.

“Feng Fei Yun, immediately take me out of the godly temple now. Then, our grievances will all be bygones.”

Dong Fang Jing Yue always felt that this godly temple had become a dangerous place and staying here one moment longer would only increase the life threatening danger.

Of course, Feng Fei Yun also knew that the longer they stayed here the more dangerous it would be. Especially after the three Ju Qings’ arrival, the situation had become even more complicated. Once the Ju Qings started to fight, it would be enough to easily crush everyone present.

“Okay!”

Feng Fei Yun didn’t want to be involved with Dong Fang Jing Yue any longer, so he controlled the lotus seat to cross through the walls of the temple and took her outside of the forbidden ground.

Feng Zhi Zi and the other two protectors of the Feng family were naturally taken outside of the temple by him as well.

“Fei Yun, come with me and leave this place; it is too dangerous here.”

Feng Zhi Zi said.

However, Feng Fei Yun had no intentions of leaving and he comfortably smiled:

“Grandpa, I will not leave until I find Jian Xue.”

“Jian Xue also went into the Mortal Life Cavern?”

Feng Zhi Zi asked.

Feng Fei Yun looked towards the godly temple; it was still dark and quiet

inside. Each of the Buddhist chambers and tall pagodas were still looming in the darkness. In the end, he still felt that Jian Xue was hiding in a corner somewhere, quietly crying.

Feng Zhi Zi saw that Feng Fei Yun didn't want to leave, so he didn't force him and said:

"After you find Feng Jian Xue, immediately return to the Feng family, got it?"

Feng Zhi Zi wanted to quickly report these events to the Feng ancestor, so he hurriedly left with the two protectors and disappeared under the night's curtain.

As for Dong Fang Jing Yue, her shadow was already long gone. She was heavily wounded so naturally, she escaped — the farther, the better.

It wasn't that Feng Fei Yun didn't want to leave, it was because he couldn't leave this place at the moment!

"You are a child from the Feng family?"

Qin Ming heard the conversation between Feng Zhi Zi and Feng Fei Yun, so he snuck behind him with a long sword in his hand — he was in a mood for war.

In the eyes of Qin Ming, Feng Fei Yun was a frightening opponent. In the end, anyone that could survive a sword gaze would not be an ordinary person.

Plus, Qin Ming also clearly saw his sword aura pierce between the eyebrows of Feng Fei Yun but it still couldn't kill him. This made others suspicious about whether or not his cultivation was very high, to the point of reaching the realm capable of dissolving sword energy.

Qin Ming was one of the two heaven defying geniuses. He was only seventeen but was already approaching the intermediate God Base. As he was capable of slaying an external elder of the Feng family, there were few in the younger generation that could compete with him.

Feng Fei Yun glared at him and smiled:

"I am called Feng Fei Yun, you tell me whether I am a child of the Feng family or not?"

"Feng Fei Yun, it seems like you are also a heaven defying talent."

Qin Ming gently laughed and then became solemn as he said:

“Do you dare to fight against me once?”

“Why would I not dare!”

Feng Fei Yun crossed his arms in front of his chest with a confident look:

“But, we need to change the location.”

“Where?”

“Inside the godly temple.”

Feng Fei Yun pointed towards the godly temple that was broken and rundown. He then immediately turned into a blur and without any hesitation, flew straight into the depths of the temple.

Once he jumped over the wall of the godly temple, a lotus seat appeared below his feet. Riding the lotus seat, he used the formation to go inside the temple.

Qin Ming didn’t expect Feng Fei Yun to be so courageous. Even the three Ju Qings didn’t dare to carelessly intrude into the temple, yet he just rushed straight in; could it be that this little brat wasn’t afraid of death?

Qin Ming hesitated outside the temple for a long time and in the end, he didn’t dare to go inside as he said:

“Feng Fei Yun, you win.”

The dreary temple was filled with a murderous atmosphere; no one dared to rush in. Everyone was waiting for someone else to make a move first and take advantage of the confusion.

However, after the three Ju Qings saw Feng Fei Yun rush in, they became impatient.

At this moment, there were many cultivators from the Great Development Immortal Gate who went into action. Three characters of the elder rank flew out. They were riding three ancient beasts as they wore talismans and carried spears as thick as an arm. The three of them attacking together caused the wall of the godly temple to be ripped open and the tile stones became a dense cloud

of dust.

“Boom!”

A killing light that came from the yellow muddy well flew outward, like lightnings that shot into the four directions.

“Poof… Poof… Poof!”

The three elders of the Great Development Immortal Gate immediately died to the killing light, turning into bloody smears on the ground; even the mounts beneath them were no exceptions.

There were only three giant spears left on the ground, and they were broken into pieces.

“Boom!”

The ancestral wind beast, towering at a dozen zhang, carried the iron carriage and flew towards the godly temple.

The monstrous atmosphere that radiated from the iron carriage caused the disciples of the Great Development Immortal Gate to retreat backwards. This was because they knew their ancestor wanted to make a move.

“Destroy this yellow ancient well! Even though it is far away from the godly temple, it is a life controlling point. There must be a great mystery inside! Maybe all of the secrets of the godly temple would be inside this ancient well.”

“Once the ancestor makes a move, then naturally, there will be no mistakes.”

…

The ancestor inside the iron carriage didn’t appear, but the Sky Breaking Spirit Sword flew up into the air and carried with it a thunderous momentum, then it flew directly towards the yellow muddy well.

The strength of the Sky Breaking Sword was extremely powerful. One sword could split a large river, but right now, it had met a formidable foe.

“Boom!”

A spirit sword also came out from the well. It was formed by the condensation of water vapor, but its power was able to compete against the Sky Breaking

Sword. The two swords exchanged blows on top of the well, unable to determine the victor.

“Hmph!”

A cold snort came from the iron carriage. A corner of the steel curtain was gently lifted and a strand of light came out to hit the back of the ancestral wind beast, causing it to painfully roar as it continued to rush to the front.

The ancestor of the Great Development Immortal Gate personally made a move. The corner of the iron carriage’s steel curtain was lifted and only a breeze flew out. Others definitely couldn’t see his shadow until he was already standing on top of the yellow muddy ancient well. He gathered a thunderous light into his palm and smashed it into the well.

“Boom!”

The entire surface of the ground began to shake. There was debris falling from above, resulting in disciples with lower cultivation to be buried alive underground.

The Third Lord of the Sen Luo Temple also took action. The cultivation of this fierce demon was no less than the ancestor of the Great Development Immortal Gate. His body, at one hundred zhang tall with crackling flames surging about, thunderously resounded in a whole corner of the sky.

“Boom… Boom!”

Each of his steps shook the ground, shaking the godly temple. In a flash, he appeared next to the yellow muddy well and used his giant claws to smash the well.

The Qin family’s ancestor also didn’t want to fall behind so he flew out from the ancient bronze carriage. His white hair turned into countless swords around three thousand zhang long and held extremely powerful sword energy. Even the aftermath was enough to cause a Buddhist chamber to turn into powder and collapse into dust.

The three giants seemingly worked very well together and planned to destroy the well with one joint attack.

“Rumble!”

The crashing sounds continued to ring without breaks as if they wanted the whole Jing Huan Mountain to be completely destroyed.

The methods of the three were very profound. They caused others who were present to be envious and fearful at their formidable prowess.

“The cultivation of these three old men reaching this level, it is indeed a bit unexpected!”

Feng Fei Yun was hiding under a Buddhist pagoda and looked towards the ancient well. He was a bit impressed by the three Ju Qings’ cultivation. With their power, the destruction of this ancient well was only a matter of time.

Feng Fei Yun couldn’t help but think about the female corpse that wore a monastic robe inside the ancient well. This character, who used to be a peerless beauty… Maybe it was her who was fighting the three Ju Qings, as if she wanted to protect something.

No longer watching, Feng Fei Yun pushed the window of the Buddhist pagoda. The windows were already rotten so pieces of wood fell down to the floor.

“Jian Xue, Jian Xue!”

Feng Fei Yun yelled twice. As he didn’t hear anyone answer, he wanted to leave the area to avoid the ancient monk corpses from gathering due to his shouts — it would be very troublesome.

However, right at this moment, Feng Fei Yun stopped in his tracks. He smelled a sweet scent. Inside this Buddhist pagoda, he was able to smell the sweet scent of meat and wine. Even though it was faint, it was very real.

There seemed to be someone roasting meat and drinking wine in the Buddhist pagoda.

Why was there the smell of meat and wine in this place?

Could there actually be someone alive inside this Buddhist pagoda?

With suspicions in his heart, Feng Fei Yun carefully treaded inside, along the stairs filled with dust and spider webs, towards the top of the pagoda. The smell became increasingly strong. Only a whiff was enough to tell that the meat and

wine were definitely very delicious.

Chapter 67 : Secrets of the Temple (2)

The pagoda was filled with dust and rusted mottles while the floor was covered with debris.

Even though there was a fight outside that turned the heavens upside down, the pagoda maintained its tranquility. The Buddhist candle at the top of the pagoda was still radiating a faint and gentle light.

Feng Fei Yun traveled along the wooden stairs and finally made it to the top. There were no creatures nor formations along the way. This was entirely outside of his expectations.

However, once he made it to the top, everything then betrayed his expectations even more.

“Crackling!”

On the wooden floor was a burning bonfire. On top of the fire was an iron staff with a giant scorpion, it was around the size of a human head. The scorpion was already burnt brown with white smoke and issued a meaty scent.

Roasting the scorpion was a monk around eight feet tall with a muscular body and huge chains over his body.

His chest was half revealed and there was a tattoo on it. It had the shape of a black dragon raising its claws to the left and a ferocious white tiger to the right.

With the tattoos on his body, it seemed like this was not a nice person. He was more like the boss of a certain gang.

Plus, this monk was also using his Buddhist staff as a tool to roast meat, and it was a scorpion of all things. His arm, the size of a water bucket, continued to rotate while roasting and drinking wine at the same time.

The monk was seated on a wooden board. His chubby head glanced at Feng Fei Yun and gave a very friendly smile, but in Feng Fei Yun’s eyes, this smile was no different than a ferocious sneer of a butcher.

“Big Brother Fei Yun, this monk won’t let me go. Big Brother hurry and save

me.”

Feng Jian Xue was huddled in a corner. It was easy to see that she was very afraid of this monk.

Feng Fei Yun gave her a quick glance, clasped his hands, and bowed. Then, he respectfully said:

“Senior is part of the Buddhist circle, why are you making things so difficult for a little girl? This is clearly not the conduct of a person belonging to the Buddhist faith.”

This monk lifted his head and smiled:

“Young Benefactor, your words are a bit incorrect. Look at me, do my conducts resemble a monk in any way?”

The moment this monk opened his mouth, it caused others to be surprised. His voice was extremely aged, like an old man nearing his death. It completely didn’t fit his tall and muscular physique.

“This…”

Feng Fei Yun became annoyed. This monk looked more like an evil monk! Plus, he was also inside the pagoda. He was definitely an expert with a powerful cultivation so Fei Yun absolutely couldn’t make him angry.

If it wasn’t possible to play hard, then one could only use softness!

Feng Fei Yun laughed ‘haha’, and observed the surroundings of the pagoda. Then, he stepped forward.

In the middle of the pagoda was a Buddhist candle. The materials used to create it and give it the eternal never-extinguishing property were unknown.

Besides the candle, there was also an engraving on the wall. It was a venerable monk that wore a white monastic robe. The monk had a cyan dragon ring along with Buddhist beads and a pair of eyes filled with infinite sadness.

Even though it was only a painting, this sadness was very vivid. Anyone who saw the picture wouldn’t be able to contain their emotions.

“Cooked, finally cooked. Little Girl, do you want to eat?”

The monk bellowed.

Feng Jian Xue almost vomited from just glancing at the scorpion so naturally, she shook her head repeatedly and shut her eyes tightly. Clearly, she didn't want to look anymore.

"Sigh! What a shame, this is such a delicious meal yet no one dares to share it with this poor monk."

The monk shook his head and stomped his foot. He was seemingly very disappointed.

"I will enjoy this meal together with Senior."

Feng Fei Yun sat next to the monk and ripped the tail from the scorpion on the Buddhist staff. Then, he directly placed it into his mouth.

He initially thought that the scorpion's meat would be very difficult to eat, but after chewing twice, it was very delicious.

"Good meat! Senior is indeed worthy of being a famous meat roaster."

Feng Fei Yun praised from his heart.

"Hahaha! This Monk Jiu Rou's roasting is naturally the number one in the world. Even the number one cook of a heavenly golden little miss wouldn't roast as well as me."

The monk laughed. It was easy to see that he was very happy when others praised him for his roasting.

Feng Fei Yun surprisingly asked:

"Senior's name is Monk Jiu Rou?"

"Not right, not right."

The monk shook his head repeatedly.

Feng Fei Yun couldn't help but laugh at himself. Why would he ask such a stupid question? How could there be a monk named Jiu Rou (Wine Meat) in this world.

"My Buddhist title is Jiu Rou."

Monk Jiu Rou said in a serious manner.

“Pfft!”

Feng Fei Yun almost spat out the piece of scorpion meat he was chewing on. This monk was really called Monk Jiu Rou!

Monk Jiu Rou stood next to the fire. With his round face wearing a solemn expression, as if he was remembering something, he said:

“Before my master led me into the Mortal Life Temple, he didn’t give me a Buddhist title before passing away. The Buddhist title ‘Jiu Rou’ was a name I personally chose.”

The Mortal Life Temple was a grand temple? Feng Fei Yun had never heard of it before. He felt that this monk was only speaking nonsense.

Feng Fei Yun always felt that this monk had a mental problem and he didn’t want to hurt him, so he said:

“Senior is an accomplished monk, how could you keep a young miss in captivity? If this matter was spread outside, then it wouldn’t only affect your reputation but also the honor of the Mortal Life Temple.”

Feng Fei Yun sincerely described the grave stakes for Monk Jiu Rou, hoping that this strange monk would be enlightened.

Monk Jiu Rou still seemed to be thinking about something. His old voice was prolonged and sighed:

“The Mortal Life Temple has already sunk into the ground for more than eight hundred years. The entire Mortal Life Temple only had this poor monk left. Even if I lost all of my reputation, I would still take this girl as my disciple to pass on all of the Buddhist teachings of the Mortal Life Temple and continue our heritage. Otherwise, after this poor monk passes away, how would I have the face to meet my master?”

“What? This godly temple is the Mortal Life Temple?”

Feng Fei Yun was a bit surprised.

“What?! You want to take me in as a disciple? To be a female monk?”

Feng Jian Xue shivered and continuously shook her head. Even if someone were to beat her to death, she still wouldn't want to be a monk — a shaved head would be very ugly. This matter was absolutely impossible, but there was no opportunity for negotiation.

Monk Jiu Rou nodded his head and said:

"You and Buddha are brought together by fate. You have the Xiantian Buddhist Bones. If you didn't come with me to join the monastery, then it would be a great shame. Plus, I'm not forcing you to be a female monk?"

"Then what?"

Feng Fei Yun also frowned. Naturally, he didn't hope for Feng Jian Xue to become a monk.

"A female nun!"

Monk Jiu Rou drank a large gulp of booze again. The sound of him swallowing wine was very loud.

Feng Fei Yun and Feng Jian Xue were completely speechless towards this monk. Even if he wanted a disciple, he should be finding a male that was completely dedicated to Buddhism. However, this monk only wanted a beautiful little girl, like jade and flower, such as Feng Jian Xue; this was causing too much trouble for others!

However, Feng Fei Yun also noticed that this Monk Jiu Rou also had a bit of Buddhist tendency in him. Even though he appeared to be careless and drowned in alcohol and meat, his attitude was very stubborn. Once he made up his mind, it would be difficult to change it.

"I don't want to be a female nun, just kill me now!"

Feng Jian Xue stomped on the ground. She wanted to kick this Monk Jiu Rou's head.

"Great sin! Great sin! Master has never killed any living existence, not even an ant."

Monk Jiu Rou spoke while chewing on a piece of scorpion meat.

Feng Fei Yun smiled:

“Then the scorpion in the hands of Senior, did it kill itself by slamming into a wall?”

“Not true, not true. It was the flames that killed it, not this monk.”

Monk Jiu Rou honestly spoke with a serious expression. There was a hint of sadness in his eyes.

However, this sadness quickly disappeared. He continued to open his big mouth to eat the meat and drink the wine.

Feng Fei Yun admitted that he was a bit shameless and had done many bad things, but today, he truly had to accept complete defeat before this Monk Jiu Rou.

“Rumble!”

The entire Buddhist pagoda violently shook. The fight outside became more and more frightening. Countless sword energies scurried in the sky and destroyed Buddhist pagodas one by one while they cut bronze Buddhist statues into pieces.

However, within ten zhang, these sword energies were unable to enter this Buddhist pagoda. Once they reached here, there was an invisible force that dissipated these sword energies and turned them into a plume of smoke.

Feng Fei Yun opened a window inside the pagoda and stared outside. The three Ju Qings were still attacking with all of their might towards the yellow muddy ancient well.

The ancient well was still standing strong. There were strands of smoke that emanated outward, turning into a sword will, and a grand battle occurred.

“Senior, you are the last monk of the Mortal Life Temple, do you know there real secret inside the ancient well?”

Feng Fei Yun curiously asked.

After hearing the question, Monk Jiu Rou became even more serious. He put down the scorpion meat in his hand and stared at the sad painting on the wall. Then, he slowly spoke:

“The well buried a woman. One thousand eight hundred years ago, the abbot

of the Mortal Life Temple caused all of the monks to die in order to save this woman. He refined all of the life essences of all of the existences inside this grand temple in order to create an immortal spring spirit water — in order to prolong the life of this woman.”

Chapter 68 : Secrets of the Temple (3)

The sound of the godly temple's destruction thundered. The ancestor of the Great Development Immortal Gate, the Qin family's ancestor, and the Third Lord of the Sen Luo Temple were all supreme masters. Their combined offensive power created three giant dragon tornados that wanted to destroy the whole world.

Feng Fei Yun stood on top of the pagoda and looked down at the battle in the distance. While shaking badly, he said:

"The Mortal Life Temple's abbot killed all of the temple monks for a woman, no wonder why these monks are extremely hateful with their grievances. Even after a thousand years, they still refuse to die."

This mystery was so unbelievable that if Monk Jiu Rou didn't reveal it, no one would ever know the reason as to why the Mortal Life Temple was destroyed like this.

"Then, where is the abbot now?"

Monk Jiu Rou sat upright and stared at the ceiling. Then, he answered:

"Already dead!"

"Who killed him?"

Feng Fei Yun asked.

"Himself!"

Monk Jiu Rou answered.

"He personally killed himself?"

Feng Fei Yun nodded his head and said:

"Sounds about right. He must have felt that his sin was too great so he committed suicide as repentance."

"That wasn't quite the case."

Monk Jiu Rou continued:

“He killed himself to save the woman. He utilized his exceedingly high cultivation to create a grand formation that could reverse life and death. Bodies fell and the temple sunk into the ground — this was just to form an immortal spirit spring water well, in order to make a path for the woman’s survival.”

Monk Jiu Rou seemed to be very familiar with the secrets that year. There was a touch of melancholy between his brows and a sense of Buddhist ideals.

“A monk has to be clear of the six desires. This abbot, instead, got caught in the web of love. His death was well deserved…”

Feng Fei Yun smilingly spoke. However, he then remembered his own experience. Didn’t he also die because of a woman? It was even more miserable than the abbot’s situation.

Feng Fei Yun shut his mouth and didn’t say anything else.

Feng Jian Xue’s beautiful pair of eyes shined with a ripple of brilliance and said:

“I think that the abbot was a good monk. He would rather betray everyone in the world instead of her. If someone could do this for me, even if he was a monk, I would still marry him.”

Her big round eyes blinked and stared at Feng Fei Yun.

“It seems like Little Sister is truly fit to be a female nun. A monk and nun can become a good pair.”

Feng Fei Yun sighed and said.

Feng Jian Xue immediately became angry and glared at this damned Feng Fei Yun who didn’t understand her heart. He was not even equal to a monk.

“Boom!”

The entire pagoda shivered violently, as if it was about to be shook upside down.

A cloud containing a scarlet brilliance exuded from the yellow well, as if it was a red star that flew straight up to the high sky. It illuminated the entire godly temple and held an endless power.

The red star hovered in the sky, like a large basin, with bright and sharp light. It carried a strength with the desire to tear apart all living beings and caused the three Ju Qings to be pushed flying away.

“Boom!”

The Third Lord of the Sen Luo Temple was beaten bloody by the light of the red jewel. The flames on his body was extinguished while he was struck far away and created a hole in the ground.

The Great Development Immortal Gate’s gate master and the Qin family’s ancestor were also wounded, blood was shed everywhere. They were trying to find a way to escape from the yellow well. They didn’t dare to take another step forward.

This ancient power was truly frightening! Even Ju Qings couldn’t oppose it and spirit treasures were penetrated as well.

Eventually, everything calmed down and no one dared to make a move again.

“What is this blood star? Why is it so powerful?”

Someone stared at the hovering blood star in the air, only to feel that there were blood drops that hovered around the star. It was as if there were hundreds of spirit spring water drops.

In each of the spirit spring water drops, there was a little sleeping girl — these were the spirits of the drops.

“This blood star is just like a human’s heart. Earlier, I clearly saw it beating.”

“The blood star is absorbing the spirit spring water around it, and its strength is growing.”

***

The several hundred drops of spirit spring water in front of them was like a mountain of treasures. No one was free from temptation. This amount of wealth was staggering. Not to mention a few hundred, even ten drops were enough for a family to thrive.

The ancient well emitted the sweet fragrance of the spirit spring water and caused the bodies and minds of people to become comfortable. Everything

became clear and full of spirit.

Some weren't able to restrain the temptation of the water and began to step towards the godly temple. However, they didn't make it within ten zhang before they were already killed by the blood star; not even their corpses remained.

Even the three Ju Qings didn't dare to carelessly take action. If others were to make a move, it would be the same as heading straight towards death. Seeing spirit treasures yet being unable to seize them — this torturous feeling was the same as killing them.

In the Buddhist pagoda, Feng Fei Yun naturally wanted to obtain the spirit spring water as well. He summoned his lotus seat formation and wanted to risk his life for the treasure but Monk Jiu Rou grabbed him back.

"Monk, you want to stand in my way of becoming rich?"

Feng Fei Yun asked.

"This poor monk is only afraid that you are walking to your death."

Monk Jiu Rou stood up with a fierce-looking face. He walked towards the window and looked at the brilliant red star and sighed:

"Blood star comes into being, destiny overturned."

The ancient monk corpses in the godly temple began to crazily jump up and down on the ground. It was as if they wanted to grab the blood star. They began to roar and let out creepy growling sounds that caused one's hair to stand up.

No one suppressed them so their killing auras irradiated with hateful sentiments and soared to the sky.

Feng Fei Yun asked:

"Blood star comes into being, destiny overturned. Monk, what on earth are you doing? What is the meaning of this phrase?"

Monk Jiu Rou's expression had a confused look and he secretively said:

"This… It means that in a couple of days, there will be a great change in this world. Destinies will change, causing chaos within the flow of fate. Before, certain things couldn't happen, but now, at that moment, it could."

Monk Jiu Rou's words were vague and mysterious, as if he didn't want Feng Fei Yun to know everything, as if he wanted to avoid the main issue.

Monk Jiu Rou suddenly held down Feng Fei Yun's shoulder and glanced at him with his bronze bell-sized eyes before he earnestly said:

"Young Benefactor, at this moment, the lives of all mortal existences hang on a thread. This poor monk sees that you have a benevolent heart and want to entrust a big matter to you, are you willing?"

Feng Fei Yun had never thought of himself as someone with a benevolent heart and now, he saw this monk with a strange personality. He was definitely not a good monk, so Fei Yun was ready to shake his head:

"I…"

"Good! Of course this poor monk didn't misjudge you. Since you agreed to shoulder this burden, this poor monk will tell you the truths."

Monk Jiu Rou didn't even give Feng Fei Yun a chance to speak as he continued:

"The blood star is a blood heart. Once the blood star completes its process, it will transform into a blood heart and allow the woman in the ancient well to live again. At that moment, blood will flood the rivers and bodies will cover the mountains. In order to avoid this calamity, we can only depend on you."

"Huh? Wait a second! If the woman in the well lives again, why would blood flood the rivers and bodies cover the mountains?"

Feng Fei Yun had already met the corpse woman and he didn't feel any malicious air from her. On the contrary, there was even a strand of saintly aura from her body.

Monk Jiu Rou tapped Feng Fei Yun's shoulder again and frustratedly said:

"Young Benefactor, you are too innocent. A female corpse grown under the ground for more than one thousand years… If she comes back to life, then the killing intent on her body would be absolutely frightening. Plus, the blood star is collecting the blood of the monks filled with grievances, how monstrous would her hatred be? At that point, I'm afraid ten steps will kill a person, one thousand miles will destroy a city — there will be no one in the world that can stop her!"

Monk Jiu Rou's words were not without reasons so Feng Fei Yun nodded his head and said:

"Then, how do we prevent this from happening?"

"There is only one way."

Monk Jiu Rou smiled:

"Find the Na Lan Monastic Robe of the Mortal Life Temple's abbot, and the Buddhist Jade Beads in his hand. These two treasures will be able to suppress the blood star."

Monk Jiu Rou pointed towards the painting on the wall. The painting was of a venerable monk that wore a Na Lan Monastic Robe while he held the Buddhist Jade Beads.

Feng Fei Yun carefully looked at this venerable monk and felt a sense of familiarity. This sense was clearly fate because he had never met this monk before. Why was there such a familiar feeling?

"Then why don't you go get these two items yourself?"

Feng Fei Yun glanced at him.

Monk Jiu Rou turned around and picked up the scorpion meat on the ground. He continued to bite and said:

"This poor monk has to stay here to suppress the hateful monks inside this godly temple. If these monks run rampant outside, then it would also be blood flooding the rivers and bodies covering the mountains."

"The truth is, finding the Na Lan Robe and the Buddhist Jade Beads is not difficult. I heard that that year, because the abbot fell in love with this woman, he felt that his Buddhist heart was tainted. As a result, he hid himself inside a Buddhist courtyard inside Violet Firmament Ancient City. He wanted to use peerless Buddhist beliefs to forget the woman but in the end, he couldn't do it."

Monk Jiu Rou gave Feng Fei Yun a clue.

However, to Feng Fei Yun, this clue was not enough. In the end, Violet Firmament Ancient City was too large and there were more than one thousand Buddhist courtyards. Once he found the Na Lan Robe and beads, the corpse

woman would probably had came back to life by then.

Monk Jiu Rou was afraid that Feng Fei Yun wouldn't go so he continued to bewitch him and said:

"I heard that wearing the Na Lan Robe was like having an ancient Buddha possessing your body; one fist could destroy an entire mountain and you could move cities with your bare hands. When holding the jade beads, one could pick the stars and have incomparable offensive power that's able to take over the world."

He glanced at Feng Fei Yun, wanting to see his reaction.

Feng Fei Yun smiled and said:

"Don't try to tempt me with these things. There are so many experts outside with killing intentions that could fill the four directions… Just escaping to the outside is already a difficult matter. If I work for you, you should at least take out some more substantial benefits?"

Monk Jiu Rou seemed to be waiting for these words from Fei Yun as he happily nodded:

"Here, this poor monk has a fourth rank ancient spirit pill. It can allow for Young Benefactor to exert half the power of a Ju Qing during a moment of life and death — one fist would have the strength of one million jin."

Feng Fei Yun was ecstatic. He thought his mind that this monk truly knew how to deal with others.

"This poor monk also has three drops of spirit spring water, each is filled with spirits — priceless."

Monk Jiu Rou was very generous and took out a jade jar then put it in Feng Fei Yun's hand.

"This poor monk still has a fifth rank All Heaven Spirit Pill… However, this will have to wait until you bring back the Na Lan Monastic Robe and the Buddhist Jade Beads."

Monk Jiu Rou showcased the pill and then took it back.

Chapter 69 : Invincible Buddhist Staff

Spirit pills were valuable treasures. Even a first rank spirit pill was a priceless treasure and could not be measured with money. Fifth rank spirit pills were even more rare. The entire Jin Dynasty wouldn't have more than a few.

Monk Jiu Rou simply took out the fifth rank spirit pill to lure Fei Yun. He didn't give it to him because he was afraid this little brat would leave without returning.

At this moment, Feng Fei Yun had gotten a fourth rank spirit pill and three drops of spirit spring water so he was already extremely happy. Naturally, he didn't care about other matters of this petty monk.

"Young benefactor, remember this well: within seven days you must return; otherwise, the consequences would be unimaginable. Should you fail, blood will flood the rivers and bodies will cover the mountains…"

"Okay, okay. So to speak, when it comes to eating humans, you pick the soft and delicious parts. When capturing them, you make good use of their flaws. It seems like you have been quite generous. This matter of finding the Na Lan Robe and Buddhist Jade Beads, it is within my capability. However… my abilities are limited, so Jian Xue must go with me. Even though she can't do much, she could still lend a hand or run errands."

Feng Fei Yun said.

Even though Monk Jiu Rou's physique was large and rugged, his mind was meticulous. Just a glance was enough to see through Feng Fei Yun's heart, so he smiled:

"This young miss will absolutely not leave this place. What if the two of you leave and never return? What am I going to do then?"

"This… Such a matter, I will absolutely not do."

Feng Fei Yun said.

Monk Jiu Rou stood there silently with a smile, as if he was saying: "This is not

definite!”

“Whoosh!”

A black shadow flew past the window with the speed of a hawk hunting its prey. In a flash, this shadow quickly rushed out of the Buddhist Pagoda to the outside of the godly temple.

The hidden art of this shadow was extremely proficient. Who knew how long he had been hiding there inside the pagoda and listening in on the conversation between Feng Fei Yun and Monk Jiu Rou. At this moment, he quickly escaped.

“It was Du Shou Gao! He definitely heard our conversion and knew about the two Buddhist treasures. If these two treasures fall into his hands, then he would be an invincible god of death. By then, it would really be blood flooding the rivers and bodies covering the mountains.”

Feng Fei Yun, standing beside the window, gazed at the escaping shadow. He wanted to chase and kill him so that he wouldn’t obtain the Na Lan Robe and the Buddhist Jade Beads, but he felt that he didn’t have the strength because Du Shou Gao’s cultivation was much higher. A chase would only result in a reverse kill.

Monk Jiu Rou was even more anxious than Feng Fei Yun. He quickly picked up the Buddhist staff that was used as a roasting rod and handed it to Feng Fei Yun. He then said in a serious manner:

“Bring this Invincible Buddhist staff and chase after the person who has just escaped. We absolutely cannot let the Na Lan Robe and the Buddhist Jade Beads to fall into his hands.”

“Invin-Invincible Buddhist staff!”

Feng Fei Yun glanced at the Buddhist staff, that was charred black by the roasting fire, in the hand of the Monk Jiu Rou. Seeing as it was as large as the size of an arm, it was truly more like a rolling pin yet he was calling it an Invincible Buddhist staff?

Bringing this toy to chase Du Shou Gao would definitely bring about jeers from him.

“Correct, this is an Invincible Buddhist Staff. This little monk also gave it this name.”

Monk Jiu Rou forced the Invincible Buddhist Staff into Feng Fei Yun’s hand and used his huge arms to lift Feng Fei Yun up. Then, he directly threw him down from the Buddhist Pagoda.

“Fuck, it is really high…!”

Feng Fei Yun shouted!

Holding this Invincible Buddhist Staff in his hand, Feng Fei Yun felt as if he was holding the world’s universal laws. He had an unprecedented clear mind as a majestic energy from the staff kept on channeling into his body.

Feng Fei Yun felt power surging through his body. His skin and bones were radiating a golden aura. He suddenly flipped his body. With the staff in his hand, he arched his chest and lifted his head while he floated in the air. Then, he stomped the air and crazily flew towards the front.

“I’m invincible in this world!”

Feng Fei Yun roared and let out an ancient godly lightning from his mouth. He headed towards the direction of Du Shou Gao’s escape and disappeared, causing the air to explode.

It was unknown what kind of unrivaled Buddhist power this staff was carrying, but it was able to flow through Feng Fei Yun’s body without any hinderance.

At this moment, Feng Fei Yun was surging with a new battle prowess. Even a predecessor of the God Base realm would be killed by one staff from him.

Feng Fei Yun powerfully rushing out of the temple caused many cultivators to be alarmed. Where did this guy come from?

“Feng Fei Yun, don’t run. I want to fight you.”

The golden robe on Qin Ming’s body was as hard as steel and created loud sounds as it came into contact with the wind. He gripped his chilling sword in his hand and quickly pursued.

He didn’t dare to enter the godly temple but this didn’t mean that he didn’t dare to fight Feng Fei Yun.

“Boom!”

Qin Ming waved his sword upward and released a golden sword aura that split into two. Two became four, four became eight… In the end, they became two hundred and fifty-six sword energies.

The sword energies were as fast as lightning, bringing along a devastating force.

The Qin’s ancestor slightly nodded his head. Qin Ming’s sword technique was the supreme “Ten Thousand Swords, One Origin” from the Qin family. Once cultivated to the extreme, one sword could slash into sixteen thousand three hundred and eighty four sword energies — no one could stop it.

Qin Ming, at such a young age, was still able to unleash two hundreds and fifty-six sword energies. He was truly worthy of being the number one genius! He was absolutely capable of increasing the Qin family’s reputation and suppress the young generation of the Feng family.

“Rumble!”

Feng Fei Yun suddenly stopped, and unexpectedly, he threw the Invincible Buddhist Staff into the ground. A power released from the ground caused numerous debris to fly crazily and it stopped the absolutely brilliant sword from Qin Ming.

He looked back and Du Shou Gao was gone. Most likely, he had already left the Mortal Life Cavern. Feng Fei Yun didn’t want to waste time with Qin Ming so he removed the staff from the ground and immediately strode towards Du Shou Gao.

When the smoke dissipated, Feng Fei Yun was already gone!

Qin Ming didn’t expect Feng Fei Yun to be able to block that one sword earlier. His heart was even more unconvinced. So, with his sword in hand, he continued to pursue.

At this moment, it was near the end of summer and the sun was burning like the fire on a stove.

The Jing Huan Mountain was serene, not even the birds or beasts were in sight.

It was if these creatures felt the changes inside the mountain and had escaped without a trace.

Feng Fei Yun stepped on the cliffs, indenting the stone surfaces with huge holes in the process, to borrow the momentum to fly up like a giant hawk rushing through the mountain.

In front of him, the shadowy figure was also crazily jumping from tree to tree until both of them left Jing Huan Mountain. Then, the shadowy figure came to a stop and arrogantly stood upright.

It was indeed Du Shou Gao. He was still impoverishly dressed like before, with a cloth linen robe and sandals made out of straws. Only the sabre on his back was radiating bright lights and carried countless spirit auras.

“Feng Fei Yun, you catching up is simply courting death.”

Du Shou Gao’s chilling gaze contained cold killing intent.

Finally, Feng Fei Yun made it here, with the Invincible Buddhist Staff on his back. Covered in sweat, he sat down on a boulder while panting and said:

“Then why were you running? Rushing to your reincarnation?”

“I have agreed with Dong Fang Jing Yue to take your life. Now is the time to finish everything. After killing you, I will no longer owe her any favors.”

Du Shou Gao’s expression was extraordinarily calm and his voice had no hints of emotions.

“Dong Fang Jing Yue actually invited an assassin to kill me; this damned woman is really ruthless!”

Feng Fei Yun’s heart was a bit unhappy and he regretted not directly killing her before.

Feng Fei Yun secretly swallowed a drop of spirit spring water and slowly stood up. He pierced his Invincible Buddhist Staff into the ground and smiled:

“To fight against an assassin, one first has to control his movements and restrict his speed.”

Feng Fei Yun used the staff to draw magical runes into the ground. These runes

twisted and turned like waves of swords revolving around each other.

Du Shou Gao narrowed his eyes and was slightly alarmed in his heart. The specialty of an assassin was his speed. If Feng Fei Yun could actually stop his movement, then it would be very problematic. He had to stop him now.

Du Shou Gao didn’t hold anything back. His sabre started to fly in the air and it turned into lines, resembling a dragon, then flew forward.

Chapter 70 : Thunder from a Clear Sky

“Roar!”

The sabre technique of Du Shou Gao was frighteningly fast. Once he made a move, it would shock the heaven and earth and precedents of failure were virtually none.

The runes made by the staff on the ground were easily cut through by the sabre’s edge and it brushed up against Feng Fei Yun’s chest, like a horrific technique that was unable to be dodged.

Fast! Swift! Rapid!

This was the attack from Du Shou Gao that was impossible for others to guard. Feng Fei Yun could only drag his staff back and retreat. However, backing off any more would lead him back to Jing Huan Mountain, and Du Shou Gao’s speed in that terrain would only be even more unpredictable.

“Boom!”

Feng Fei Yun’s eyes were perceptively fast like lightning. He suddenly stomped on the ground and moved the staff in his hand. With his hands raised, a powerful strike erupted.

The iron rings at the top of the staff hitting each other created jingling sounds and set off golden sparks.

“Clank clank!”

The strength of the staff was great; it was more than ten thousand jin and it directly pounded on Du Shou Gao’s sabre of the spirit treasure rank, causing the spirit sabre to cry a lamenting roar. The spirit awareness on the blade were several parts broken and lost some of its spiritual lights.

“Ahhh!”

Du Shou Gao let out a painful bellow. The skin on his hand was cracked, leaving a bloody line.

The power of the staff was truly too strong. Even with his intermediate God Base cultivation, he had no way of blocking it and was struck with unstable blood energies, along with trembling internal organs. The bones in his arms were paralyzed, as if they were completely fractured.

Du Shou Gao's movement normally was impossible to be traced but it couldn't escape the Phoenix Heavenly Gaze of Feng Fei Yun. After identifying his whereabouts, Feng Fei Yun openly made a move and continuously attacked Du Shou Gao.

With one successful strike, Feng Fei Yun naturally wouldn't give him a chance to rest. He channeled his spirit energies and exerted the complete power of the Invincible Buddhist Staff. Each strike was as powerful as the bursting of thunders, an unstoppable presence in the sky.

Du Shou Gao's shadow was like a ghost, moving back and forth like the falling leaves during autumn. He could still escape some of the unstoppable blows from the Invincible Buddhist Staff. His sabre techniques were also extraordinarily refined, like a spirit serpent traveling through the void, making it difficult for Feng Fei Yun to successfully attack while avoiding Du Shou Gao's exchanges.

Once his sabre made contact, death would be the only outcome!

Therefore, even though Feng Fei Yun had the upper hand, just the slightest bit of carelessness would result in his death under Du Shou Gao's sabre.

"Du Shou Gao, it seems as if your sabre isn't that fast?""

Feng Fei Yun's hands quickly swung the Invincible Buddhist Staff and his momentum became increasingly powerful, like a raging bull.

Du Shou Gao didn't bother to answer. Suddenly, he closed his eyes and partially kneeled to the ground. With both hands gripping his blade handle, he slammed the edge into the ground and numerous sabre energies pierced through the surface, turning into endless blades that bursted up to the sky.

"Whoosh, whoosh…!"

In his heart, Feng Fei Yun knew this was bad. A strand of murderous aura and crisis inched closer. He quickly flew away from the ground to avoid this destructive blow of Du Shou Gao, but he was one step too late. The sabre energy

emerged near his leg and rushed straight up.

This sabre energy was definitely unblockable and it went through his calf, creating a wound around one feet long. Blood spurted out from his nearly removed calf muscle.

Feng Fei Yun tried to endure the pain that came from his calf and channeled the Invincible Buddhist Staff to go back on the offensive. This strike of his carried a golden aura, along with the power of thunder, and created quite an atmosphere.

“Boom!”

Du Shou Gao had no chance to resist the Invincible Buddhist Staff, so his left shoulder was struck and caused the bones to be crushed, creating loud cracking noises.

With the invincible staff in his hand, Feng Fei Yun carried a pale expression and limped in front of Du Shou Gao, then he declared:

“Today will be the day of your death!”

Not only was Du Shou Gao’s arm broken, but even the bones in his body were shattered in multiple places. The spirit energy in his body was chaotic and he definitely was no longer a match for Feng Fei Yun, but his character was extremely determined — although heavily wounded — and he still stood tall to say:

“To Pinnacle Fate Ending Palace’s assassins, being unable to kill someone else naturally means that they do not think about being able to survive.”

Even though Feng Fei Yun respected his determination, the two were enemies. Being merciful to an enemy was the same as being cruel to oneself, so Feng Fei Yun definitely had to take his life.

“Whoosh!”

A thin shadow rushed out from the ground and grabbed Du Shou Gao’s arm, pulling him away. Its speed was extremely fast. In just a few seconds, they traveled several hundred zhang away, then finally stopped.

A person suddenly appeared. Their movement technique was very similar to Du

Shou Gao. It was apparent that this was also a top assassin from the Pinnacle Fate Ending Palace.

“Feng Fei Yun, it is probably better for you to not chase.”

The figure of the shadow was tall and slender with coldness in her eyes. It turned out to be a young woman.

Of course, Feng Fei Yun couldn’t spare Du Shou Gao. He had to kill him in order to shut his mouth, but he didn’t expect another genius assassin from the Pinnacle Fate Ending Palace to appear, and with a cultivation no weaker than Du Shou Gao himself!

This could be a difficult matter!

Feng Fei Yun used spirit energy to seal the wound on his calf and carried his staff over. Then, he smilingly said:

“From the past till now, only this Young Master threatens women. Little Girl, don’t fall into my hands. Otherwise, I will make sure that you will be unable to stand up, hah hah!”

The female assassin gravely said:

“Feng Fei Yun, today, you are a dog with a dead owner, a snail that can’t carry its own shell, yet you still dare to offend our Pinnacle Fate Ending Palace? You are truly not afraid of death!”

Feng Fei Yun slightly frowned and sensed a bad feeling, then he asked:

“What about a dog with a dead owner?”

“Do you still not know that the clan master of the Feng family had sent four heaven defying geniuses to capture you?”

The female assassin was just as cold blooded as Du Shou Gao and carried no emotions in her voice. It was as if she was afraid that Feng Fei Yun wouldn’t understand, so she continued:

“There was someone who came to the Feng clan master and claimed that you had offended a grand character. The clan master kicked you out of the family in order to appease this character and also sent four top geniuses after you.”

Her words were plain, but to Feng Fei Yun, they were as shocking like thunders. Even though he didn't have a great sense of belonging or loyalty to the Feng family, after hearing this news, it still produced a sense of loss and anxiety.

It was absolutely the whore, Dong Fang Jing Yue, who went to the Feng clan master. Besides her, there was no one else that could pressure the clan master. This had to be the case, it had to be so!

Next time we meet, I will definitely not spare her again.

Even though Feng Fei Yun thought this in his mind, he maintained a calm expression. He didn't want the two assassins ahead of him to find his weakness. He laughed loudly and said:

"What a joke! How could I trust the words of an assassin? I, Feng Fei Yun, am a talented genius of the Feng family; the Feng clan master wouldn't have the heart to kick me out of the clan."

"It is fine if you don't believe me. I only know that because of this, your grandfather and uncles were affected and are now imprisoned. There are also law enforcement experts of the Feng family coming to Spirit State City to sanction your father. This is the official denunciation order from the Feng family and it is probably spreaded all over Violet Firmament Ancient City by now."

The assassin took out a ripped order and threw it next to Feng Fei Yun.

Feng Fei Yun's heart shivered for a moment. After a second of hesitation, he finally picked up the order. It was indeed printed with the Feng family's official seal.

Feng Fei Yun didn't bother reading the content of the letter and directly stored it in his chest.

Big families were worried about their faces so the expulsion of children out of these grand families only happened once every few hundred years. Even if it did happen, it would be a very secretive matter so as to not allow others to jeer.

However, this time, these orders from the Feng family were posted all over Violet Firmament Ancient City. This news was too great. Even the female assassin from the palace knew about it. The determination of the Feng family to expel Feng Fei Yun was apparent.

From another angle, it could be said that the whore, Dong Fang Jing Yue, had caused too much pressure towards the Feng family.

“You dare to maneuver against my family, Dong Fang Jing Yue! You are definitely dead!”

The fiery anger in Feng Fei Yun’s heart bursted all the way to his brain. At this moment, he only wanted to rush back to Violet Firmament Ancient City and find the coward, Dong Fang Jing Yue, and rip her body apart.

The female assassin and Du Shou Gao had silently ran away. They turned into two shadowy figures and disappeared in the sky.

Feng Fei Yun silently stood alone and contemplated for a moment. Then, he carried his Invincible Buddhist Staff and ran away at maximum speed.

Chapter 71 : Son of an Evil Demon

Three days later! Wild geese were flying in the air.

The plain was filled with wild grass, around nine feet high, that flooded even the heads of people.

Feng Fei Yun jumped out from the wild grass and flew towards the endless sky. The spirit energy in his body was abundant. A seedling inside his dantian shined brightly and seemed to be magically spirited.

The injury at his calf, under the power of the spirit spring water, had completely recovered and only left a small purple scar behind.

“Intermediate Immortal Foundation. The spirit spring water is indeed worthy of being a great treasure.”

Feng Fei Yun landed on the ground and looked towards the far direction.

Even though he was expelled from the Feng family and even his own family was implicated as well, he didn’t want to be a fool that acted on impulse. Just the power of one person couldn’t go up against an entire clan.

At least, right now he couldn’t!

“Three days have passed… Only four more days left. First, I have to find the Na Lan Robe and the Buddhist Jade Beads. As long as I have these two great treasures, there is no place in this big world that I can’t go to! Why the need to bury myself in the tiny Feng clan?”

There was a clue in Feng Fei Yun’s mind. The painting in the godly temple was very similar to the immortal robe that he saw in the mansion inside Violet Firmament Ancient City.

However, because so much time had passed, the engravings on the painting had became faint. It was faded to the point where, at that moment, he didn’t connect the two things together. It wasn’t until today, when he was cultivating in the wild plain, that he was able to remember this matter.

Feng Fei Yun’s heart was very anxious. He was afraid that Du Shou Gao would

get there first!

Violet Firmament Ancient City was the stronghold of the Feng family and now, the entire family was chasing him. Once he appeared, it would lead to countless experts trapping him. Therefore, he had no choice but to wear a black hat, change into an exotic monastic robe, and carry his Buddhist staff into the city.

Just like a Buddhist monk from a foreign land, it was not rare to see this type of monastic clothing in Violet Firmament Ancient City.

“The Feng family’s reputation suffered quite a bit this time. A little fifth generation disciple offending a descendant of the royal Yin Gou family, isn’t this the same as eating a leopard’s gall bladder?”

“The old men of the Feng family must not be comfortable at the moment. They’re suffering from the suppression of the Yin Gou family and could only relieve their anger on their own youths.”

“Anyway, I still feel that this time, it won’t be so easily resolved. Wait until the Feng experts capture Feng Fei Yun; I’m sure there will be some unforeseen changes.”

***

Feng Fei Yun sat in an extravagant restaurant in Violet Firmament Ancient City as he ate vegetarian food, but he didn’t expect to arrive just when other young cultivators were talking about his business.

The cultivations within this young crowd weren’t very high, no one reached the Immortal Foundation realm. They were just disciples of small sects in the city.

Even though there were many orders posted across the city with his portrait, because he was wearing a black hat, these people couldn’t recognize him.

Many footsteps noises busily appeared. Then, it was followed by an excited voice:

“More big news just came. It turns out that the person excommunicated by the Feng family is Feng Fei Yun, an offspring of an evil demon. His bloodline is not pure, resulting in the degradation of the official Feng family’s bloodline. This was why the Feng clan master wanted to punish him.”

A fatty banged the table and laughed:

“How could you believe such nonsense? Since the inception of the Jin Dynasty till now, all of the evil demons had been expelled to near non-existence. These old men from the Feng family saying this laughable stuff… isn’t it just them trying to save some face? Because in the end, if this news were to be spread, the Feng family would be known to succumb to the Yin Gou family’s pressure and had to make a move against their own child — such an embarrassment to their face! Hahaha!”

“This matter is absolutely true. It was claimed by a child from the Feng family; that Feng Fei Yun’s mother was an evil demon and she had an inappropriate relationship with his father.”

Feng Fei Yun couldn’t maintain his silence and said:

“Is there any evidence?”

“Of course there is evidence. I heard the informer was the adopted brother of Feng Fei Yun. He found the hidden evil demon robe that Feng Fei Yun’s father was hiding; there was definitely the aura of an evil demon. After the clan master of the Feng family found out, he was outraged and declared that if they captured Feng Fei Yun, they would burn him to ashes with the Second Dark Hell Flame.”

“This matter was made public today to almost the entire Violet Firmament Ancient City. If you don’t believe it, you could go to the Intoxicated Jade Pavilion to ask the adopted brother of Feng Fei Yun. I heard this person made a great contribution so the heaven defying geniuses of the Feng family are celebrating there with him.”

Even though Feng Fei Yun wasn’t clear on everything, on why these people were calling his mother an evil demon, he was sure that the informer was Feng Sui Yu.

Feng Sui Yu initially was just a child beggar on the streets of Spirit State City. Feng Wan Peng pitied him so he adopted him as a son and from then on, he became an influential character in Spirit State City.

He didn’t expect that when Father was thinking so highly of him, he would turn out to be the first to betray Father — truly biting the hands that fed him.

Feng Fei Yun was no longer in the mood to eat. At the moment, he only wanted to murder.

The Intoxicated Jade Pavilion was one of the largest brothels in Violet Firmament Ancient City. The women here were feminine and gentle like water, talented and beautiful. They were not lacking girls who were gifted in the arts of poetry and music, but in the end, they still had to become a man's doll on the bed, with the exception of having a higher price compared to other girls.

Feng Fei Yun was still wearing his exotic monastic robe along with a black hat covering his face. The iron rings on top of his Buddhist staff hit each other and created clanking sounds. He stopped in front of the Intoxicated Jade Pavilion.

This place was worthy of being a hole to throw gold into. Just the outside resembled an extravagant palace of an Emperor. Both sides of the paved white marbled roads had eight young girls that were vibrant with youth, wore makeup, had white skin like jade, and were alluring to the point where if you pinched them, water would come out.

They stood under lines of hanging lanterns. Their already revealing clothes blew along with the evening breeze and couldn't be described as anything other than sultry flowers.

"It is a great day with a beautiful scene, us beautiful women are lonely. Monks of the Buddhist faith aim to enlighten all living beings. Great monk, will you enlighten us girls tonight for just a little bit?"

A beauty with a slender figure, who carried a colorful lantern, headed towards Feng Fei Yun and greeted. The voice of this beauty was soft and sweet and naturally carried along with it an alluring charm that was irresistible.

She exuded a sweet scene, neither too heavy nor faint. When she approached Feng Fei Yun, this scene was like a tsunami and encompassed him.

Any men who wiffed this fragrance, even if they clearly knew that she was a prostitute, wouldn't be able to help but consider her like their first love.

"Great monk, why aren't you saying anything? Do you truly look down on Su Su, this worldly woman?"

The black blinking eyes of this woman called Su Su let out two drops of tears.

She seemed to be able to cry on command.

At this moment, Feng Fei Yun's heart was filled with killing intent and only wanted to rush in and dice this asshole, Feng Sui Yu, into eight pieces. However, after being tempted by this woman, his heart calmed down quite a bit and wasn't quite in a hurry as before.

This dog Feng Sui Yu, he will absolutely die tonight. There is no need to rush at this moment to kill him.

"This monk's heart is filled with lust without the guts to commit the deed. He stood in front of the Intoxicated Jade Pavilion for so long but despite all of my efforts, he wouldn't take the bait. He's truly driving this miss mad."

Su Su dried her fake tears and angrily stomped her feet, wanting to leave.

"Amitabha, if one was to say that Buddha will enlighten the fateful, then earlier this poor monk had respectfully reported to Buddha. Buddha said that this poor monk and young miss are fateful. Tonight, no matter what, this poor monk will enlighten young miss."

Feng Fei Yun let out a chant for the Buddha and immediately went towards the Intoxicated Jade Pavilion with the staff in one hand and Su Su in his other.

This scene caused the girls, who were soliciting customers outside of the pavilion, to glance at each other in confusion. This monk was truly something else. Hearing his words, it seemed like he was obeying Buddha to come here and patronize prostitutes.

The Intoxicated Jade Pavilion was truly worthy of being a paradise for men. One could easily see beautiful women everywhere. With countless wines and cuisines, even an enlightened monk would want to stay here for a couple more days.

The moment he entered, he noticed Feng Sui Yu on the third floor with three other talents from the Feng family. Each was handsome with a godly presence that contained a huge amount of power and caused the ones without business to stay away from them.

"Those are the four red cards of our Intoxicated Jade Pavilion. Each of them are worth one thousand gold coins per night, only the Feng talents could invite

them.”

Su Su, seeing Feng Fei Yun’s gaze towards that direction, thought that Fei Yun was looking at the four hostesses, so she reminded him.

The four hostesses were truly stunning beauties. Their age did not exceed twenty. Some carried an elegant air while others had a cold arrogance, as well as a touch of gentleness alongside an alluring charm.

Just obtaining one from the four would be a man’s joy in his life. Moreover, the four of them were all gathered in the same place. Feng Sui Yu was served by all of them so naturally, he was smiling from ear to ear.

“Brother Sui Yu, I can’t believe you were able to steal the evil demon robe. You, indeed, made a grand contribution for the clan. I heard that the clan master was going to have an upper echelon meeting in order to determine your reward. This is truly a good cause for celebration.”

A Feng family genius, who wore a white robe, gave a toast with a wine cup in his hand. It was a joyous occasion to be drinking with beautiful women.

“I heard that the evil demon robe was rather extraordinary. The demon energy even suppressed an elder to death and turned him into pus and blood. In the end, a few ancestors had to activate their spirit treasures in order to barely suppress it. This kind of evil item, how did brother Sui Yu steal it before?”

Feng Sui Yu let off a smirk and said:

“The evil demon robe belonged to Feng Fei Yun’s mother and in Fei Yun’s body, the demon bloodline of his mother runs rampant. As long as you use Feng Fei Yun’s blood and spread it over your hands, you wouldn’t have to worry about the power of the robe. This matter, I had already reported to the ancestors. This was also why the clan master was so eager to capture Feng Fei Yun.”

“I understand now. This time, the ancestors want to capture Feng Fei Yun and use his blood to refine the evil robe. If they could sooth the evil robe, then the power of our Feng family would increase by countless times. Then, we wouldn’t have to be so fearful of the Yin Gou family.”

“Hmph, Feng Jue, whisper. This is a secret matter. Wait until we capture the brat Feng Fei Yun, then we can celebrate.”

Another young man warned.

Feng Sui Yu slightly glanced at him and smiled:

“Oldest Brother, you are way too careful. With the peerless cultivation of us brothers, dealing with Feng Fei Yun is as easy as killing a flea. Within three days, Feng Fei Yun will definitely die.”

“Hahaha! This is indeed inevitable. If he doesn’t die, Sui Yu, I’m afraid you wouldn’t be able to live in peace.”

A white robed man, with a hat on, smiled with many implications.

“I have broken through the early Immortal Foundation realm. Even if ten Feng Fei Yuns stood in front of me, I can still kill him ten times with one fist.”

Feng Sui Yu loudly laughed with a hint of contempt in his eyes. Then, he pinched the chest of the beauty sitting next to him and emptied his wine cup.

Chapter 72 : Homicidal Buddhist Staff

There was a lot of loud and rowdy commotion in the middle of the Intoxicated Jade Pavilion. With bright lanterns and strands of white mist going back and forth between the floors, it was like a building for immortals.

The three heaven defying geniuses of the Feng family and Feng Sui Yu were all wearing white silk dresses while they held feather fans. With a silk cloth that tied up their hair, they were akin to four elegant scholars as they drank on the third floor. Each of them had their arms around a popular beauty; one didn't need to speak about how envious people would have been.

Feng Fei Yun was still wearing an exotic Buddhist robe with a Buddhist staff in his hand. A wise man would immediately know that he was a person of the Buddhist faith. However, at this moment, he was hugging a beautiful young miss in his arms and even did some perverted touching. This caused others to glance in confusion and they even issued ridicules and derisions.

"Boom, boom, boom…"

Feng Fei Yun, step by step, stomped up the stair. He went all the way to the third floor and sat in the opposite chair of Feng Sui Yu. At this moment, Su Su brought a top class wine to him and poured him a cup.

On the other side, Feng Sui Yu was smiling and talking:

"To be honest, the little bastard, Feng Fei Yun, at Spirit State City was a sinful criminal. It was almost to the point where the people all wanted to kill him. If my father didn't have his back, then this little bastard would have been beaten to death."

"Oh! I've never heard of this matter before. If you didn't say anything then everyone wouldn't have known. Why not tell it so that everyone can hear?"

One person was interested so he asked.

Feng Sui Yu smilingly recalled:

"The story went like this. In Spirit State City, there was an old man named Luo

at the age of seventy-eight — a person who knew his place. He lived with his granddaughter and sold tea to make a living, but the damned Feng Fei Yun unexpectedly had his eyes on the little girl. He not only ** the little girl but also threw her into a brothel in the city afterwards. She didn't last more than a few days before being raped to death. Old Man Luo went to the court for a lawsuit but met Feng Fei Yun's dad instead. Feng Wan Peng wanted to shield his son so he ordered for people to beat Old Man Luo to death. Sighhh! He truly committed such a terrible sin, ah!"

"Beast!"

"How could there be such a cancerous degenerate in our Feng family?"

Everyone that listened felt hatred. Even the little misses showed disdain and felt an aversion towards this Feng Fei Yun they had never met before.

"Cough cough. If Young Noble Feng knew about it, then why didn't you stop it?"

The voice of a certain person appeared. It caused Feng Sui Yu, who was happily laughing, to pause and his brilliant face dimmed.

The atmosphere became cold and the entire brothel became silent.

Feng Sui Yu slammed his wine cup onto the table, issuing a "bam". His hawk-like gaze looked around and found that the voice earlier was from a monk who was seated calmly on the opposite side while drinking.

"You're a monk yet you still came to the brothel to drink wine and get serviced by a prostitute? Which temple are you a monk in?"

Feng Sui Yu coldly said.

Feng Fei Yun's hand gently touched Su Su's face and smiled:

"Feng Sui Yu, you can't even recognize my voice? It seems like today will truly be your funeral."

Hearing the two words "your funeral", the temperature became chilling. It was as if the air was frozen and emitted a constant flow of coldness that continuously struck Feng Sui Yu's chest.

Feng Sui Yu's expression became surprised as his eyes opened wide. He

pointed straight at Feng Fei Yun's face and wanted to open his mouth to call out something, but there was a biting chill in the air that caused his jaws to become numb and he couldn't even move his tongue.

A pinch of ice began to solidify, and suddenly, he spurted out blood from his mouth.

"Y-you… You actually…"

Feng Sui Yu's hands clutched his throat. He only felt that, from his mouth to his heel, everything had been frozen by ice. However, he clearly sensed a spring of blood that flowed out uncontrollably from his mouth.

"Thud!"

Finally, Feng Sui Yu's stiff body fell on the ground and ice began to slowly encompass his entire body before it became a thick layer.

A heaven defying talent went next to Feng Sui Yu. He half squatted down to touch the peak of his nose but Sui Yu's entire body suddenly cracked and broke into pieces of ice on the floor.

"Shit! Damned monk, you dare to kill children of the Feng family in front me? Do you know who I am?"

The skin of the heaven defying talent from the Feng family suddenly emitted a white flashing light that turned his coat into smithereens and revealed a white armor on his body.

This armor was as thin as cicada wings and three formation outlines were engraved on top of it. They were complex and chaotic and ran throughout his whole body.

This was a cicada treasure armor worth ten thousand gold coins. It perfectly fitted the body and allowed for great flexibility along with a powerful defense. It truly could be comparable to a half spirit treasure.

At this moment, Little Miss Su Su, who was seated next to Feng Fei Yun, shivered from fear and constantly regretted her decision. She thought that she had met a gold mine but it turned out to be one who attracted trouble.

She really wanted to run away but was dragged back by Feng Fei Yun into his

embrace.

Feng Fei Yun said:

“Who are you then?”

The Feng talent said:

“Hmph, so ignorant. I am one of the top experts of the fifth young generation, Feng Jue. Three years earlier, I had already become famous in the Shan Lin Region. Now within the recent three years, I am even more…”

He had not yet finished but Feng Fei Yun already stole his words and smiled:

“The recent three years, you were wholeheartedly taught by the Feng ancestor and had the help of the world’s treasures. Therefore, your cultivation became stronger and you could be considered one of the heaven defying young talents.”

Naturally, Feng Jue could sense the mockery in the opponent’s tone and this contemptuous feel made him very upset.

“Monk, since you are courting death, I will help you.”

The cicada armor on Feng Jue’s body exuded a bright light. His two hands gathered powerful spirit energy and formed into a human shape the size of a Wind Thunder.

If the enemy dared to kill then he definitely made preparations beforehand. Feng Jue could be considered as one of the four heaven defying talents of the Feng family, so he naturally wasn’t the type without eyesight and he wouldn’t make the mistake of underestimating his enemy.

The brilliance of the Wind Thunder became increasingly bright. The screeches of the wind and thunder became more audible, as if the entire brothel was about to be destroyed.

The players and prostitutes had soon been frightened to the point where their legs were weak and they straight-up sprawled on the floor. The more courageous ones had soon fled out of the door.

“Oh!”

Feng Fei Yun stood upright and held the Invincible Buddhist Staff in his hand.

Then, he turned into a golden light and flew forward with an unstoppable momentum.

“Poof!”

The tip of the Invincible Buddhist Staff was stained with blood. The rings on his staff still emanated tinkling sounds as they hit each other while spilling flowery drops of blood.

Feng Jue’s chest was completely penetrated and revealed a huge hole as big as a water basin. In the end, he powerlessly fell onto the ground.

This scene was too frightening. A heaven defying Feng talent was pierced through by a Buddhist staff, and his wound held no trace of blood yet the blood on the Buddhist Staff was flowing without stop.

This monk was too powerful! Truly a ferocious monk that absolutely couldn’t be a no-name character.

Within a short period of time, two Feng children had already died under the hands of this monk. Plus, they were not ordinary either. Could this monk have a great hatred towards the Feng family?

Silence, and even more silence. There was only the sound of blood dripping onto the floor.

The two remaining geniuses of the Feng family were shocked. They knew that Feng Jue was wearing a defensive cicada armor and even a cultivator of the elder rank wouldn’t necessarily be able to break it, yet this Buddhist staff pierced through it with just one blow.

How great was the power of this Buddhist staff?

“Monk, your cultivation is not bad, but today, I’m afraid you will not escape the inevitability of your head being separated from your body.”

Only Feng Ling Ji was able to calmly sit at this place. His age was not young, he would soon exceed twenty five year of age. He was considered one of the big brothers of the Feng’s fifth generation. In reality, many young children within the Feng family called him biggest brother.

At the peak of his head was a white jade crown, calm and quiescent. With wise

eyes like an experienced old man, very few people could see through him.

He simply shook his body a little bit yet it was enough to offset the aura on Feng Fei Yun's body into non-existence. His foot gently stomped on the floor to form many formations that emitted bright lights.

With the formation completed, his whole body seemed to be more fortified, like an unbeatable god of war, as if no one could ever knock him down.

"You are the strongest person within the Feng family's fifth generation?"

Feng Fei Yun's eyes shrunk as he could feel the pressure that came from Feng Ling Ji. It was an invisible pressure, and it became stronger and stronger.

Feng Ling Ji didn't answer and only smiled:

"Your cultivation is also at the top level of the younger generation, why are you trying to hide? Afraid of being recognized by other people? Why is there a need for such cowardice?"

"Hahaha! This face is for women to look at, not for men to enjoy. If it was a woman, then I am ready to take off my hat for her to watch a little bit."

Feng Fei Yun laughed.

Feng Ling Ji, alone, would have been difficult to deal with, not to mention that he had another heaven defying talent next to him. Once his identity was exposed, these two would definitely not follow the etiquette and both would directly fight together against Feng Fei Yun. Naturally, Feng Fei Yun wasn't this foolish so he didn't want to reveal his name.

However, even though he didn't want to reveal it, there was someone else who wanted to reveal it instead.

"Phoosh phoosh!"

A white strand of light came through the sky. She wore a white robe and stood on the curved cornice of the Intoxicated Jade Pavilion, like a white butterfly that landed on top of a palace.

Dong Fang Jing Yue arrived at the wrong time!

She held the red wooden lute in her hand as she stood on top of the roof while

gently flicking her instrument. The sound was so wonderful that it even attracted the clouds in the sky.

“I am a woman, I want to see your face. Will you take down your hat this time? Great monk?”

As Dong Fang Jing Yue stood lonely by herself, her voice was even more alluring than the sound of her lute. Especially, when she stressed the two words, “great monk”.

Even though he was in the middle of the Intoxicated Jade Pavilion, he absolutely couldn’t see the figure of the peerless beauty. However, the moment he heard the sound of the lute, he knew who had just arrived. Truly, the road was narrow between two enemies!

Naturally, Dong Fang Jing Yue knew that he was Feng Fei Yun so she stood at the highest place. The moment he wanted to escape, she would definitely unleash a thunderous strike with the complete power of the Haotian Spirit Mirror. This power would completely destroy a small ancient city; who would dare to oppose the battle power of a spirit treasure?

At this moment, Dong Fang Jing Yue was very healthy and had spirit energy flowing throughout her body. Naturally, her wound had quickly recovered. Plus, with the help of the single drop of spirit spring water, her cultivation went up by one level. At this moment, her cultivation, compared to Feng Ling Ji, was higher by more than ten times.

This bitch came at the perfect time! Feng Fei Yun really wanted to raise the Invincible Buddhist Staff in his hand and directly knock her down from the roof, but he didn’t expect that at this moment, he would be encircled by three great experts. Not to mention escaping, just staying alive was already difficult.

Chapter 73 : Words of a Great Sage

It was July yet the brothel was chilling to the bones. Many normal humans without cultivation were shivering from the aura of the young experts as their lips were covered by white mist.

The Buddhist robe on Feng Fei Yun's body fluttered due to the cold invisible air. It didn't seem like he was in the middle of a brothel, it was more like he was standing on top of a windy peak. However, in reality, he was really standing and experiencing the powerful wind at the top.

"Since there is a peerless beauty wanting to see my face, if I didn't listen, then wouldn't it be truly distactful?"

Feng Fei Yun's left hand slowly maneuvered towards his head, as if he wanted to take off the hat.

Everyone present, including the two heaven defying talents from the Feng family, were truly curious about the real face of the monk. Their gazes moved along with his hand.

Suddenly, a frightening black light appeared and the hat on top of Feng Fei Yun's head became a spinning top. It created rolling black lights and sucked in the surrounding spirit energy. Then, it transformed into a sharp and powerful tornado.

This black spinning top suddenly appeared in front of Feng Ling Ji and the fierce strength surrounded him, stopping him in his tracks.

Within this short period of time, Feng Fei Yun broke through the rooftop of the Intoxicated Jade Pavilion, while holding his Invincible Buddhist Staff, and defiantly went on the offensive towards Dong Fang Jing Yue. He wanted to create an opening.

"Boom!"

A huge hole opened up in the rooftop. Countless glazed roof tiles exploded and flew across the sky. They were affected by spirit energy so even though they were only tiles, the power was frightening and not below a concealed weapon of

the magic rank.

Dong Fang Jing Yue seemed to have guessed that Feng Fei Yun would make a sneak attack like this, so she appeared to be very calm. Her white lotus-like arms slightly stretched out and her white robe began to fly. It was like a pair of white wings.

This one staff from Feng Fei Yun was already at his maximum power along with a matchless speed, but this exertion was a waste of effort. This damned grandma Dong Fang Jing Yue's cultivation was a lot higher than his imagination.

"It is Feng Fei Yun. I can't believe this little brat still dared to come to Violet Firmament Ancient City, and he even killed a heaven defying talent of the Feng family. This bastard is truly rebelling."

From the bottom came the sound of one of the heaven defying talent of the Feng family. Even though Feng Fei Yun's movement was very fast, it was not as if the opponent was not closely observing. In that shocking moment, he was able to discern his features from just a glimpse.

Two monstrous battle intents came from the bottom and created an amazing burst of power.

Even though Feng Fei Yun's single blow was not successful, he was not in the mood for more fighting:

"Dong Fang Jing Yue. You bitch, you are truly contemptible. This was only a grievance between the two of us, but I didn't expect you to make a move against my family as well. From now on, our grievance will not share the same sky — either you will die or I will. Right now, I have to quickly use the bathroom and have no time to play with you."

Feng Fei Yun was afraid of being blocked by the two heaven defying talents of the Feng family. He fell into the danger of being surrounded, so he suddenly stepped on the roof and shattered the beam. He borrowed this momentum to jump one hundred zhang away and ran away towards the far direction.

"Boom!"

The entire Intoxicated Jade Pavilion collapsed. The two heaven defying talents wanted to chase but were forced back. They were hit on their heads by the

broken tiles and wood.

Dong Fang Jing Yue still stood at the peak of the collapsed ruin. She was still full of spirit and brilliance — no different from a godly jade. Her pure face was without any worries and she didn't show any emotions.

After her cultivation made another breakthrough, she became even more unfathomable. Her emotional control was further developed and it became harder to tell her mood from just her countenance.

But at this moment, she was very angry. She accepted Feng Fei Yun's scolding because she also had heavily scolded him. However, she couldn't accept Feng Fei Yun framing her without understanding why.

"Feng Fei Yun, you won't be able to escape."

Two milky bright lights shot out from Dong Fang Jing Yue's back. The lights mysteriously transformed into a pair of white wings. These wings, compared to before, were even more real and one could even see the feathers and small filaments on them.

When she flapped her wings in the sky, she was like a goddess that flew across the heavens, causing many people inside Violet Firmament Ancient City to kowtow and worship on the ground.

"A song that wrenches the heart, at which heaven's corner do I find a willing ear!"

There were too many mortals inside Violet Firmament Ancient City. Once the Haotian Spirit Mirror was activated, it would harm many innocent people. Therefore, she didn't use this killing weapon and played her soul stealing lute instead.

"Whoosh!"

A sound wave came out from her magical instrument, like a huge tsunami crossing through the sky, and it went straight towards Feng Fei Yun's direction.

"Boom!"

Feng Fei Yun knew better than anyone else the power of her sound wave. On top of a wall inside the inner city, he paused and used the Invincible Buddhist

Staff to shatter the sound wave.

Even though it was dissipated, the blades of the sound wave still cut through many locations on Feng Fei Yun's body.

There was a wound on Feng Fei Yun's neck and had blood spilling from it, but he was oblivious to this fact. He only fiercely glanced at Dong Fang Jing Yue as if he was looking at a mortal foe.

She had caught up but she didn't have a strand of killing intent on her body. This was also her most frightening characteristic; once she activated her killing intent, no one would be able to stop it.

"Feng Fei Yun, there is no path for you to escape. This kind of end could only be blamed on your truly foul mouth."

Dong Fang Jing Yue, standing on top of a cloud with her wings slightly fluttering behind her back, exuded a holy aura. She was like a goddess that watched over her own creations.

Feng Fei Yun heavily laughed:

"My mouth might be foul, but it is without any hidden intentions. I will yell at whoever I want to yell at, I will say whenever I want to say — no one can stop me. However, without this mouth of mine, I'm afraid you would have been dead inside the Mortal Life Cavern much earlier."

"Even though you saved my life, you also performed many outrageous deeds. If this was not the case, then our grievances would have been written off long ago."

"Outrageous deeds?"

Feng Fei Yun felt that he couldn't not make things clear, but he was also too lazy to explain so much to her. This damned grandma actually reported to the Feng family — she was not a good person. The little positive feelings he had towards her were completely gone at this moment.

"If you want to fight, then fight. Why are you speaking so much nonsense?"

Feng Fei Yun raised the Invincible Buddhist Staff and his aura continuously increased. His rising aura connected with the entire wall underneath him. He

wanted to borrow the energy aura of the terrain to fight to the death against Dong Fang Jing Yue.

The energy aura was a very mysterious thing. It was the spirit, energy, and soul of a person. If one's spirit energy was powerful enough, then this person could exert a powerful greater than the ordinary limit.

However, an energy aura was not limited to just the person, it also encompassed the energy of the heaven and earth and even the energy aura of an extreme expert to the side.

However, during a fight, very few cultivators could actually utilize their own energy aura, let alone channel the energy aura of the heaven and earth.

The energy aura of the heaven and earth was majestic and vast. Even if it truly existed, it was not easy to control. However, once this becomes possible, the potential power would exceed one's imagination.

The wall of the inner city under Feng Fei Yun's feet was one hundred zhang high and nine zhang thick. It was like a blue mountain that was connected to the grand vein under the earth. This was naturally a place where the energy aura of the earth was powerful.

At this moment, Feng Fei Yun's cultivation was too weak and he could only receive a hint of the earth's energy aura, but it was enough to increase his battle power by at least three levels. His energy aura increased by countless times and was equal to Dong Fang Jing Yue.

'This little brat is weird. He suddenly became many times more powerful. Plus… plus, I feel that he had become a giant monument that's standing on top of the wall. It's like he became one with Violet Firmament Ancient City.'

Even though Dong Fang Jing Yue was looking down from above and had the advantage, she still felt that she couldn't suppress him completely.

"Feng Fei Yun! You little bastard, you dared to enter Violet Firmament Ancient City and killed brothers from the Feng family. I had reported everything to the clan master. Once the many experts get here, you won't be able to escape."

Two white lights leapt here from the distance. Very quickly, they landed on top of the wall just one hundred zhang away from Feng Fei Yun. They were Feng Ling

Ji and Feng Tao — the two heaven defying geniuses.

These two were not ordinary people. Their God Bases were fortified and bursted with heavenly brilliances and carried suffocating battle intents.

Feng Fei Yun's eyes just slightly tilted. He essentially didn't look at these two directly and only contemptuously glanced:

"I was already not a part of the Feng family for a long time. How could they be considered my brothers? I simply only killed two strangers."

Dong Fang Jing Yue was quite curious. Why did Feng Fei Yun suddenly become excommunicated from the Feng family? This was far outside of her expectations. Even though this kid was abhorrent, his talent was quite outstanding and should be the main focus for the Feng family to groom. Why would he be hunted by the Feng experts instead?

In her view, Feng Fei Yun's potential was above these two heaven defying geniuses of the Feng family. He would definitely be a Ju Qing in the future. She only recently got out from her isolated recovery so there were many things she was not clear on.

"Big Brother, why bother waste words on this little bastard. He even dared to taint the fourth young miss of the Yin Gou family, what else would he not do? His mother is a demon while he is even more of a demon."

Feng Tao held a crimson long spear and his battle intent became stronger and stronger.

Feng Fei Yun's eyes released two murderous lights and coldly yelled:

"You're looking for your grave!"

The Invincible Buddhist Staff in Feng Fei Yun's hand rapidly channeled power and created the clunking noises. He wanted to pierce through Feng Tao.

However, his staff had yet to go on the offense when Feng Tao was already struck away by one slap. His body went through seven hundred and twenty revolutions in the air before falling into the ground.

His face was swollen like a pig's head and many teeth fell out from his mouth. Blood continued to spill out as he dizzily got up from the ground. Then, he cried

using the tip of his tongue:

“Who? Who, ah? Who’s cooperating with him?”

Dong Fang Jing Yue answered:

“I! I was the one who hit you.”

“Who are you? On what basis did you hit me for? Do you know who I am?”

Feng Tao’s tongue finally felt better. At the very least, he could speak clearly. However, his head was still swollen like a pig… Haaa, it truly causes others to be worried.

“I don’t have time to find out who you are, but if you speak nonsense again, I will kill you and no one will do anything to me. You have to carefully remember that the fourth young miss of the Yin Gou family is a great character. How could she be tainted by someone like Feng Fei Yun? Feng Fei Yun isn’t even worthy of carrying her shoes.”

Dong Fang Jing Yue’s heart was very angry at the moment and was almost speechless. She didn’t want others to know the complex matters between her and Feng Fei Yun, but her words still came out.

This matter was known only to her and Feng Fei Yun. Naturally, it wasn’t she who revealed it so it could only be Feng Fei Yun and his big mouth. If she had known earlier that he would be running his big mouth off, she would have killed him even sooner.

Her cold gaze glared at Feng Fei Yun like a sharp blade. Her fingers were tightly clenched together.

Feng Fei Yun clasped his arms together and smiled. One couldn’t live peacefully after committing sins. She personally ran to the Feng family to snitch, but these rumors became more and more exaggerated — she totally deserved this.

Of course, Feng Tao didn’t know Dong Fang Jing Yue so he was not afraid of her and coldly spoke:

“There was a great sage who personally saw the fourth young miss of the Yin Gou family chase Feng Fei Yun because of love. Due to the status of this great sage, there is no chance that this is a lie.”

“Chasing because of love?”

Even if Dong Fang Jing Yue’s mental attitude improved, at this moment, she still exploded.

“Yes, this great sage was a person who knew everything. He knew that the two fatefully met at Spirit State City and immediately fell in love. Afterwards, the fourth young miss of the Yin Gou family was pregnant with Feng Fei Yun’s child. She forced him to take responsibility but Feng Fei Yun didn’t want to, and so, their love ruptured. The fourth young miss used her grand cultivation to refine the fetus inside her body and swore to kill the betrayer. The two became mortal enemies and would not stop until one of them was dead.”

Feng Tao’s words were exact and had strong emotions during his description of describing the situation. It absolutely did not sound like lies.

Love at first sight, pregnant with flesh and blood, ruptured love, love became hate… Fuck, this version was definitely not trustworthy! It caused Feng Fei Yun to sweat as he was afraid that Dong Fang Jing Yue would suddenly explode and turn half of Violet Firmament Ancient City into a hundred pieces.

Of course, he was also a bit moved. The imagination and deduction of this great sage was quite amazing. Motherfucker, who on earth was this fraud of a great sage?

Chapter 74 : Tiger Cloud Qi Image

Dong Fang Jing Yue was truly angry. Otherwise, Feng Tao wouldn't have been slapped so hard to the point where he flew away, all the way until he fell directly onto the one hundred zhang high wall.

A heaven defying talent of the Feng family didn't have the power to fight back against her. He could only be slapped away like a fly by her palm, not knowing whether he will live or die.

Her palm contained heavenly profound truths that rendered others unable to escape, even if they were dozens of miles away.

Feng Tao, naturally, was not a weak person and his battle power was comparable to the seniors of the elder ranking. However, in her hands, he was like a doll.

Feng Ling Ji was not as foolish as Feng Tao and his gaze was more seasoned. He noticed that there was a white jade Yin Gou order on Dong Fang Jing Yue's waist. Then, his expression crazily changed and said:

"You… You are a descendant of the noble Yin Gou family?"

No wonder why this girl had such a high cultivation and arrogant manner. She turned out to be someone from the Yin Gou family!

The white jade order of the Yin Gou family couldn't be worn by an ordinary person!

Feng Fei Yun sighed and said:

"She is the fourth young miss of the Yin Gou family, Dong Fang Jing Yue!"

"She is the fourth young miss of the Yin Gou family?!"

Feng Ling Ji became even more alarmed but his heart was not convinced. Even though this fourth young miss wore a white veil on her face, it was not difficult to tell that this was a peerless beauty. Why would such a beauty be stained by a son of an evil demon like Feng Fei Yun?

In his opinion, there was no difference between an animal and an evil demon!

Feng Fei Yun was the son of an evil demon, so naturally, he was no different from an animal.

“Rumble!”

In the far distance, a giant black banner flew towards this direction — along with countless moving black clouds — like a smoky black cloud that came forth from the ocean during a storm.

The banner was around a dozen zhang high and had yellow borders. There was a strange animal engraving at the top and seemed to be overbearing with killing intent. Underneath it was a crazy tornado that created many loud explosions.

“Poof, poof, poof!”

The banner was like a godly item. It completely dominated the hearts of the people. Five old people, wearing white robes, were waving this banner. Even though they were old, they were still muscular and had a cautious enthusiasm.

Their age didn’t stop them from being powerful. Their cultivations were very formidable; their muscles and bones, along with their blood vessels, were all refined to a godly realm. One gesture of the hand was enough to bring out a destructive power.

The grandpa and four grandmas were all elders of the God Base realm. They had extremely high statuses within the Feng family.

“The Feng family’s law enforcement hall actually maneuvered five elders to bring along the Evil Suppressing Dragon Banner. Usually, the Feng’s law enforcement team isn’t this strict; I’m afraid that this time, they really want to kill Feng Fei Yun.”

“It seems like the Yin Gou family really pressured the Feng family.”

“This isn’t entirely accurate. The Yin Gou family is indeed powerful, but in the end, this is the Grand Southern Prefecture — the main stronghold of the Feng family. The power of the Feng family, in this area, is no weaker than the Yin Gou family. Even if they are afraid of the Yin Gou family, they still wouldn’t be so ruthless with their own child; this would cause the hearts of the other Feng

children to become cold.”

“This is to completely eradicate him… It really is a bit too cruel.”

***

Immortal sects and clans that aggregated at Violet Firmament Ancient City did not lack powerful cultivators. These people were intrigued by this grand display so they appeared, wanting to see the internal conflict of the Feng family.

The Feng family was a grand family that ranked in the top three of the Southern Grand Prefecture. Mayn people didn’t want to miss such an entertaining matter.

“The Feng family is capturing someone with such a blatant fanfare, it seems like the rumor is true.”

An old man sighed.

“What rumor?”

Many people didn’t know the reason.

“The rumor is that Feng Fei Yun’s mother was a high demon and left behind an evil demon armor. This evil demon armor, when adorned, has an incomparable power and could even shatter spirit treasures. However, it is tainted with a demon aura and only someone that has the blood of the same demon origin would be able to wear it and become unstoppable in this world. Today, the person that has the same blood origin, throughout the entire Jin Dynasty, is only Feng Fei Yun. The Feng ancestor most likely wants to capture him and use his blood to refine the evil demon armor. Once this evil demon armor is successfully refined, the Feng family would definitely dominate the entire Grand Southern Prefecture.”

The old man seemed to know a lot and revealed many hidden nuances.

“If this was really the case, then Violet Firmament Ancient City would be a lot more festive. Many clans and immortal sects aren’t willing to see the ancestors of the Feng family refine this evil demon armor. Maybe they will make a move when necessary.”

This was originally only the internal conflict between people of the family.

Now, the situation became even more complicated and confusing. This entire event seemed to want to involve all of the powers in Violet Firmament Ancient City.

The five law enforcement elders of the Feng family all had an overbearing manner with the attitude of someone high and almighty. An elder wrapped with a golden belt said:

“Feng Fei Yun, do you know your crime?”

He condescendingly looked down from above. It was in the manner of an angry teacher inquiring about a fault.

Feng Fei Yun replied:

“What is my crime?”

“Hmph! An unfilial bastard is always an unfilial bastard. Now kneel in front of the fourth young miss and apologize. Then, follow us back to the clan and accept the punishment. Only then would you maybe be able to hold on to your life.”

The elder’s face was chilling sharp like a blade and showed killing intent in his eyes. A junior who saw him yet didn’t kneel down and still acted so arrogant… Letting him live would only be helping him become even more arrogant.

If they previously didn’t receive the order to not kill this unfilial bastard, he would have already made a move and ripped Feng Fei Yun in half.

Fei Yun slightly smirked and felt a bit amused, then he said:

“You want me to kneel down to her? Hahaha, what a joke. If you want to kneel, then you all can kneel. If you want to fight or kill, then go ahead and come here.”

When Feng Fei Yun decided to kill Feng Sui Yu, he never thought about coming back to the Feng family. From now on, he was no longer a member of the Feng family.

Today, even if he had to die inside Violet Firmament Ancient City, he would be without grievances and regrets.

“Boom!”

Feng Fei Yun stood majestically on top of the gray ancient city. He stepped on the fire beacon while he held the Invincible Buddhist Staff propped in front of him. He felt contemptuous towards all beings.

“Elders, don’t need to make a move. I, Feng Ling Ji, will be able to deal with this little bastard who doesn’t know how high the sky is and how vast the earth is.”

Feng Ling Ji was the oldest brother of the Feng family’s fifth generation. He had a high aptitude and a calm mind. He was highly valued by the upper echelons of the Feng family and was considered — secretly by many people — to be the next leader.

The five elders slightly nodded. If they had to make a move against Feng Fei Yun, then it would be considered bullying a junior. This would be disadvantageous for their reputations in the cultivation world. However, if Feng Ling Ji helped, then it would be a completely different matter.

They were peers that were fighting. After suppressing Feng Fei Yun, there would be no gossip and everyone would be even more optimistic about the future leader of the Feng family.

Truly hitting two birds with one arrow!

Feng Ling Ji’s cultivation was quite good and he had reached the intermediate God Base. He was one small level higher than Feng Tao and Feng Jue. Plus, his combat experience was rich. To deal with Feng Fei Yun would not be a difficult matter.

“Feng Ling Ji, use the grand Floating Massacre Sword Formation that you painstakingly practiced for eight years to finish this quickly.”

An elder smilingly nodded and told him.

“Yes sir!”

Feng Ling Ji had four long swords hidden in his body. Each of them was of the magical rank and was created from one hundred year old cold steel. The swords could easily cut through a two meter thick steel wall.

There was a chilling air on the edges of the swords. With a faint spirit light that faintly surrounded the four swords, it turned them into a simple sword

formation.

At this moment, Feng Fei Yun was also one with the earth's energy aura, so his personal aura was imposingly mighty. He actively motioned forward with the Invincible Buddhist Staff, that emitted clanking sounds, in his hand.

The two were both supreme characters and their battle intents condensed into qi images — exceptionally domineering.

"Boom!"

Feng Ling Ji's body let out a loud tiger roar that shook the city walls. A white light rose from his back and formed the shape of a white tiger. Its fur was pure white and its big eyes were of a ferocious dark and as big as fists.

The white tiger was the culmination of a floating cloud and was suspended on top of Feng Ling Ji's head. It had the power to change the heavens and move the earth.

First Tiger Soaring Cloud qi image!

When Feng Fei Yun was at the Hidden Dragon Courtyard to watch the qi fortunes, he had seen it before and knew that there was someone inside the Feng family with such a qi image. He just didn't expect it to be Feng Ling Ji.

"Roar!"

Qi images could only be seen by qi observers, but the hidden power inside of them was incomparable. As long as it was someone participating in the fight, they would be able to clearly feel it.

The four swords suddenly increased their power abruptly and interwove together like four water dragons. The sounds of thunder and wind filled the sky and the ancient thick nine zhang wall's high corner was cut apart. It collapsed into the ground and countless huge boulders were knocked away by the sword energies.

"It is the First Tiger Soaring Cloud qi image. Feng Ling Ji's body actually carried a qi image! It is no wonder why he is so powerful."

An older cultivator who was able to see qi and he discerned the godly cloud white tiger in the vast sky. He was quite shocked.

A person next to him was confused and asked:

“Qi images only exist in supreme geniuses. The First Tiger Soaring Cloud qi image is domineering and ferocious, it is a bit unfitting for Feng Ling Ji’s mature and calm personality.”

“Feng Ling Ji is shrewd and has hidden emotions. His heart has the energy of a fierce tiger but outsiders couldn’t see through it. We’re only able to observe this because Feng Fei Yun was able to force Feng Ling Ji to use his qi image, Feng Fei Yun must be another heaven defying genius. If he wasn’t the son of the evil demon, then he would have been heavily groomed by the Feng family. Eh, what is this? Feng Fei Yun’s body is also releasing a qi image. What is this qi image?”

Feng Fei Yun took nine steps back and calmly stood upright. From his body, sixty-four lights came out and condensed into an ancient painting. It was like a giant formation of clouds and seas that rushed out from his body.

“The Dragon Horse River Diagram!”

This was one of the seven ancient paintings from the Infinite Spirit Ring — the Dragon Horse River Diagram. This ancient painting was a lingering Dao that was separated from the ring and fell into the dantian of Feng Fei Yun. At this moment, it was alarmed by the First Tiger Soaring Cloud qi image of Feng Ling Ji and actively rushed out from Fei Yun’s body.

The mist-covered water on top of the vast godly river; a dragon horse tightly biting a big turtle was traveling on the water surface — the painting’s presence was mystical and spirited. This was the Dragon Horse River Diagram qi image, and it seemingly wanted to change even the heavens aura.

Chapter 75 : Evil Suppressing Dragon Banner

There were many qi images in this world that combined the human aura and the image of the heavens — this was the natural birth of qi images.

Only true heaven defying geniuses would be able to grasp a type of qi image. Once their cultivation reached the rank of Ju Qing, the essence of the qi images inside their bodies would change and carry a power capable of suppressing the ages.

Each type of qi image was a sign for the rise of a new future star.

If Feng Fei Yun didn't cultivate the Immortal Phoenix Physique, his talent would have been very ordinary and he essentially wouldn't have the chance to have an innate qi image. However, because the Immortal Phoenix Physique was able to increase his personal aptitude and change his potential, it allowed him to be able to surpass mediocrity and become a genius capable of competing for his own destiny against the heavens.

Although the Dragon Horse River Diagram was not a real qi image, in its most strict definition, it was a type that was very similar to qi images. It had an aura and power inside and it was not any weaker than the top qi images.

Across the mighty stretch of the godly river, with a ferocious expanding atmosphere, a humongous dragon horse was swimming on the river with a godly turtle in its mouth. It was as if it was being enlightened with the Dao.

"I've never heard of this qi image before. The dragon horse is a godly existence in the ancient era. Many saints in the legends had met a dragon horse, and because of this, they were enlightened. Feng Fei Yun's qi image is so powerful, it's as if it was hiding a powerful shadow from the ancient time and has the aura of a godly character being faintly emitted. The only son of the contemporary evil demon cannot be speculated with common sense. If the Feng family cannot cripple him today, then he will absolutely be even more frightening than the evil demon in the future."

An old man wearing a martial arts gown, who was gifted with the art of qi

observation, opened a heavenly eye between his brows and was able to see the future that ordinary people couldn't.

The Dragon Horse River Diagram's energy was so majestic that it occupied half of the sky and nearly squeezed the white cloud tiger behind Feng Ling Ji out of the clouds.

Feng Fei Yun became increasingly powerful. The Invincible Buddhist Staff in his hand had completely lost its Buddhist characteristics. With a golden light exploding, he was filled with killing intent and beat the four swords of Feng Ling Ji all over the place as sparks were continuously emitted.

The blood in his body flowed faster and more ferociously. Even his heart was banging.

Under the catalytic urge of his will to battle, Feng Fei Yun felt that the blood in his body was refined much faster than the ordinary speed. Step by step, he became closer to the Third Blood Purification.

Second Blood Purification — the blood started boiling and was as black as ink. Third Blood Purification — the blood became sentient and emitted golden light in all directions.

Feng Fei Yun had used a drop of spirit spring water to successfully reach the intermediate Immortal Foundation. However, he was not able to absorb more than three parts of the medicinal property. The rest of the medicinal essence was hidden in his flesh and blood. Under the catalyst of his will to battle, the medicinal property was quickly absorbed and the purity and level of his blood also became increasingly high. It was reaching towards the Third Blood Purification.

Feng Fei Yun clearly felt the Immortal Foundation become bigger inside his dantian. Like a seedling under the effects of fertilizer, it gradually matured towards perfection.

"Rumble!"

Feng Fei Yun fought to the point where Feng Ling Ji couldn't do anything but retreat. He essentially didn't have the power to defend himself. His four sword formation was completely shattered and two swords were completely broken by

the Invincible Buddhist Staff.

The rank of the Invincible Buddhist Staff was unknown, but it allowed for an intermediate Immortal Foundation, like Feng Fei Yun, to directly fight against an expert one big realm higher. Plus, this was still under the situation where he had not used the spirit and power of the Invincible Buddhist Staff.

The black charred marks on the staff, due to grilling meat, were completely gone and revealed a golden bronze color. With a Buddha shadow printed at the top of the staff, it carried along a Buddhist presence that silenced others — truly too sacred.

One didn't know that Monk Jiu Rou picked up such a holy item yet still used it to grill meat. If there was a sage from the Buddhist faith who saw this, he would have soon beaten Monk Jiu Rou to death.

Feng Fei Yun, as an ordinary person, could still feel the power of the Invincible Buddhist Staff. Presently, there was not a lack of people with extraordinarily knowledge. An old man with gray hair was gazing intensely at the staff in Feng Fei Yun's hand for a long time. Finally, his eyes carried a surprised look and he wanted to speak, but then he stopped.

"Could it be… Could it be a Buddhist weapon? It looks like, it truly looks like…"

A person muttered. It was apparent that he was very shocked and couldn't believe that this sacred treasure of the Buddhist faith was in the hands of Feng Fei Yun. The significance behind this matter was very unusual.

A young curious disciple asked:

"Could it be that the staff in the hands of Feng Fei Yun has an extraordinary origin?"

"It is not clear, it is not clear. However, it really looks like it. It cannot be the same staff because the owner of the staff was a supreme Ju Qing of the Buddhist faith. There is no chance that he would allow this staff to fall into the hands of a Feng family's junior."

This person flatly shook his head and directly let go of this thought. He felt that he had guessed wrong.

Feng Ling Ji's cultivation was still formidable, but because his sword formation had lost, he was confused. In the end, he couldn't do anything but throw away his swords and flee. He was beaten by Feng Fei Yun to the point where his heart was no longer arrogant.

How did this brat become so strong? There was truly no way to obtain victory. The power in his fists became stronger and stronger; his momentum became greater and greater. He did not allow his opponent to even stand straight.

"Four Bulls of power!"

Feng Ling Ji still wanted to resist and the scales above his arms began to move. He unleashed a punch with the power of four Bulls.

One Qilin of power was a power of ten thousand jin, but to unleashed four Qilins at the same time, this power exceeded forty thousand jin. It was at eighty thousand jin instead.

Four Bulls of power was equivalent to the power of eighty thousand jin! Five Bulls of power was equivalent to one hundred and sixty thousand jin!

Moreover, the power of the Qilin would be even more condensed and would change in essence. It would turn into something more ferocious.

"Break for me!"

Feng Fei Yun, with the Invincible Buddhist Staff in his hand, swept through the winds and thunders in the sky and shattered the gigantic power of the four Qilins. The staff directly struck Feng Ling Ji's chest and beat him flying far away.

"Poof!"

A few thuds, and then, the sound of broken bones appeared, followed by the sound of flesh being torn apart.

Feng Ling Ji would never dream that he would lose in the hands of Feng Fei Yun. This son of the evil demon was much stronger than his imagination and even left a grave wound on his chest. His ribs had been broken into several pieces and his white robe was stained crimson with blood.

Many people were alarmed. They originally thought highly of Feng Ling Ji because, in the end, his prowess was already renowned throughout the Grand

Southern Prefecture. He was a supreme genius of the Feng family and had the potential to become the future head.

There were several families who secretly sent assassins to kill him, but they were found out and killed by him. Who would have thought that he would lose to an unknown disciple of the Feng family? It made others feel that this was a bit surreal.

Earlier, Feng Fei Yun had killed Feng Jue in one move, and he was one of the four heaven defying geniuses of the Feng family. Then, in front of so many people, he defeated Feng Ling Ji. This could be considered shattering the face of all of the heaven defying talents of the Feng family.

A few people from the big families were secretly smiling:

“The Feng family has really lost all face this time. An expelled disciple is even stronger than a heaven defying genius that was heavily groomed; this will definitely be an inerasable event for the Feng family.”

“Feng Fei Yun repeatedly defeated two heaven defying geniuses of the Feng family. If he wasn’t expelled, then he would be the leader within the younger generation of the Feng family. He could even take the crown in the Hidden Dragon War!”

“This is not necessarily true. I heard that the strongest within the Feng family is not Feng Ling Ji, but that Little Evil Demon.”

“The Feng family’s number one branch is definitely that Little Evil Demon.”

Some people thought of the evil demon that everyone was afraid of. When she was only nine years old, she was already famous in Violet Firmament Ancient City. With heaven defying treasures, she caused the younger generation of the big families and immortal sects of the Grand Southern Prefecture to be unable to lift their heads.

As long as it was someone known for having a little bit of aptitude, they would all suffer in her hands and beaten to a bloody pulp. Thus, she gained the title, “Little Evil Demon”.

However, within the last three years, the Little Evil Demon was secretly training inside the Feng family and didn’t have the chance to cause trouble outside. At

this time, people began to forget about her. It was only until someone reminded them before everyone remembered.

This Little Evil Demon, three years ago, already possessed a higher cultivation than the current Feng Ling Ji. If she was released by the Feng ancestors, then Feng Fei Yun wouldn't be as carefree as he was now.

However, the evil energy on her body was truly too dense and she couldn't personally suppress the evil energy. If she were to truly be released, then she would turn the city upside down. Plus, only god knows how powerful she was at the moment. Without a Ju Qing making a move, one would be afraid that no one would be able to catch her back.

Unless it was the last resort, the ancestors of the Feng family would never act in such a heavy and thankless manner.

"Feng Fei Yun, you actually dare!? Did you actually want to kill Feng Ling Ji?"

The five law enforcement elders of the Feng family, with the Evil Suppressing Dragon Banner raised, stood inbetween Feng Fei Yun and Feng Ling Ji. The banner was fluttering and emitted a powerful battle aura. This was a half spirit treasure and had a very strong power.

The Invincible Buddhist Staff in Fei Yun's head continued to make the clunking noises. He, step by step, walked forward and gravely said:

"He cursed me and even cursed my mother. He deserves death."

"Hmph! Unfilial bastard, it seems like this bloodthirst is part of your nature. Your body must be mixed with evil demon blood. Today, we will join forces to destroy the unfilial child and chop off his limbs. Then, we'll imprison him forever in the ancestral hall."

The five law enforcement elders each held a corner of the Evil Suppressing Dragon Banner and channeled their spirit energy into the flag, injecting a huge amount of energy.

The Evil Suppressing Dragon Banner was not considered a spirit treasure because it did not have a spirit sentience. However, under the full force channeling of the five elders, it exuded a very horrifying and incomparable light. On top of the Dao engravings, that had the shape of a dragon head, a flashing

light also came along and carried a destructive force.

The strong burst of momentum made Feng Fei Yun feel an unprecedented pressure. The power of the five law enforcement elders was not ordinary and could be considered countless times stronger than Feng Ling Ji. They were like five giant immovable mountains.

In the end, the five elders had to let go of their pride and were ready to kill.

Chapter 76 : Great Danger Everywhere, Nowhere To Go

It seemed like the Feng family truly wanted to make a move and take care of this expelled disciple.

This unreasonable scene caused others to be disappointed. In order to deal with a junior, they had to deploy five characters of the elder rank. Today, if Feng Fei Yun could escape from the encirclement, then he would definitely be renowned in this world and become an excellent hero in the future.

Many people present felt that it was unfair for Feng Fei Yun, but in the end, this was a family affair and others couldn't interfere. Plus, no one wanted to do such a thankless deed.

Feng Fei Yun stood on top of the high wall. Even though he was young, his shadow carried along a resolute initiative to fight for fairness.

"Boom!"

The Evil Suppressing Dragon Banner was even stronger than Feng Fei Yun's imagination. The banner was a dozen zhang high and was made from silk strings that were bathed in beast blood. Even the Invincible Buddhist Staff couldn't easily break through it. Of course, this was because Feng Fei Yun's cultivation was not enough to active the spirit and power of the staff.

Feng Fei Yun swung his staff in one hand while he released palm strikes with his other. Inside these palms contained a part of the Infinite Spirit Ring's power. Each palm released the image of four qilin heads, around eighty thousand jin. This caused one of the elders to take many steps backward.

The Infinite Spirit Ring was also a spirit treasure, but it could only be considered one at the lowest rank. At this moment, Feng Fei Yun was only channeling a strand of its power. He essentially didn't dare to show the entire power of the spirit treasure.

Only when he was desperate would he use all of his power to activate the spirit

treasure to kill the five elders. With his current cultivation, at best, he could only unleash one strike. Then, all of his spirit energy would be depleted. Even though it was possible to kill all five elders, he definitely couldn't block a second move. Most likely, he wouldn't even be able to stand straight.

Feng Fei Yun was hoping for a way out, not a blocked path. This foolish action — naturally, he wouldn't do it.

With one palm releasing four qilin heads, the majority of God Base cultivators wouldn't even be able to do this. This was a symbol for pure power, it was able to move the mountains. One palm was enough to render someone into grounded flesh.

With the Invincible Buddhist Staff and the Infinite Spirit Ring, and even with the qi image along with the energy aura of the earth, it still couldn't make up for the absolute gap in cultivation. Under the siege from the five elders, Feng Fei Yun's battle space became increasingly smaller. There were many wounds on his body caused by the Evil Suppressing Dragon Banner.

Although the wounds weren't deep, blood was quickly flowing out from them!

The blood in his body was black, like a thick squid ink, giving others a spooky feeling.

"Hmph! Truly the son of an evil demon, even the blood in your body is different from others."

An elder lifted his arm, like a white dragon crawling out a heart, and clawed Feng Fei Yun's right shoulder, revealing four ferocious wounds — revealing his white shoulder bones.

This move was quite ruthless!

Feng Fei Yun unyieldingly suppressed his pain. He was sneering in his heart and didn't bother to explain anything to them. The Invincible Buddhist Staff in his hand broke through an opening of the banner and murderously went forward to strike the left chest of this elder. It created a bloody hole around the size of a fist.

"Poof!"

The elder, who was still from laughing earlier, bellowed and didn't dare to fight again. He staggered two steps back and maintained a safe distance. Then, he escaped to the side in order to heal his wound.

Feng Fei Yun unexpectedly went on the offensive and managed to wound an elder. However, once again, he was struck by the banner and his back had a very deep wound. It stretched from his neck to his waist and almost split him into two halves.

This battle was truly horrifying as blood stained the wall; both red and black blood existed side by side.

With a pair of white wings on Dong Feng Jing Yue's back, she floated in the sky and observed the fight below. Her eyes were very calm and silently gazed at Feng Fei Yun, who was crazily fighting with an undying battle will. It caused her to be very emotional.

At this moment, Feng Fei Yun was very different from before. It was as if he was a completely different person. He didn't had a shred of the image of a careless playboy. He was more like an invincible heavenly general, surrounded by ten thousand troops.

She acted like the other spectators and didn't take advantage of this situation against Feng Fei Yun. This was a private matter of the Feng family. As an outsider, she didn't care.

She was more curious about the great sage. One of the reasons why Feng Fei Yun was chased by the experts of the Feng family was because this great sage spoke some nonsense.

To be called a great sage, it would absolutely be a character that was respected. Why would such a character make things difficult for a Feng junior and cause Feng Fei Yun to be cornered? What was most important… was that she was also pulled into the vortex.

Either this man was idle with nothing to do, or he absolutely had a devious plan.

"From now on, I am the son of an evil demon. I will not show mercy when killing people!"

Feng Fei Yun's presence pierced the sky. He rushed nine steps forward and directly knocked the head of an elder flying, separating it away from his body.

This staff was merciless and had great power. After the head of this elder flew away, it exploded into particles of flesh and blood.

Only the body below the neck was still standing on the wall. After a "bang", it shot out a crimson fountain of blood.

The five elders fought together but Feng Fei Yun was still not dead, they even lost one with another being wounded. This was truly shocking! Was he actually able to fight against the encirclement? There were many experts in Violet Firmament Ancient City that had a major interest in this fight, including cultivation masters, but they were not very optimistic about Feng Fei Yun. At the end of the day, the power of one person was limited. To oppose an entire family… The power and secret details of Feng Fei Yun was far too lacking.

Plus, Feng Fei Yun's power was greatly consumed. Even though it was a great feat in battle, the wise noticed that the majority of spirit energy in his body was depleted and he was only relying on a surge of willpower to fight back.

On top of this, there were wounds all over this body that were trickling with blood. At any moment, his body could give out and he would fall down.

Once he fell, the experts of the Feng family would never allow him to stand up again.

The evening sun was setting to the west as the sky was painted red.

A red sun lingered above the far mountains. A lonely smoke in the midst of the green mountains rose, causing others to feel the bleakness of the twilight.

The red sun directly shined onto the wall of the ancient city and illuminated Feng Fei Yun's face with a red shade. This, along with the red killing intent in his gaze, created a frightening killing aura.

It was getting dark and many people frowned. However, the heaviness in Feng Fei Yun's heart was lifted because the night curtain was his only chance to escape.

"Hurry up and become dark. Once the night curtain falls, then hiding inside the

middle area of Violet Firmament Ancient City would not be too difficult.”

Feng Fei Yun naturally knew that the experts from the Feng family who were here were not limited to just the five elders. Even five of them were only a part of this group, the rest was hiding in the shadows. Once he wanted to escape, these people would immediately block his path.

This was a beast trapped in a cage!

Because of this reason, Feng Fei Yun didn’t rush to escape, but instead, wanted to wait until it was dark.

It finally became completely dark!

“Bam!”

Feng Fei Yun suddenly unleashed a last palm strike and the shadow of four qilin heads tremblingly suppressed the area in front of him. At the same time, he suddenly retreated and jumped down from the inner city’s wall and quickly headed straight for the middle city to escape.

“Boom!”

The three elders from the Feng family easily used the banner to destroy the four Bulls of power and gazed towards Feng Fei Yun’s direction of escape. They could only coldly snort:

“Still, this brat is quite smart. He was aware that by running to the outside, there would be a chance of escaping Violet Firmament Ancient City, but that was a dead end. There were four experts in that direction; it was like opening a bag just to wait for him to jump inside.”

“However, even if he escaped towards the middle city, his results would not be any better. The eighth elder is guarding the entrance to the middle city; there is no chance of survival if he goes there.”

The three elders still continued to chase. Even though they knew Feng Fei Yun was already a fish inside a basin, catching Feng Fei Yun was still a great contribution that they didn’t want to miss.

Feng Fei Yun directly crossed through nine big streets and ten small alleys into a house. He took off the blood stained clothing on his body and put on a large

gray robe of a servant.

His drooping hair was now covered by a cap. In a short amount of time, he underwent a great change and became like a street candy vendor that walked on the large road.

In order to avoid suspicions, he used a large black cloth to hide the Invincible Buddhist Staff. Then, he left the house and headed towards the middle city.

He was going to the middle city in order to find the Na Lan Monastic Robe and the Buddhist Jade Beads. Time was running out so even if there were many traps everywhere, he still had to rush in.

Under the genuine plea of someone else, and with Monk Jiu Rou reminding him a million times, it was clear to see that this was not a simple matter. If he didn't find the two Buddhist treasures, then there was a chance that there really would be an earth shattering disaster.

Even though Feng Fei Yun changed his appearance, his heart was still heavy. He knew that if he hid in a corner tonight, he could temporarily hold on to his life. However, by searching for the Buddhist courtyard, then it would truly be nine parts death and one part life.

The wall of the middle city was even larger than the inner city. It was made from ten thousand jin boulders that were polished into a smooth fit. Even a sword wouldn't manage to get inside the cracks.

At this moment, Feng Fei Yun was outside the middle city gates. There was a man around the age of fifty who sat there. This man was in the middle of the walking crowd beside the gate. He was very calm and orderly, with an ancient book in his hand. He was meticulously reading and enjoying the taste of life.

The chair under him was around three meters long and situated in the middle of the gate — it was truly a bit inconvenient.

However, the black armor guards standing not-too-far from there didn't dare to chase him away. His position must have been very great.

Not to mention reading in front of the middle city gates, even if he killed people at the gate, no one would dare to stop him.

The moment Feng Fei Yun was one hundred zhang from the gate, he felt an ancient aura sealing his body. It was as if there was a poisonous snake gazing at him in an unavoidable manner.

This strange feeling came from the ground and the air and surrounded him, wanting to touch his body. An expert of this level was too frightening. He truly didn't allow anyone to escape.

Where was this person?

Feng Fei Yun gazed towards the front and the man who was reading in the middle of the gate also lifted his head. The time was quite coincidental, the two people gazed at each other at the same time.

It was him, who is he?

The man blocking the path that Feng Fei Yun wanted to go through closed the ancient book in his hand. He smilingly observed Feng Fei Yun and continuously nodded his head. It seemed like he had been waiting for a long time!

Chapter 77 : The Eighth Elder

This person only looked around fifty years old, but he carried along an extraordinary vicissitude. His real age was definitely not below one hundred.

He definitely could be considered an old man!

Because of his high cultivation and the usage of spirit energy to control the speed of aging, others only felt that he was around fifty.

“I didn’t expect you to make it this far. It seems like your potential was greatly underestimated.”

He was still sitting in the chair. Even though the waves of people were still moving on the road, it was as if he was sitting in his own garden — it was completely natural.

Feng Fei Yun felt an enormous pressure from this person. Even though they were still one hundred zhang apart, it felt like he was very close to him. Just a slight movement would allow him to get in front of Fei Yun.

This was a signal of danger!

The storm and clouds had begun to move in Violet Firmament’s middle city. The Feng family sent many experts after Fei Yun throughout the city. It was a complete siege in all directions.

Even if there was a giant mountain in front of him, he had to break through it to get past it. Otherwise, if he became encircled again, he wouldn’t be able to run, even if he wanted to.

“Who on earth are you?”

Feng Fei Yun knew that the opponent had recognized him so there was no use in denying it.

“The eighth elder of the Feng family, Feng Wei Ting.”

He faintly smiled:

“I already know your matters very well. Offending the fourth young miss of the

Yin Gou family isn't a big deal. As long your talent is truly excellent, even if the family has to spend a fortune, we would still help you settle this matter. Feng Fei Yun, the fact that you were able to defeat Feng Ling Ji shows your peerless talents; your future achievements will not be mediocre. If you follow me now, then it is not too late to reserve this matter."

The Feng family was an enormous clan and could be considered a tyrant in the Grand Southern Prefecture. It was established for more than one thousand years and had a terrifying heritage. Characters of the elder rank numbered in the hundreds.

Characters of the elder rank were all competent actors that could uphold one direction by themselves.

The person ahead was ranked the eighth out of several hundred elders, his cultivation must be at an extraordinary and incredible proportion. His position in the Feng family must be quite high and definitely not under the current clan master of the Feng family by any means.

The weight in his words were naturally very heavy.

If there was not the matter of the son of the evil demon, then Feng Fei Yun might have trusted his words. However, at the moment, even if all ten of the top elders appeared before him, he still wouldn't believe them.

Feng Fei Yun took the black cloth off of the Invincible Buddhist Staff, revealing the bright golden brass rings. Then, he smiled:

"I'm afraid you guys only want to get the evil demon blood from my body to refine the demon robe my mother left behind; this is probably my most valuable contribution to all of you."

The eighth elder gently rubbed his forehead and sighed:

"Your way of thinking is too paranoid. Even though the evil demon blood flows in your body, there is also the blood of our Feng family — of the direct branch. How could we bear to actually kill you? The things we did were all for the outsiders to see, as well as the Yin Gou family. You have to trust me on this."

'This person not only has an exceedingly powerful cultivation, but he also has a very meticulous mind. It is no wonder the Feng family's upper echelon sent him

to deal with me.’

Feng Fei Yun said:

“How could I trust all of you? You already imprisoned my grandfather and two uncles, and even sent people to sanction my father in Spirit State City. Are these the methods used to deal with one’s own?”

“Sigh! Who did you hear all of this from?”

The eighth elder said.

“Who I heard it from is not important. What is important is that these are all truths.”

Feng Fei Yun carefully gazed at his eyes. As he saw the elder’s lack of denial, he immediately knew this was the truth.

The eighth elder didn’t say anything else because he knew words were useless at this point.

Feng Fei Yun also stopped speaking because he knew any more words would only be nonsense.

He could not avoid going into the middle city. If the eighth elder had to be here to block him, then he could only bring him down.

“If you can take three steps forward, then I will let you go through this gate. However, if you can’t, then be a good boy and come back with me to the Feng Jian ancestral hall.”

Even though the eighth elder didn’t understand why Feng Fei Yun wanted to enter the middle city, this didn’t affect his decision.

He was truly worthy of being the eighth elder of the Feng family. He was extremely arrogant and dared to bet with Feng Fei Yun that he couldn’t take three steps forward. He was too confident with his own cultivation.

At this moment, the two were still one hundred zhang apart, which was around a bit more than three hundred meters. The speed of sound would require close to one second to travel. One second to someone with the speed of Feng Fei Yun… Even thirty steps would not be difficult.

Feng Fei Yun accepted that he was not his match, but not being able to take three steps forward was simply too much.

“You were the one who said this.”

Feng Fei Yun was talking when he suddenly took a leap forward as his spirit energy channeled into his two feet. His speed was indeed reaching its limit.

However, his first step had not settled when he immediately felt that he had stepped on a whirlpool. It felt like it was a misstep, like he was falling down into the depths of the abyss.

The eighth elder’s finger gently knocked on the chair and twelve strands of spirit energy went into the ground. They were as sharp as a blade and able of destroy everything in this world.

“Boom!”

Feng Fei Yun’s foot was one inch from the ground. Then, his shoe and trouser leg was completely minced. If he didn’t retreat in time, then his whole leg would have been crippled.

How strong was he?

Feng Fei Yun believed that earlier, whether it was his speed or reaction time, they were extremely fast. However, the eighth elder still forced him to go back — this was too humbling.

Despite this, his heart naturally refused to accept this outcome and he slammed the Invincible Buddhist Staff into the ground, wanting to shatter the killing energy underground.

“Bam!”

However, he was still underestimating this power too much!

The power of the Invincible Buddhist Staff was too strong. Under normal circumstances, it would be able to create a couple-meter-deep pit in the ground. However, this time, it was bounced back by the other source of energy and almost caused him to be heavily wounded.

“Bzzt bzzt!”

The staff violently trembled in Feng Fei Yun's hand and created shaking sound. Feng Fei Yun's hand felt like it was pricked by a thousand needles and wanted to break apart.

The cultivation of this eighth elder was truly sickening. He was simply not on the same level as the other law enforcement elders. They were one hundred zhang apart yet Feng Fei Yun simply couldn't take one step forward.

Without a doubt, if he wanted to kill Feng Fei Yun, he only needed one move. He absolutely didn't need to use a second move.

This was the gap between their strength. The difference in cultivation was simply not a matter that external forces could make up.

The eighth elder was still sitting on the chair while holding the ancient book. One hand was stroking his beard as leisurely smiled:

"Young one, you should give up on your courageous struggling. In front of the Feng family, you are still too tiny. In the Feng family, there are more than ten people stronger than me. Even if you could get by my gate, you still wouldn't be able to pass on the road ahead."

Feng Fei Yun's gaze was still resolute and he would not retreat. The Dragon Horse River Diagram qi image dashed out from his body. His aura raised yet again and he thrusted forward.

The eighth elder slightly sighed and shook his head:

"Since you won't be captured willingly, I can only make a move."

This time, he actually took action. However, the speed didn't leave behind any shadow and no one saw his hands.

He flew from his seat and his figure continuously turned into shadows. One finger rushed for the dantian of the Feng Fei Yun.

His action was like the wind, not leaving behind the slightest trace. Feng Fei Yun, in front of him, was like a piece of paper. Even though he could see him approaching, he couldn't go on the counter offense. Even moving was impossible.

"His cultivation is so high, my life is over!"

Feng Fei Yun knew that it was not because he couldn’t dodge, but because the opponent was too powerful. This was not a competition between people of the same level.

Even if he wanted to fight and his heart was willing, his power was not capable to compete!

“Boom!”

The eighth elder bellowed loudly and his finger exploded into blood. His whole body was forced back by a mighty power.

“Bam!”

The eighth elder was struck, flying away, directly into the wall of the middle city and created a multi-meter deep hole while issuing a severe noise.

“You… What is that in your dantian?”

The eighth elder originally wanted to destroy Feng Fei Yun’s dantian with one finger, but his finger was shattered by an azure light. If he didn’t notice early, that there was something wrong and immediately withdrew his hand, his entire arm would have been shattered.

Feng Fei Yun felt the blood in his body boiling and his internal organs were shaken. An uncomfortable sense aroused within his chest and he couldn’t help but spurt out a mouthful of blood.

Dantian? Inside the dantian… Wasn’t the ancient spirit vessel inside his dantian?

Feng Fei Yun only felt that his dantian was encompassed by an azure light. It was no different from the mysterious sea and the ancient spirit vessel was wandering in there while emitting a godly bright light. It was much more brilliant than the light of Feng Fei Yun’s immortal foundation.

This was the time!

Feng Fei Yun didn’t think too much and used this time, when the eighth elder was knocked away by the spirit vessel, to directly rush into the middle city.

Chapter 78 : Young Noble Flawless

The middle city naturally was not considered the center of Violet Firmament Ancient City. However its prosperity far exceeded the outer city and inner city. People inside the middle city were all extremely wealthy, and experts with amazing cultivations were as plentiful as the carps in Yangtze River.

Hidden dragons, crouching tigers, and experts as plentiful as the clouds were the phrases used to describe this place.

Tonight was truly a bit hot. There were many black clouds rolling in the sky. The pressure was increasing and created a suffocating atmosphere that was a little irritable.

This was a sign that a thunderstorm was approaching.

The rain would definitely not be light tonight. Black clouds covered the crescent moon and the cicada were not singing, causing a somber sense of desolation.

“Clank clank…”

Feng Fei Yun wore his exotic buddhist robe and carried his golden staff to a luxurious mansion. He looked up to see two lion statues, both of which were taller than humans, in front of him. They were majestic and powerful, like two lions of god. At the very least, they would weigh tens of thousands of pounds.

He took another look at the mansion and could faintly see the nine pagodas from afar. They were surrounded with a buddhist aura.

He nodded, then he stepped on the white ground terrace and used the bronze ring to knock on the front door of the mansion.

This was the mansion with the nine buddhist pagodas. They were located in the back courtyard, but a family was situated in the front. Seeing this atmosphere, it was clear that this place was not owned by an ordinary person.

Feng Fei Yun did not directly rush in, he had some things to make clear of.

“Bang, bang, bang!”

Three knocks on the door.

The red lacquer doors were soon opened by a little girl. She was around the age of seven. With a tender white face along with two knots on her head, she was very cute looking.

“Big Brother Monk, who are you looking for?”

The sound of the little girl was very soft and melodious.

Feng Fei Yun smiled:

“I am indeed looking for someone, but I am not a monk.”

“Then who are you looking for?”

The little girl tilted her head and curiously asked again.

“Your master.”

Feng Fei Yun answered.

“Our master is Young Noble Flawless! I’m afraid he will not meet with you.”

The little girl shook her head.

Feng Fei Yun was covered in cuts and bruises. Plus, he was pursued by a large number of Feng experts and didn’t want to waste too much time. However, at the moment, it was impossible for him to be angry at such a lovely little girl, so he smiled and said:

“You didn’t inform him so how would you know that he definitely would not meet with me?”

The little girl said:

“Because he only meets with women, and only the beautiful ones at that. For a man such as you, he definitely will not want to meet.”

Feng Fei Yun slightly frowned and diverged his hearing towards the origin of the noises. He heard the sounds of zithers and flutes as well as wonderful singing. There were also the sounds of dancing and smiles, all from women. Plus, the sounds were very soothing. One could only imagine the amount of beauties inside. The number was definitely higher than the largest brothel of Violet Firmament Ancient City.

Feng Fei Yun frowned deeper and deeper. If this was really the buddhist mansion of the Mortal Life Cavern, then why was the current owner so lustfully debaucherous.

In the end, one thousand and eight hundred years had passed. Even if the abbot of the temple used to have people to protect this place, so much time had passed that the owners of this mansion must have changed many times.

This Young Noble Flawless, what type of person was he?

Feng Fei Yun naturally had to enter this mansion so he said:

“Little Sister, I still have to bother you to go tell him that I have a grand gift and I only want to meet Young Noble Flawless once.”

“No matter how many gifts you have, he still would not meet with you. There was a grandpa who came with a one thousand year old calamus, that belonged to the spirit grass rank, just to meet our Young Noble once. However, he couldn’t even see half of a shadow.”

The little girl squinted and said:

“So unless if it was a beautiful woman coming, no one could see him.”

Calamus had an outrageous value. Its medicinal power was even higher than a drop of spirit spring water.

Feng Fei Yun still had two drops of spirit spring water, but these were life-saving godly medicines. Unless it was a last resort, he would never take them out. Could it be that it was impossible to see this Young Noble Flawless?

Feng Fei Yun, naturally, could directly go to the pagodas behind the mansion, but there would be no result because the immortal buddhist robe would, in the end, throw him out and he wouldn’t be able to get what he wanted.

However, since the pagodas were inside the mansion, this Young Noble had to be related in some way. The mansion must be hiding something like a “key” to take the immortal buddhist robe.

If talking doesn’t work, then he could only use force.

“Young Noble Flawless, Feng Fei Yun is here to pay a visit!”

Feng Fei Yun jumped and his body flew several zhang high. He was a giant bird and flew to the roof of the mansion and looked down. There were bright lights within the mansion, luxurious and extravagant. There was a wine reservoir with beautiful women dancing about. There was a hot spring next to a wine reservoir that emitted white mists. Groups and groups of stunning beauties were bathing in the spring and quietly singing — this was like a mansion for immortals.

In the far distance, there was a palace built from gold and was eight zhang and three meters high. It didn't matter whether it was the walls or the rooftops, they were all made out of pure gold. Even the pillars, that were large enough to require five people to surround with their hands, were also made out of gold.

There were no words to describe it! Just this palace made out of gold was enough for all of the big families to marvel.

There were beautiful women everywhere, no less than three hundred. There was not a single one who wasn't a peerless beauty. This would — no doubt — cause others to be envious of the abilities of Young Noble Flawless. Who knew how he collected so many beauties? This would truly drive people mad with jealousy.

"My place does not welcome men, especially men who climbed the wall to get inside."

From the golden palace came the voice of a young man. It was seemingly very lazy, as if he was still enjoying the gentle comfort of someone. Then, he spoke again:

"Yun Er, according to our rules, what should we do?"

"Remove his eyes and cut off his hands so that he would never look at and touch women again."

This young woman was around the age of seventeen. She seemed very gentle and had bright eyes with curvy brows. Her skin was fine and tender and was probably delicate to the point where it would break with a single touch. Her gaze consisted of a brilliance that was filled with wisdom. A glance was enough to tell that she was not only a vase of decorative flowers.

She was holding a paintbrush to draw on a piece of fragrant silk cloth. Even

though it was only half done, the soul of the painting was no less than the work of contemporary masters.

“Then, I will leave it to you!”

From beginning to end, Young Noble Flawless did not appear and his voice was still just as ponderous and lazy.

“Yes, Master.”

Yun Er happily smiled and paused her drawing. Her crescent moon-like eyes gazed at Feng Fei Yun and saw that this young man wore a white monastic robe while he held a golden staff. He was just like a buddhist layperson.

His looks were quite handsome and had a godly and heroic aura, but Yun Er only took a short glance. She was more focused on the Invincible Buddhist Staff in his hands.

She slightly leaned inside the white mists of the wine reservoir. Her jade-carved white fingers were still holding an ink brush, that had not yet dried, and she gently waved it. The ink flew out and turned into a sword-shaped killing aura that directly rushed for Feng Fei Yun’s left hand.

“This woman’s appearance is exceptionally good and comparable to a goddess. No matter where she goes, she would be able to charm countless excellent geniuses. Plus, her painting techniques are superb and her cultivation is not any less than characters of the elder rank. Such a woman, why is she willing to be a servant for Young Noble Flawless?”

Feng Fei Yun could not understand the heart of this woman. Could Young Noble Flawless actually be so great and perfect?

Right, it had to be the riches inside this mansion. It could attract so many willing women. There were not many fearless ones willing to start their own successes.

Feng Fei Yun still believed that there were girls willing to chase for fame and wealth. However, only relying on gold to collect so many talented women, and ones with exceedingly high cultivation at that, it didn’t feel very likely.

“I will not show mercy to a woman.”

Feng Fei Yun waved his Invincible Buddhist Staff and released a golden light. It returned the sword aura to its original form, into ink that fell down to the ground.

Feng Fei Yun landed from above and strode towards the golden palace as he said:

“You should let your Young Noble Flawless play with me in person!”

“Talk after you actually surpass my gate! Our Young Noble will not just fight against anyone, especially not men.”

Yun Er used her paintbrush as a sword and channeled her energy. The originally soft brush became sharper than a magical sword in just a second. With a gesture of her brush, sword auras penetrated in all the directions. The monastic robe on Feng Fei Yun’s body was cut in three small places.

There were too many women inside this mansion. All of them were young and beautiful. Some were cold like ice, holding a sword while standing. Some were beautiful and alluring with clothings only hiding half of their bodies. There were some country-toppling beauties that were cute and charming and were playing the guqins.

And at this moment, they all turned around and smiled. Their fingers gently pressed against their lips as they watched Feng Fei Yun being continuously pushed back by Yun Er — their laughter became even more pleasant.

Feng Fei Yun had never stood in front of so many beautiful women like this before. He seemed a bit restrained and some of his hair was cut off by Yun Er.

“Bam!”

Feng Fei Yun did not hold back. He used the power of the Infinite Spirit Ring and unleashed a fist with four Bulls of power. It caused Yun Er’s entire body to shake and she had to take ten steps back. She was unable to stand straight. There was blood dripping from her arm, like gorgeous red plums on top of the white snow.

“Whoosh!”

These other women noticed that Yun Er was not a match for Feng Fei Yun so

two more young women joined the fray. Their hands were holding pink peach blossoms. They flicked their fingers and numerous petals rushed out into the air, carrying a sharp power capable of rendering boulders into dust.

The cultivation of the two girls were not any weaker than Yun Er. Plus, they looked exactly like each other — a pair of identical twins. The two combining their power had resulted in an even greater power.

Each of them attacked one side of Feng Fei Yun. Sweet fragrances filled the air. Feng Fei Yun had to use his spirit energy to maneuver the Invincible Buddhist Staff and he swung it around like a windmill, creating many dragon tornados.

Yun Er regained her strength and with a loud roar, she once again joined the fight with her brush. She aimed straight for the center of Feng Fei Yun's forehead.

"These women are not only beautiful, but also ruthless; all of them want to use assassination techniques. They are not easy to mess with!"

This was Feng Fei Yun's only thought at this moment. He became even more curious about Young Noble Flawless who hadn't appeared. What the hell was this mysterious man?

Chapter 79 : The Person in the Prophecy

“Boom!”

Feng Fei Yun suddenly inserted his Invincible Buddhist Staff into the ground and created a golden explosion that shook and churned the land.

Under this strong impact, the twins couldn’t stand upright and were struck away by Feng Fei Yun’s two palms straight into the wine reservoirs, showing a scene of debauchery.

He condensed energy together on his fingers and pointed them to shatter Yun Er’s brush. Then, he easily grabbed her two hands.

The Invincible Buddhist Staff directly pressed against her soft jade neck. He only needed to exert a little strength for her neck to be pierced through.

There were still many beauties present. They wanted to make a move but hesitated because Yun Er was being held as a hostage by Feng Fei Yun. At this moment, many of them encircled him and had killing intents, but no one dared to take action.

“Young Noble Flawless, will you appear now?”

Feng Fei Yun raised his voice.

The golden palace was still silent for a long time. Only the clearly audible sound of wine dripping inside was heard.

The beautiful eyes of Yun Er lightly flashed. Even though she was captured by Feng Fei Yun, she was not the least bit afraid. She smiled and said:

“If you think you could use me to threaten Young Noble, then you thought too highly of my position in Young Noble’s heart.”

Yun Er’s beauty was supreme and had an extraordinary cultivation. Her aura was also rare in this world. Even in a place with this many beauties, she was still considered one that stood out. Feng Fei Yun definitely did not believe that she was not important in his heart.

However, this time, he was wrong. Young Noble Flawless was not only romantic, but he was also heartless. His woman was captured by another man yet he didn't even say a single word; he was completely indifferent.

In the end, Feng Fei Yun couldn't actually kill her, so he directly released her. He walked towards the golden palace and said:

"This time, I didn't come here to fight. I only wanted to make clear of one thing…"

"Halt!"

The voice of Young Noble Flawless came out from the depths of the palace and it stopped Feng Fei Yun in his tracks.

At this moment, Feng Fei Yun was standing in front of the golden palace's gate as he stopped there.

A while later, Young Noble Flawless said:

"A person wearing a monastic robe yet not one of the buddhist faith. One hand holding a staff yet isn't the owner of the staff. It seems like you are the person in the prophecy. Your name is Feng Fei Yun, correct?"

He seemed to be talking to himself, but also to Feng Fei Yun at the same time.

Feng Fei Yun asked:

"What prophecy?"

Everyone stopped their actions and quietly listened to Young Noble Flawless tell an old secret story.

"More than one thousand years ago, there was a great sage of the buddhist faith who prophesized that one thousand years later, there would be a person who wore a monastic robe yet not one of the Buddhist faith. One hand holding a staff yet wasn't the owner of the staff. He had come to take an item from the buddhist pagoda. This item was exceedingly important and only the person in the prophecy could take it. Anyone else who dared to rush through the seal would be struck by a thunderous disaster."

Young Noble Flawless slowly spoke. Naturally, he determined that Feng Fei Yun was the person in the prophecy.

It was apparent that the cultivation of this buddhist great sage was unfathomable since he could predict matters of one thousand years later. The most integral thing was that he understood the actions of the heavens. This far exceeded what ordinary people were capable of.

Feng Fei Yun contemplated for a moment and asked:

“So you mean, your ancestors were the protectors of this mansion?”

“No, I was only being entrusted with this task and will not stay here for long.”

Young Noble Flawless answered.

“Who entrusted the task to you?”

Feng Fei Yun continued.

“You shouldn’t ask too much. It was not someone from the Jin Dynasty. It was just someone like us from a small country. Even if I said it, you still wouldn’t know.”

Young Noble Flawless naturally didn’t want to talk too much.

“Swish! Swish! Swish! Swish! Swish! Swish! Swish! Swish!”

Eight wind-breaking sounds appeared. There were eight strands of air that came out from the golden palace and directly flew about, like eight sharp arrows.

Feng Fei Yun waved his sleeve and gathered the eight lights into his palm. He opened his palm and saw that they were eight talismans.

“The Mortal Life Cavern!”

Feng Fei Yun was ecstatic. These eight talismans were exactly the same as the one in his possession. It seemed that this was the key to enter the door to the buddhist pagoda, the key to take the Na Lan Buddhist Robe and Buddhist Jade Beads.

Under the guidance of a maid, Feng Fei Yun headed towards the back courtyard of the mansion. Very quickly, he saw the nine towering pagodas.

The nine buddhist pagodas had a different architectural style from all the other temples in the Grand Southern Prefecture. One glance was enough to tell that

this was an exotic buddhist structure. In conjunction with the story of Young Noble Flawless, it made others wonder whether Flawless was a grand character from another country.

Even though the Jin Dynasty was a monstrous existence that had an area that encompassed hundreds of thousands of li, it was also surrounded by many dependent small countries. Young Noble Flawless possessed an alarming and impeccable wealth along with a strange custom. This caused others to think of numerous associations.

“Why the need to think so much? Even if he is a prince of some country, it has nothing to do with me.”

Feng Fei Yun used the nine Mortal Life Cavern talismans and directly walked towards the nine ancient trees in front of the nine pagodas.

From beginning to end, Feng Fei Yun never saw Young Noble Flawless.

Inside the golden palace, a white curtain was lowered. A young woman who wore imperial clothing was bathing with Young Noble Flawless. He was laying in the hot spring amidst the lingering mists; one couldn’t see his appearance clearly.

The maid that brought Feng Fei Yun to the buddhist courtyard also came back and respectfully kneeled next to the hot spring.

“He already went in?”

Young Noble Flawless asked.

“Yes!”

The maid replied indifferently.

“As all nine talismans have appeared, then the buddhist robe and buddhist jewel will also appear. It seemed like the living dead in Jing Huan Mountain will truly come back to life. Even the Mortal Life Temple that sank to the ground for one thousand eight hundred years will truly rise again.”

“Such a big event will alarm all of the big powers of the Grand Southern Prefecture. Many stunning beauties will come — such a fun commotion, this Young Noble will definitely not miss it.”

Young Noble Flawless, even though he made it clear that he only wanted stunning beauties, the great change at Jing Huan Mountain would not be limited to just beauties. He also wanted the spirit treasures that had been buried for more than one thousand years.

This would be a great storm of dragons and tigers. Powers from everywhere would be on the stage.

“The eighth elder of the Feng family requests an audience. I beseech Young Noble Flawless to appear.”

A thunderous voice came from outside of the mansion, causing the golden palace to shake.

Young Noble Flawless acted as if he didn’t hear anything.

He was too lazy to speak even one word. In reality, he rarely talked to men. His words were only for women to hear.

The eighth elder followed Feng Fei Yun’s presence to this place and he knew that Fei Yun went inside this mansion.

The eighth elder already heard the rumors regarding this mansion. He knew that the owner was a mysterious character with a strong backing, so he didn’t directly rush in.

After a long time that was void of any answer, the eighth elder spoke again:

“Feng Fei Yun is a traitor of our Feng family. Young Noble Flawless, to protect this traitor is not something you should do!”

The eighth elder of the Feng family was someone who always complied with his status so he rarely appeared. However, once he showed up, there would be numerous people to welcome him and he was never met with such a disappointing reception like today.

“In that case, this Feng will only have to offend.”

The eighth elder slowly walked forward and unleashed a fist. The black energy permeated from his arm and turned into a loop of wind that finally manifested into reality.

Seven Qilins of power!

Every qilin head were all several zhang high — like a small mountain. All seven of them flew out at the same time and broke through space. With the power of ten thousand troops, it could easily raze this mansion into ruins.

Seven Qilins of power was the power of six hundred and forty thousand jin. This also was not the eighth elder's full strength.

With Feng Fei Yun borrowing the strength of the Infinite Spirit Ring, he was only able to release a force of four Qilins, which equaled to eighty thousand jin. This difference in power was truly incalculable.

"Boom!"

However, this seven Qilins of power didn't even manage to reach the front gate before it was already destroyed by a palm from the golden palace, rending it into dust.

This palm contained an unbeatable power and broke through the Qilins and recklessly struck the eighth elder.

"Boom!"

The eighth elder had to take three steps back to stand straight. He left a three foot long footprint on the ground.

"Tonight, this Young Noble is tired and doesn't want to make a move. Your Feng family shouldn't provoke me. Otherwise, I will start a massacre."

The sound of Young Noble Flawless was vast like the mists in the clouds — completely unfathomable.

This Young Noble Flawless was still young yet his cultivation was already inconceivably deep. Even though the fist of the eighth elder earlier was not his full strength, the opponent was able to repel him. This was enough to speak of his true power.

It was not impossible to continue the offense, but that would lead to a life and death fight. If they offended the power behind Young Noble Flawless, then it would create another enemy for the family. This was not worth it just for one Feng Fei Yun.

The eighth elder analyzed the stakes at hand and slowly receded before he

finally disappeared in the darkness.

“Boom!”

A loud thunder rang in the sky. It was followed by countless interwoven lightnings, then a heavy rain suddenly landed.

Chapter 80 : Na Lan Buddhist Robe and Buddhist Jade Bead

This rain was truly heavy, just like a flood. The wind screamed along with the roars of thunder and lightning, causing the entire Violet Firmament Ancient City to be caught in the torrential downpour.

“Boom!”

The thunder sounded like a mountain had collapsed. The little children under the roofs shrunk their necks in horror. Afterwards, a bright thunder flashed through the sky like a heavenly saber splitting the world in half.

This was the power of the heavens. If struck by such a thunder, even a cultivation elder renowned in one direction would immediately turn into ashes.

And on this rainy night, an earth-shattering news was being spread throughout Violet Firmament Ancient City. Countless big families and cultivation sects all summoned their experts and wanted to hold an emergency meeting. In a short period of time, many cultivation experts rushed out of the main gate, along with the cavalry, towards a far direction.

It was predetermined that this would not be a peaceful night. There was an unknown fight taking place and it destroyed a huge part of the inner city. When the city guards arrived, there was only blood stains on the ground. As the stains were mixed with the rain, they were finally and completely washed out.

The matter of the Feng family chasing the traitor was not forgotten either. All of the gates of Violet Firmament Ancient City were stationed with experts. Feng Fei Yun couldn’t escape no matter how far he went.

“Rumble!”

The thunders were still roaring.

The raindrops were as big as a human thumb, and they fell on the rooftop of the one thousand year old buddhist pagoda, creating many “clip clop” sounds. The world couldn’t regain its tranquility.

This time, Feng Fei Yun went to the front door and into the buddhist pagoda. He felt that the decorations of this place were similar to the ones inside the Mortal Life Temple, but there were also some differences that carried along an exotic flavor.

The crumbling walls were covered with cobwebs. There were places that were wet due to the rain and created a musty smell.

Along the wooden winding stairs, he, step by step, headed into the darkness.

However, the difference this time was that the nine talismans in Feng Fei Yun's hand started to shine brilliantly and gently floated up from his hand. The nine talismans, like nine spirit lights flying in the air, illuminated the road ahead of him.

With the nine talismans' vivid light, the formations on the ground and in the air were completely visible. Feng Fei Yun finally could avoid the maze as he stepped into the center of the pagoda.

The monastic robe was still in the tray at the center of the pagoda. The monastic robe was of a blueish-gray color — old and ordinary. It didn't carry any spiritual power. Even the cotton fabric was of the most common kind.

There were embroideries of red spider lilies and had a laced print: "Red spider lily; one thousand years to bloom and one thousand years to wither, flowers and petals never meet each other. Feelings not because of karma, fate preordained before life and death!"

The words 'red spider lilies' carried so much grief. Seeing these letters, people couldn't help but feel a sense of sadness.

That year, the abbot of the Mortal Life Temple imprisoned himself in a dark pagoda because he loved a woman. He spent his time with buddhist chants in order to calm his mind, to forget the woman that was already destined to never be with him.

However, no matter how profound his buddhist beliefs were, it couldn't resist the demons of his mind. After hearing about the death of that woman, he took off his monastic robe and carried a butcher knife instead. He used the lives of more than one thousand monks in the Mortal Life Temple in order to give the

woman a sliver of life. Finally, he even refined his own body.

This was the essence of the red spider lilies. When the leaves grow, the flowers still won't have bloomed. When the leaves fell down to the ground and become fertilizer, the lilies used its life to become the nutrients for the flowers, in order for them to bloom.

At that moment, the abbot of the Mortal Life Temple sat here with complex and painful emotions. It was truly not something ordinary people could understand.

Feng Fei Yun deeply sighed and gazed at the lonely white skeletal hand. This hand was nearly cut off from the body and it seemed to be holding something.

"Who could actually cut off the hand of a master like the abbot of the Mortal Life Temple? What is in his hand?"

Feng Fei Yun couldn't understand. A person that could even reverse destiny would be considered the most elite in the Jin Dynasty, who would be able to cut off his hand?

"Yes, maybe at that moment, the emotions of the abbot were extremely confused and he started to lose his mind. At that moment, he cut off his hand in order to regain his sanity. Unfortunately, in the end, everything still became shambles."

A person capable of causing a high monk of the buddhist faith to be so infatuated, so deep in love…

This woman must have been someone without equals in this world.

Feng Fei Yun didn't want to wait too long. He wanted to throw the nine talismans into the monastic robe, then put it on and leave, but…

"Swish!"

The buddhist robe that was on the tray on the ground suddenly stood up. It was as if it turned into a man, and it turned around to face Feng Fei Yun.

Even though the robe was empty and there was only the skeletal hand in the sleeve, Feng Fei Yun still felt that it was a living existence. It was like the robe was hiding a person who was looking at him intensely.

“Don’t hurt her. I deserve to die, but she should live.”

An ancient voice resonated from the buddhist robe. This was not a ghost but an ancient immortal sentiment. A remnant immortal echoed because he couldn’t forget.

Even though it was such a simple statement, the emotions contained inside would cause others to cry. This was a high monk from one thousand years ago, pleading to a junior one thousand years after.

These were the last words of a dead person. They were filled with sorrow and irrationality.

“I deserve to die, but she should live!”

These words kept on resonating in Feng Fei Yun’s head. It could be that because of these words, the monastic robe refused to fall and was persevering, persevering for more than one thousand years. Now that Feng Fei Yun was finally here, it quickly said its last words to him.

The plea one thousand and eight hundred years apart.

This plea would make it so difficult for any person!

“Boom!”

The monastic robe eventually became unable to resist and softly fell down to the floor, creating a large smoke of dust.

The lonely white skeletal hand finally lost the last of its spirit energy and fell to the floor, becoming white skeletal dust. Within the skeletal dust, there was an extremely blinding green light.

It was a Buddhist Jade Bead. It was as large as a longan fruit and green all around. With nine small needle holes, the lights were shot out from these nine holes.

Feng Fei Yun put the bead inside his hand and immediately felt a chilling surge throughout his body. This coldness invaded him down to the bones and spreaded to his neck. It caused his brain to become calm and he no longer panicked.

Vague buddhist chants resounded in his ears, as if there were countless

buddhist high monks chanting just for him. Feng Fei Yun was sure that, while holding this Buddhist Jade Bead during cultivation, there was absolutely no chance for Qigong Deviation.

“This Jade Bead is truly amazing. I wonder how many profound buddhist truths are hidden within from the many generations of high monks. This is definitely a sacred relic of the buddhist faith.”

“In recent times, my cultivation increased way too rapidly, resulting in instability and a shaky Immortal Foundation. However, holding this bead in my hand, all of my spirit energy instantly became normal and my foundation became purer with vigorous life. It’s as if I had just broken through again.”

Feng Fei Yun felt that there was even more to the mysterious power of the Jade Bead. He used two fingers to hold the bead and looked inside the nine holes. He only noticed the lights inside. It was as if he was stranded in an endless desert, with many buddhist statues emanating faint golden lights.

The inside of the Buddhist Jade Bead seemed to be another world. It was extremely mysterious. Because Feng Fei Yun’s cultivation was too low, he could only see a corner of it before being turned back by an invisible power.

“It is time to leave. Right now, the entire Jing Huan Mountain must be surrounded by the major forces. Countless experts must be there as well.”

Feng Fei Yun taped the nine talismans in the coat lining of the Na Lan Buddhist Robe and wore it on his body. He didn’t feel that anything was different, but the robe was very soft and his whole body felt lighter.

“Haaa, why am I flying again!”

Feng Fei Yun felt that his body was, once again, moved by an invisible force into a very thin layer of space. Suddenly, his whole body was wet and the sounds of thunder rang in his ear.

“Poof!”

Once again, Feng Fei Yun fell into the river, that was as wide as the sea, outside of Violet Firmament Ancient City — just like the last time — without any explanation. It was as if he was being controlled by a spirit technique. A thousand miles were as close as a couple of inches.

Once he got out of the city and escaped from the encirclement of the Feng family's experts, he would have already escaped to the heavens. From now on, the sky was vast and the earth was wide; it would not be easy to trap him again.

The moment he crawled up from the river, the rain was still pouring down from the sky. It was still pitch black, and he couldn't see the five fingers in front of him.

Chapter 81 : Nine Doves Sacred Gown

The rainy night made for a chilling atmosphere. The world seemed to be engulfed in a silky steel curtain.

Leaving behind deep footprints on the muddy ground, someone was hurrying through the night. In the front was an endless darkness, and one could only hear the sound of the cavalries and vehicles quickly moving ahead.

In the sky resounded a loud bird!

Feng Fei Yun was standing on top of a peak as he watched wave and wave of cultivators come out from Violet Firmament Ancient City. They were the elites of the elite. Even the extreme masters were part of the groups.

“It seemed like the secrets of Jing Huan Mountain were spread to all of the city, and all of the big powers were alarmed.”

Violet Firmament Ancient City was the center of the Grand Southern Prefecture. The first rank powers, like the Feng Family, numbered more than five and accounted for half of the entire Grand Southern Prefecture.

Once these forces were alerted, the entire prefecture would be in turmoil. There were no exceptions.

Feng Fei Yun wore the Na Lan Buddhist Robe. One hand held the Buddhist Jade Bead while the other held the Invincible Buddhist Staff, with the Infinite Spirit Ring on his finger. His whole body was adorned with treasures. He felt a tremendous power surge through his body. Like this, he would even dare to fight against a big power.

“Rumble!”

A group of nine chariots were pulled by nine spirit deers in the sky and they rushed towards the horizon.

A big banner was on the bronze chariot and had the words, “Feng family” written on it. It was led by the eighth elder and a few extreme experts of the Feng family.

Feng Fei Yun stood on the nearby mountain and clenched his fists. He really wanted to block the chariots and kill some people, but his reasoning told him that this was not the right time to be impulsive. The bronze carriages contained powerful a killing intent; there might be an expert of the Ju Qing rank inside.

To dash forward would be the same as rushing into a trap.

The nine bronze chariots slowly went away and turned into nine small dots that eventually disappeared in the horizon.

Feng Fei Yun directly jumped down from the mountain and followed the group of chariots towards Jing Huan Mountain.

The rain did not stop, but the sky was becoming brighter.

When morning came, the giant mountain slowly appeared in the far distance amidst the rain.

Arriving at Jing Huan Mountain, even though it was still far away, one could still see the lights that came from the mountain. There were also a few powerful presences of Ju Qings, causing others to feel suppressed.

“The heavy rain soaked one’s clothes and permeated all the way to the heart. Will Customer not stop by for a cup of tea?”

The sound of an old man rang in Feng Fei Yun’s ears.

At this moment, Feng Fei Yun noticed that deep inside the forest was a wooden cabin. A flag on top of the wooden house had the word “Tea”.

Because the rain was too heavy and the mist was too dense in this area, he didn’t notice the tea house earlier.

At this moment, he was following the nine bronze chariots of the Feng family, so naturally, he was not in the mood to sit down and drink tea. However, after discerning the voice of the old man, his expression became pleasant as he turned around, only to see the old man standing in the rain while smiling at him.

“Lui…”

Feng Fei Yun couldn’t help but to exclaim, but then he quickly shut his mouth. He went up to greet the old man and ecstatically said:

“Grandpa Liu, why are you here?”

This old man was the housekeeper of Feng Fei Yun’s mother, Housekeeper Liu.

Wasn’t Housekeeper Liu in Spirit State City right now? Why was he here? It was as if he was at this place just to wait for him.

“This old servant naturally is here to find Young Master. I have been waiting here for you for the last two days.”

Housekeeper Liu signaled for Feng Fei Yun to enter the wooden house. This was a place he used for shelter and doubled as a secretive spot, away from others.

Housekeeper Liu brought forth a hot pot of tea and poured Feng Fei Yun a full cup.

After drinking the hot tea, he could feel his entire body warming up.

Feng Fei Yun placed down the tea cup and asked:

“Grandpa Liu, where is my father at the moment? Did the law enforcement hall send many experts to suppress my father?”

Housekeeper Liu smiled:

“Master has left Spirit State City. The people from the law enforcement hall won’t be able to find him.”

“Where is he going?”

Feng Fei Yun felt more at ease.

“He… He probably is already at the Yu Lou Passage.”

Housekeeper Liu slightly sighed and said:

“Young Master, you could be considered an adult now, and your cultivation is enough to deal with one direction. Master can finally do something that he should have done a long time ago, in peace. The road ahead is entirely up to you.”

The Yu Lou Passage was one of the eighteen gates at the border of the Jin Dynasty. The moment one exited the Yu Lou Passage, they would no longer be in the Jin Dynasty’s territory. Where was father trying to go? And what was he

trying to do?

Feng Fei Yun guessed that this matter would definitely have something to do with the mother that he had never met, and there was a hidden story behind it.

“Grandpa Liu, don’t you also have to go?”

Feng Fei Yun lifted his head since he heard the intention of departure in Housekeeper Liu’s words.

“Of course I also have to go. The only reason I wanted to meet you one last time is because I want to explain a few things to you.”

Housekeeper Liu was quite unwilling to depart because he was the one who watched Feng Fei Yun grow up. He even considered Fei Yun as his own grandson.

He poured another hot cup of tea for Feng Fei Yun and slowly spoke:

“Your mother left behind a sacred robe for you when she was still alive, the Nine Doves Sacred Gown. It was meant to be a memoriam for you, but it was stolen by the unfilial Feng Sui Yu. After hearing this news, Master immediately knew that it was going to be a big deal and he especially commanded me to kill Feng Sui Yu and recover the Nine Doves Sacred Gown, but I came too late.”

“Feng Sui Yu had died in my hands already.”

Feng Fei Yun continued:

“Is my mother really dead? Is Mother really an evil demon as well?”

Feng Fei Yun really didn’t have any prejudice against evil demons. After all, he was a grand demon in his past life. Even if his mother was a demon of one direction, he didn’t really mind it. The only thing he cared about was whether or not she was alive.

Housekeeper Liu followed his mother, even before her marriage, so he definitely knew her origin very well.
Housekeeper Liu’s old eyes gazed towards the far horizon, as if he was contemplating about something. A while later, he finally said:

“Your mother is such a character: she had gone through four grand tribulations. How could she die so easily?”

“Four grand tribulations!”

In his mind, Feng Fei Yun was extremely shaken.

Housekeeper Liu assumed that Feng Fei Yun was too young and didn’t know what the four grand tribulations really were, but he didn’t know that Feng Fei Yun’s knowledge was very broad. After hearing about the four grand tribulations, Fei Yun was quickly frightened.

This was not an ordinary grand character. Feng Fei Yun’s heart was churning, as if he was struck by a godly thunder. Characters of the four grand tribulations rank… Even him in his past life heard about them but had never seen any.

“Where is my mother now? And who on earth is she?”

Feng Fei Yun quickly asked.

“I can’t tell you these things right now. The first thing you need to do is to take the Nine Doves Sacred Gown back, this item originally belonged to you.”

Housekeeper Liu earnestly continued:

“Half of the flowing blood in your body is human while the other half is demon. In your future path of cultivation, you will meet one grand tribulation. Only the Nine Doves Sacred Gown will allow you to surpass this difficult tribulation.”

Feng Fei Yun asked:

“When will this grand tribulation come?”

“When the evil demon blood in your body awakens. Both your power and the disastrous effect will increase within your body. If you cannot surpass this disaster, you will die on the cultivation path and become a rotting corpse.”

Housekeeper Liu clearly had other important things to do, so after he explained these things, he left the teahouse and disappeared in the rain.

“Fei Yun, the future road below your feet… How you choose to walk it is entirely up you…”

Housekeeper Liu was getting farther and farther away, and his sound became more faint as it finally dissipated.

Feng Fei Yun sat in the teahouse. His thoughts were complicated. For his

mother to be able to break through four grand tribulations, who was she?

Why did she leave behind the Nine Doves Sacred Gown? Could it be that she guessed that in the future, he would also have a tribulation? Why did she leave if she knew that there was a tribulation coming? And why did she disappear in this world?

The Nine Doves Sacred Gown, an Evil Demon Battle Armor!

How could he take it back from the hands of the Feng ancestor? It seemed like he could only focus on his cultivation. Outside of brute force, there was absolutely no other way.

The wind continued to blow under the thunders, and the rain became heavier and heavier!

“In the wilderness and drinking tea alone, you are acting way too leisurely.”

Outside of the door was a peerless beauty. She was holding a lute and had half of her face covered. Who else could it be but Dong Fang Jing Yue?

She wore a white gown and stood in the rain but she was not wet. The white veil that covered her face was embroidered with a little butterfly — very life like — as if it was flying in the rain.

Her arrival brought along an elegant fragrance. She smilingly gazed at Feng Fei Yun, as if she wanted to steal his soul.

Her eyes are naturally erotic. No, forget her eyes, even a single jade finger of her’s was enough to easily enrapture the souls of men. However, she was not able to steal Feng Fei Yun’s soul.

“To be meeting you in this wilderness, I don’t know if we are destined or I am just unlucky.”

Other people would be ecstatic to randomly meet a stunning beauty and it would show on their face, but Feng Fei Yun couldn’t help but sigh and almost thought about directly breaking the window to run away.

“Listening to the wind and rain alone in this tea house is a bit too desolate! Young Noble Feng, would you be willing to let this lowly maid play you a ‘Sleep in the Rain’ tune?”

Dong Fang Jing Yue sat next to the antique window frame and used a bamboo stick to prop open the windows. The outside had fresh grass, swaying in the wind and rain. The raindrops hitting the windows created even tinier splashes.

With her white gown, along with the crimson lute, she sat by the window.

At this moment, she resembled a painting. Feng Fei Yun was in a daze and gazed at her. It was as if he was watching Shui Yue Ting again for the first time!

At that time, it was a beauty painting, able to cause others to be intoxicated in a dream.

Chapter 82 : Inexplicable Feelings

The rain was still streaming down outside of the window. The misty fogs remained vast and indistinct.

In the mountains, only the moving and beautiful sounds of the lute could be heard, like a song of the angels.

Dong Fang Jing Yue was in front of the window while holding her red lute. Her slender fingers gently jumped back and forth on top of the strings and played the “Sleep in the Rain” tune, bewildering people.

“In the calm evening, the chaotic fogs flew everywhere~ Suddenly woken up from a tranquil sleep, it was the misty wind under the moon again~ Strolling leisurely under the vague starlight~ The queen of the night in the lonely desolace, the temple in the north lasting forever~ Crystal clear drop after drop came down with the sweet fragrance of the rain~ The flowers were silenced, and he still had not slept~”

The sound of the lute was wonderful, but her singing voice was even more charming!

Feng Fei Yun’s eyes became blurry and his deep black pupils became more drowsy. His head became heavy, as if he wanted to fall deep asleep within this song.

The “Sleep in the Rain” was a song that hypnotized the will of others!

Dong Fang Jing Yue was softly singing while gazing at Feng Fei Yun, who was gradually passing out. Her alluring pair of eyes smiled like two crescent moons.

However, just when she felt that her grand deed was accomplished, along with gusts of wind breaking, there came the sound of a flute playing in the rain. There were many people coming closer, they were all masters. Especially the one playing the flute, that one was particularly powerful. Their cultivation must be unfathomable.

Her lute suddenly became chaotic and Feng Fei Yun shivered before he came into being. In his heart, he shouted that it was a close call. Earlier, if he was really

mesmerized by Dong Fang Jing Yue's lute, then wouldn't she be able to do whatever she wanted?

Feng Fei Yun couldn't help but cover his own body as he shot an unfriendly gaze at Dong Fang Jing Yue. If this damned grandma took advantage of when he was sleeping and indecently assaulted him, then he would really have lost too much.

"Jing Huan Mountain is indeed a heavenly ground with talented characters. In such a deep mountain, one can find such a supreme sound of the lute. If this Young Noble isn't wrong, then inside must be a peerless beauty."

A palanquin, with a seat made from white clouds, approached from within the rain. Below the seat were paddings of faint mists and on top of it were brightly colored flowers, swaying to the wind. The flute sound inside the carriage was unending and added to the mysterious atmosphere.

The seat made of clouds on top of the palanquin didn't fall down. It was carried by four supreme beauties towards the outside of the tea house.

The cultivation of the person inside the palanquin was exceedingly high. This person exerted a powerful aura that encompassed the surrounding radius of a few zhang. Even the rain and winds couldn't penetrate it.

"This voice…"

Feng Fei Yun felt that the voice of this person was very familiar. So, he slightly glanced to the outside. He saw that it was not just a palanquin with the seat made of clouds and four beautiful women, but in the far distance, there were also countless graceful figures. All of them were young and lovely, like the flowers blooming in the rain. It was a feast for the eyes.

There was only one person in this world that could have so many women following him!

Young Noble Flawless!

Dong Fang Jing Yue was obviously very upset. After all, she almost succeeded in mesmerizing Feng Fei Yun. Only god knew why, half-way through, this Young Noble Flawless appeared. Who on earth was this crazy person appearing at a time like this?

“The sound of the lute from earlier was the most beautiful music I have ever heard in my life. Even our national champion of music would not necessarily be able to compete with Young Miss. This Su Yun has a great gift. I only want to discuss musical principles with you on a sunny day.”

Young Noble Flawless’ hand protruded from the palanquin and signaled once. An elegant girl immediately went over with a silver tray. She then walked into the wooden tea house to place the gift in front of Dong Fang Jing Yue.

To have so many wonderful women following him, Young Noble Flawless must be someone well versed in the hearts of women. Therefore, whenever he took action, it must be extraordinary. It had to be something that Dong Fang Jing Yue couldn’t refuse.

As long as he could personally stay by Dong Fang Jing Yue’s side for one day and one night, he was completely confident to make Dong Fang Jing Yue fall in love with him and only him.

He was absolutely confident about this because he was Young Noble Flawless — perfection without any flaws!

On top of the silver tray was an ancient bamboo slip. It had the words, “Non Mortal Murderous Night”.

The bamboo slip was extremely old — faint and ancient. There were places where insects left their traces, leaving behind tiny holes. They represented its rich history of hundreds of years.

“Non Mortal Murderous Night, isn’t this the heavenly musical manual that the Sacred Spirit Palace lost five hundred years ago? One of the three grand heavenly musical manuals?”

Dong Fang Jing Yue’s elegant brows slightly furrowed. She felt a bit surprised.

She was the descendant of the Yin Gou family, what treasures in this world could she not obtain?

She originally didn’t care about this gift Su Yun offered, but after she saw that it was the musical manual, “Non Mortal Murderous Night”, she couldn’t help but to feel ecstatic inside.

The voice of Young Noble Flawless came again from the outside:

“Earlier, from the sounds of Young Miss, I could faintly hear the rhythms of the Sacred Spirit Palace. Could it be that Young Miss had learned at the Sacred Spirit Palace? Plus, your cultivation is not low either. Could I have said something wrong?”

The beautiful eyes of Dong Fang Jing Yue became even more surprised. This person was so perceptive! Then, she replied:

“You are not wrong.”

“Then it is all good. This ‘Non Mortal Murderous Night’ was accidentally taken by me from a predecessor. It seems like the item will return back to its own.”

Young Noble Flawless eloquently said.

Young Noble Flawless was indeed an expert at picking flowers. Earlier, he said that if Dong Fang Jing Yue was to accept his gift, then she would have to stay with him for one day and one night to discuss musical principles. However, right now, he was using the guise of returning an item to its original owner and left the treasure in the hands of Dong Fang Jing Yue so that she would take the bait.

If Dong Fang Jing Yue accepted it, even if it was an item returning to its original owner, she would also be accepting Young Noble Flawless’ request to accompany him for one day and one night.

If she didn’t accept it… This was a peerless musical manual, and a particularly supreme technique in the cultivational world to boot. It was truly able to make people not willing to let it go.

“Bam!”

Feng Fei Yun immediately waved his Invincible Buddhist Staff and suddenly struck in front of him, breaking the silver tray into many pieces. Of course, the musical manual on the tray was beaten into bamboo dust.

Just like this, a supreme musical manual, one of the three grand heavenly manuals of the heavenly musical repository, was made completely extinct in this world.

This scene caused even Dong Fang Jing Yue to be shocked. Was this damned

Feng Fei Yun crazy? This heavenly item was destroyed by his single staff strike and became dust. This was truly a waste of the heaven's treasure.

"You thug, do you know that your one staff strike just turned the wealth of ten ancient cities into oblivion?"

Dong Fang Jing Yue did not know why Feng Fei Yun was so impulsive.

Feng Fei Yun sat down again. He touched his Invincible Buddhist Staff and vainly chuckled:

"Haha, was it that valuable? Sigh, I didn't know! How about I give you another manual in the future?"

"Hmph! Even with ten reincarnations, you wouldn't be able to buy that bamboo slip. Oh heaven, the Non Mortal Murderous Night just disappeared in this world."

Dong Fang Jing Yue sighed softly. She felt a bit lost on the inside.

Feng Fei Yun didn't feel guilty at all. In fact, it was surprisingly refreshing. He picked up his chair and sat in front of the wooden house's door. Then, he placed his Invincible Buddhist Staff horizontally and domineeringly said:

"Young Noble Flawless, this girl inside the house is already my woman. You shouldn't have any ideas about her. Otherwise…"

"Otherwise what?"

It was as if Young Noble Flawless already knew that Feng Fei Yun was inside. It was just within his expectations.

"Cough cough. Otherwise, I would not let you take a step inside this door."

Feng Fei Yun didn't know why he wanted to be involved in this matter, but he always felt that if Dong Fang Jing Yue became intimate with the pervert Young Noble Flawless, his heart would be very uncomfortable. He definitely would not let something like this happen.

Dong Fang Jing Yue was still sitting next to the window with her white robe covering her body, like a charming immortal goddess. She was a bit interested in Feng Fei Yun's childish behavior, and she understood a little bit in her heart.

Her eyes became bright with some enlightenment. She softly spoke for the first time:

“You can’t stop him, his cultivation is ten times higher than yours.”

The voice of Young Noble Flawless came from under the rain. He closed his eyes in enjoyment and intoxicatingly mumbled:

“The voice is so sweet and pleasant, and capable of carrying a spirit outside of this mundane world. I truly cannot restrain myself any longer. For such a beauty, there is no one in this world that could stop this Su Yun from meeting her.”

At this moment, Feng Fei Yun felt even more uncomfortable. Why did this damned Dong Fang Jing Yue speak at this moment? Wasn’t this the same as deliberately seducing this Young Noble Flawless to commit a crime? Now, it seemed like Feng Fei Yun was the one trying to split apart two lovers.

This depressing feeling was quite complex and made Feng Fei Yun angry and upset. This feeling was hard to explain. It was as if something that belonged to him was being stolen away by someone else right in front of his eyes.

Could it be that he inadvertently already liked this damned Dong Fang Jing Yue? No, this was impossible. Feng Fei Yun began to suppress his emotions.

And while Feng Fei Yun was very depressed, Dong Fang Jing Yue began to speak again as she smiled:

“Young Noble Flawless, you misunderstood. I wanted to say that he truly couldn’t stop you, but if I also joined, then this would not necessarily be the case. Feng Fei Yun, if we join forces, what level would our battle capability be?”

Feng Fei Yun slightly glanced at her and saw her smiling back. He immediately knew that he was played by her earlier, but this was not a problem. This damned grandma had even more personalities than his imagination, causing Feng Fei Yun to be a bit surprised.

“This… If both of us fight together, then it would absolutely be heaven frightening and earth shattering, and capable of causing the gods and devils to be in fear. If god stops our path, slay god; if Buddha stops our path, slay Buddha. Young Noble Flawless, you should know that this will be difficult and you should retreat ahead of time.”

Feng Fei Yun crossed his legs while he sat in his chair. He kept on spinning the Invincible Buddhist Staff in his hand with a satisfied expression. At this moment, if Dong Fang Jing Yue could sit on his lap, it would be perfect. It would absolutely cause this Young Noble Flawless to vomit blood from anger.

However, this was only Feng Fei Yun's thought. With the proud personality of Dong Fang Jing Yue, to be able to say that she would fight alongside Feng Fei Yun under this dire circumstance was her bottom line.

This woman simply wanted to say that they would fight together just to scare Young Noble Flawless away. In the end, Flawless was just too powerful. Even she wouldn't necessarily be able to block ten moves from him. So, she wanted to borrow Feng Fei Yun in order to make Flawless give up.

She naturally heard of Young Noble Flawless' renowned name and was extremely weary of him. On the contrary, this Feng Fei Yun was currently giving her an endearing feeling. This sense of familiarity was a bit inexplicable.

Chapter 83 : Human Lives are as Valueless as Grass

The rain continued to fall like pearls outside of the window, accompanied by the soft sigh of Young Noble Flawless.

Young Noble Flawless — self-proclaimed to be a romantic and extraordinarily handsome. Of course, it would be too shallow to only talk about appearances. How could his fame today only come from his face and extraordinary wealth?

“No woman has ever rejected me in this world.”

He once again sighed, making it three times in a row.

Dong Fang Jing Yue’s expression was still calm, like a beautiful flower, and she said:

“Young Noble Flawless, you are matchless in talents. Even though you are humble, your fame had soon reached the entire cultivation world of the Jin Dynasty. You are known as the nemesis of contemporary beauties — a sentimental yet heartless romantic.”

“You have also heard of my name?”

Young Noble Flawless was a bit cheerful.

“Of course I have heard of it. Your name had already been engraved in the Life and Death List of the Pinnacle Fate Ending Palace. The six big grand powers had combined together to spend a large amount of money as the reward. Your life is very valuable.”

Dong Fang Jing Yue replied.

Feng Fei Yun didn’t expect Young Noble Flawless’ status to be so great. He couldn’t believe that Flawless provoked all six grand powers to want to kill him. It seemed like the lifestyle of this fella was rather bad. Maybe he charmed the wife of a sect master of a big sect, or maybe he slept with the number one wife of a grand clan.

However, the words of this damned grandma Dong Fang Jing Yue couldn’t be completely trusted. She was very clever and cunning. Maybe, these words were

only meant to scare Young Noble Flawless.

The rain became lighter, as light as strands of silk that were mixed with the cold wind, causing the cloud seat of the palanquin to swing back and forth.

Young Noble Flawless was still sitting on the palanquin as he arrogantly laughed:

“Not bad, not bad. My name being engraved in the Life and Death List, this was truly a bit outside of my expectations. However, even though the assassins of the Pinnacle Fate Ending Palace might be strong, not many of them are actually able to kill me. Unless a few ancient gods of death personally take action, I will still be able to play with ten thousand flowers, and ten thousand flowers will wither.”

“Play with ten thousand flowers, and ten thousand flowers will wither! These words are the slogan of this Young Master. I’m afraid Young Noble Flawless does not have such high skills.”

Feng Fei Yun smilingly said.

“Oh! Brother Feng, it seems like you have a big problem with me. Could it be that you want a competition?”

Young Noble Flawless asked.

Feng Fei Yun replied:

“So be it, what will be the method?”

Young Noble Flawless exchanged:

“If Brother Feng claimed to play with ten thousand flowers, and ten thousand flowers will wither, then I will send out six beauties of the water tribe. Their ages will not exceed sixteen and they will all have superb talents and looks. If you can turn them into withered flowers, then I will believe you.”

He gently swished his sleeve and six slender blue shadows flew out from the rain. They seemed to melt within the water; they held slender silver chains with the movements of sword auras.

The silver chain was as thin as a needle, but one lash was enough to split a ten meter long fish into halves.

Feng Fei Yun had already experienced the power of the young women around Young Noble Flawless. Each and every one of them was ferocious and a hard-to-deal with character. At this moment, the combination of the six girls from the water tribe was extraordinarily brutal, sending killing intent everywhere.

The six were sexy and charming. Their bodies only wore a small low-cut blue scaled robe, revealing half of their twin peaks, teasing others.

Their legs were exceptionally slender and long. They were delicate and jade like, and filled with flexibility and elasticity.

The raindrops dripped down from their white skin. With the fragrances and their body temperatures, it caused Feng Fei Yun's entire body to be encompassed by their sweet allures.

"Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!"

But at this moment, Feng Fei Yun was not allowed to admire the flowery scene before him. The six silver chains were like six poisonous vipers that carried spirit lights along with murderous intents. It were truly fierce and ruthless, causing the space to be covered without a single gap.

"Whoosh!"

Feng Fei Yun shuttled between the six water tribe girls. His footsteps rapidly transformed and suddenly, he let off a palm, causing the clothes of one of the cute girls to be shattered, revealing the snow-white flesh underneath.

This scene truly could make others blind and be lost in a daze!

If it was someone else, at this moment, they would no longer have the will to fight. They would have held this girl and have the urge to press her down and have a grand battle of three hundred rounds.

Even though Feng Fei Yun's willpower was strong, but at this moment, he was also affected; his battle power was lessened.

This could be the result that Young Noble Flawless wanted to see.

'Women should fight against women. A man like Feng Fei Yun mixing with women, his heart must be in panic.'

Dong Fang Jing Yue knew that if Feng Fei Yun continued to fight, he would

reveal his awkward appearance. At that moment, if the six water tribe sexy girls took the initiative to take off their clothes, then this perverted guy would directly throw away his armor and weapon. Then, it would affect the morale.

She was not very confident in Feng Fei Yun and decided to take action herself.

“Shuaaa!”

The sound of the lute appeared and created thunders that covered the sky, freezing all of the surrounding rain. Then, it turned them into blades of ice and screamingly rushed forward.

The killing song of Dong Fang Jing Yue was quite powerful. Feng Fei Yun was afraid of being hurt, so he immediately retreated and flew back into the tea house.

‘This damned grandma clearly didn’t trust me and had no confidence in me.’

Feng Fei Yun angrily glanced at Dong Fang Jing Yue. Even though he was indeed a bit lustful earlier, but ask oneself this: to be surrounded by six stunning beauties and buried beneath the fragrant sea, how could any man’s blood not boil?

This was human nature! Only a eunuch would be calm under this kind of scenario.

However, Feng Fei Yun only glanced at the white flesh in front of that girl’s chest a few times and Dong Fang Jing Yue already noticed the situation and swapped with him. It was as if she was afraid that he would become perverted and lose in the hands of the six girls.

The lute melodies of Dong Fang Jing Yue shook the mountains, causing the winds to fly and the rain to condense into a surge of chilling murderous cloudy aura in the air.

“Boom!”

The sound waves were mighty and filled with killing urges. They quickly minced the dust and mud on the ground, dicing the six iron chains in the hands of the six water tribe girls into hundreds of pieces and struck them flying away.

“Bang, bang…”

The six girls with high cultivations all bumped into the maple trees, breaking them down. They were all covered by the leafs and had blood dripping down their bodies.

The six stunning beauties became six bloodied humans, and they couldn't stop shivering on the ground. Their smooth white skins were completely minced without exception.

"Cough!"

They were all coughing blood and couldn't stand up from the ground.

Could sweat broke out on Feng Fei Yun's forehead as he carefully looked at Dong Fang Jing Yue, who was very nonchalant. He lamented that this damned grandma was too ruthless. Sure enough, women were always vicious against other women.

Especially beauties against other beauties. They would definitely be ruthless without emotions.

The rain kept on pouring down on top of the six water tribe girls. Because their skins were completely minced, under the curtain of the rain falling down, it was no different than pouring salt over their bodies, causing them to tremble even more as they started to weakly whimper.

However, the only thing they could do were to roll up their bodies and nested within the leaves. They essentially couldn't stand up. It was apparent that Dong Fang Jing Yue's melody gravely wounded all of them.

Even Feng Fei Yun found this a bit unbearable, but Young Noble Flawless and the other girls only watched from afar. None of them came to help these girls, or to apply medicine for them, or even help them stand up and cover them with umbrellas.

This was truly too cruel.

Feng Fei Yun couldn't watch this and said:

"Is Young Noble Flawless so heartless that he would even ignore girls that had followed you?"

"The beauties in this world are like the renowned generals; we shouldn't let

these beauties see old age. Beauties will fade away one day, and at that moment, they will no longer be beauties, and no longer have the qualifications to stand by my side. If they are already withered, then let earth return to the earth and ashes return to ashes."

The voice of Young Noble Flawless was very calm. It was apparent that this was his truth. Yu Er, who was standing next to the palanquin, also said:

"There are only beauties next to my Young Noble from the past till now. At this moment, they have been disfigured under the melody and are no longer beauties, so they are not qualified to follow my master any longer."

Feng Fei Yun wanted to say something else, but he stopped. After all, even the women were saying these words, so even if he interjected, it would only be redundant.

He looked towards the maple trees again. The six exquisite beauties were now bloody messes and soaked in the rain. They were dying while all of their prosperity and glory were leaving them.

Perhaps, before today was over, they would die in this scene under the leaves falling from the sky and be eaten by wild dogs, leaving behind only the bones and messy hair.

Beauties will always have unfortunate lives. Even the most beautiful would always become partners with the earth — no one could help them. This was their choice and this was the result.

The lives of women were as valueless as grass, but wasn't it even worse for the lives of men? If Feng Fei Yun didn't have enough strength to force Young Noble Flawless back today, then his death might be even worse.

There is no need to pity other people. First, one should pity themselves.

Chapter 84 : Beautiful Fairy

Feng Fei Yun's will was very strong. Outside of romance, he had seen many things, so he calmly sat back, as if he became a statue.

"Your lute is not only beautiful, but also able to kill. I am a bit unable to restrain my emotions and want to personally test two moves with Young Miss."

Finished speaking, Young Noble Flawless immediately took action. A human shaped translucent shadow appeared on top of the palanquin. Like a giant wielding a large axe, it had battle armor on and had eyes like thunder.

Even though this was just a humanoid shadow, its battle intent was extremely tough. With one stomp on the ground, cracks immediately appeared.

Feng Fei Yun immediately felt a great impact from an invisible power from the front. It almost knocked him far away. This power was too formidable.

"Boom!"

He immediately stood up and slammed the Invincible Buddhist Staff into the ground, turning it into a godly pillar, and together with his body, he was able to hold his ground.

Two snow-white fingers from the palanquin protruded out, holding a jade talisman, and waved it in the air. The axe-wielding shadow suddenly swung his axe straight down to the ground.

"Bam!"

Even though the giant axe was simply a shadow, it was able to split the entire tea house into two. The walls collapsed and the windows were shattered. Even the ground was left with a huge crack around seven zhang long and three feet deep.

There were so many broken wood debris on the ground and countless energy waves that issued howling sounds that it caused an ear-piercing pain.

Dong Fang Jing Yue's white feathered wings appeared without any blemishes and the white robe on her body fluttered under the cold wind. She became even

more charming.

She flew in the sky and her fingers danced along her lute. Then, she gently flicked once.

“Swish!”

The Soul Assassin Tune flew out with a sound wave that pierced the air, turning the giant axe in the hand of the shadow into smoke.

The real fight had begun. The opponent, this time, was Young Noble Flawless. According to what Dong Fang Jing Yue said, this person entered the world of cultivation at the age of sixteen and had been famous for twenty years. Even though he was almost forty, his appearance was like a twenty year old man, and his cultivation was extremely frightening and difficult to deal with.

Even with Dong Fang Jing Yue’s cultivation, at best, she could only take ten of his moves under the best circumstances.

“Bang, bang!”

The jade talisman in Young Noble Flawless’ hand released a white light and it weaved together into a round disc.

The body of the shadow became more realistic and the battle armor on its body emitted a blue light. It was like a true god had come into being.

Feng Fei Yun’s eyes were sharp and found a bit of a clue.

The Invincible Buddhist Staff in his hand was used as a giant brush and he engraved a circular disc that was exactly the same as the jade talisman in Young Noble Flawless’ hand.

This was a puppet formation of the Feng family. Only Wisdom Masters or Blacksmith Masters were able to engrave something like this. In order to give it the maximum amount of power, even a fifth rank Wisdom Master would need six hours.

However, earlier, Feng Fei Yun only needed one glance before engraving it on the ground. With more than hundreds of different magical lines, the laws and profound truths were extremely mysterious. It was to the point where even Young Noble Flawless himself would find it impossible to do.

“Formidable!”

This was the first time Young Noble Flawless’ tone changed. He was surprised by Feng Fei Yun’s formation engraving abilities. Could it be that this little brat was hiding his cultivation?

Feng Fei Yun’s entire focus was on the formation marks. He pointed his finger into the middle and softly screamed:

“Reverse!”

The round circular formation on the ground started to spin and emitted a light towards the nine zhang tall shadow. The shadow suddenly turned around, roared, and went towards Young Noble Flawless to kill.

“Bam!”

Young Noble Flawless coldly snorted and crushed the jade talisman in his hand. He stretched his palm towards the front and unleashed a palm strike amidst the void. An invisible slaughtering power crushed the giant shadow.

“Rumble!”

Two lights flew out from the palanquin and headed straight for the sky. A giant palm from the horizon came crushing down and caught Dong Fang Jing Yue, who was hovering in the sky. Her white wings were immediately torn apart and her veil was also removed by the wind that blew towards the cloud palanquin.

“Poof!”

Dong Fang Jing Yue’s glistening lips spat out a mouthful of blood. She had an astonished look in her eyes. She couldn’t believe that Young Noble Flawless’ cultivation suddenly changed and was able to knock her down from the clouds with just one move.

Feng Fei Yun’s expression also became serious at this moment. The palm from earlier was dozens of meters wide, like a small mountain with a pressure capable of suffocating others.

Young Noble Flawless’ cultivation was on the same level as the eighth elder, or maybe even higher.

Feng Fei Yun was a person who didn’t want to accept defeat. If it came down

to it, he would use the fourth rank ancient pill that Monk Jiu Rou gave him and directly unleash the power of half a Ju Qing, one punch with the power of millions of jin.

No matter how strong Young Noble Flawless may be, he was not at the rank of Ju Qing. After eating this ancient pill, Feng Fei Yun would definitely be able to knock out all of his teeth to the ground without any difficulties.

However, there was only one fourth rank ancient pill, and it was extremely precious. Unless it was a life and death crisis, Feng Fei Yun would definitely not use it.

Young Noble Flawless gently caught the veil cloth, and slowly sniffed it, and became drunk with an inexplicable feeling. After a while, he took a deep breath and said:

“So sweet!”

Young Noble Flawless had seen many great beauties, including many saintesses from the immortal sects and talented young misses of the big clans, but when he saw Dong Fang Jing Yue’s face for the first time, it was difficult to look away.

This type of beauty shocked him to the core and gave him the feeling that his life was worth living. How could there be such a beautiful woman in this world?

This type of beauty was surreal!

Young Noble Flawless was a playboy, a romantic, a person who didn’t care for feelings yet possessed many hearts. He believed that he had been long immune to the charms of women; even if he saw goddesses in heaven, he still wouldn’t be moved by them.

However, at this moment, his heart was beating chaotically, like a rampaging ancient Qilin.

Who was this woman? Was she a woman from the He family? No, she was not a woman, but an immortal fairy!

No one had ever impacted him so much. He almost lost his sanity. The moment his mind came back, his heart had no way to ever forget this face, this person,

this woman.

He swore with his heart that even if he had to abandon all of his wealth — all of his women, as long as she would give him one glance, that would be enough.

This feeling became more and more powerful, until he was no longer able to control himself.

However, the slender figure of Dong Fang Jing Yue was slightly slanted as she hugged her lute. Her celestial eyes only looked at the distant mountains in the rain and didn't bother to give him a single glance.

Silence, silence, and even more silence!

The sound of the rain permeated the air even more. The raindrops falling on the leaves emanated "tick tack" sounds.

The beauties present were all peerless beauties with extreme elegance, but after the veil of Dong Fang Jing Yue fell down, their expressions became pale and very mediocre.

A crane amongst a flock of chicken, the bright moon amidst the empty sky — these were the expressions to describe this moment for Dong Fang Jing Yue.

Feng Fei Yun naturally knew that there was no man in this world who could resist the beauty of Dong Fang Jing Yue, just like Shui Yue Ting that year. Even he who was a phoenix Patriarch became infatuated after just one glance.

Dong Fang Jing Yue and Shui Yue Ting were so similar, they were practically the same type of people.

Not mentioning Young Noble Flawless, even the reincarnation of Buddha would still grovel beneath her skirt!

"This is big trouble now!"

Feng Fei Yun said.

Chapter 85 : Dong Fang Jing Shui

At this moment, Young Noble Flawless' heart no longer belonged to him. A lifetime of playing with women's hearts, a lifetime of godly talents, all of this has lost to the beauty of Dong Fang Jing Yue.

"What is your name?"

A long time later, Young Noble Flawless started to speak.

No one answered him!

At the end of the day, Dong Fang Jing Yue stared at the rain and didn't have any positive sentiments towards Young Noble Flawless. Naturally, she didn't want to say a word.

The white curtain of the palanquin was finally lifted, and Young Noble Flawless made his appearance. This was the first time he showed himself, and also the first time Feng Fei Yun had seen his figure.

He was indeed an extraordinarily handsome man and carried a refined and gentle temperament. Strictly with regards to aesthetic appeal, only Feng Jian Xue in a man's disguise that day could compare to him.

However, when Feng Jian Xue was pretending to be a man, she was more flirtatious and feminine. It was very different from the masculinity of Young Noble Flawless.

Young Noble Flawless was, indeed, without flaws. Each button on his clothes was quite intricate, and each action was filled with beauty, not leaving half of a defect.

When a man could maintain such perfection and was also as rich as a nation with peerless cultivation, as long as it was a woman, then they couldn't refuse him.

Feng Fei Yun had been watching him and secretly nodded. This Young Noble Flawless was not something every man could reach. It even made him feel a bit insecure.

Young Noble Flawless gently waved his finger, outlining a curvy outline. The talented girl, Yun Er, who was standing behind him, stepped forward.

Yun Er was around seventeen. She was at the pinnacle of youth. Both elegant and gentle, she was gifted, especially with regards to the art of painting.

“Feng Fei Yun, if you tell me her name, I will gift this girl to you.”

Young Noble Flawless pointed at Yun Er with a very serious attitude. No one could question the validity of his statement.

Yun Er stood between the two men. Even though she herself was a talented woman with the cultivation of the elder rank and possessed country and nation toppling beauty, at the moment, she was merely an item.

She had no complaints. Only, her pair of bright eyes quickly dimmed down.

She knew that she didn’t have any weight in Young Noble Flawless’ heart. She was not even equal to Dong Fang Jing Yue’s name, and she was simply nothing in his heart. She know that, at this moment, there was only Dong Fang Jing Yue in his heart.

Feng Fei Yun laughed and shook his head. With a little presumptuous air, it was as if he was laughing at the ignorance of Young Noble Flawless.

Young Noble Flawless continued to be extremely serious:

“Yun Er’s name is Ji Yun Yun, the favorite daughter of the Ji family’s clan master from the Godly Tiger Region. If you marry her, then you will become the son-in-law of the Ji family. Your future will be bright. If you could have the Ji family as your backing, then the Feng pursuers would be dreary and stop their chase.”

“Plus, Yun Er had only followed me for three months. I had not even touched her fingers so her body is absolutely pure.”

Young Noble Flawless seemed afraid that Feng Fei Yun wouldn’t speak, so he made Yun Er’s origin clear.

Feng Fei Yun naturally had heard of the the name of the Ji family from the Godly Tiger Region. This was an ancient heritage for more than one thousand year. Its power was no less than the Feng family. They were a tyrant of one

direction in the Grand Southern Prefecture.

Feng Fei Yun shook his head and continued to laugh.

Young Noble Flawless was still very serious and waved his hand again. From rain came two twins with identical looks. There was no spot on their bodies that weren't beautiful. Anywhere they went, they would immediately be renowned.

They had soft and white skin, no different from milk. Such young beauties at such a ripe age were even better than immortals.

"Sisters of the Lin family, the two favorite disciples of the fourth elder of the Grand Development Immortal Gate. Their cultivations are at the early God Base and have exceedingly high aptitude. They are enough to be in the top five within the younger generation of the gate. They are also virgins and have unquestionable purity — I will also gift them to you. Now, can you tell me the name of the young miss?"

With solemn eyes and friendliness, Young Noble Flawless also sent the two twins over to Feng Fei Yun.

Feng Fei Yun finally couldn't stand it and started to smilingly speak:

"Ji Yun Yun, and the two sisters from the Lin family are indeed contemporary beauties. Even to the heroes of one direction, just to have some affection from any of these girls, they would be willing to even lose their lives. However… the woman behind me is also very fierce. Even if I wanted to give her name to you, I'm afraid I wouldn't even be able to open my mouth before she kills me with her palm."

"This damned Feng Fei Yun is not wrong. Young Noble Flawless, don't waste your time anymore. If you don't retreat, then there will be someone here to beat you away."

Dong Fang Jing Yue released a bright light from her hand. It flew towards the horizon like a shooting star.

This was a communication tool, a Jade Flying Talisman. Dong Fang Jing Yue had sent out a message. She clearly wanted to inform a certain someone.

The Yin Gou family was one of the four royal families of the Jin Dynasty. They

were definitely powerful and had as many experts as the carps in the Yangtze river. Since such a big matter happened in Jing Huan Mountain, of course the experts from the Yin Gou family also came.

Even though Young Noble Flawless saw the Jade Flying Talisman leaving in the air, he was still relaxed and had no intention of leaving.

“There are not many people in this world that could chase me away. Who did you inform? Do they carry enough power?”

Young Noble Flawless said.

Feng Fei Yun was also curious about this matter. Young Noble Flawless was truly formidable. Only talents at the same level as the eighth elder of the Feng family could have the qualifications to compete with him. Even though the experts of the Yin Gou family were numerous, those who reached the level of the eighth elder wouldn’t be many.

In the end, who did Dong Fang Jing Yue message to stop a master like Young Noble Flawless?

“If he comes, then the two of you will have an earth shattering fight.”

The beautiful eyes of Dong Fang Jing Yue observed the sky and a glint of happiness flashed from within:

“He is here!”

“Rumble!”

An evil black light came from the far mountain towards this direction, like the black clouds dancing in the sky.

A source of killing intent surged in the air. Even though it was still ten thousand miles away, it made others feel like there was a heavenly army approaching.

This was absolutely a master.

Dong Fang Jing Shui stood on a twenty feet tall black cloud and stared at the far distance. The whole world was within his gaze. In the forest, his little sister was standing alone in the rain, looking towards his direction.

He wore a soft armor made from rhinoceros skin and had an outer coat made

from a white fox that wasn't tainted by any imperfections. A crimson robe was draped over his shoulders, fluttering with the wind.

The wind screamed a cold chill that permeated straight to the point, but it did not freeze his voluminous heart.

He was the big brother of Dong Fang Jing Yue, one of the Eight Grand Historical Geniuses of the Jin Dynasty, the number one expert of the Yin Gou younger generation. At eight years old, he could carry a giant cauldron; at ten years old, he started his Dao; at twelve years old, he began to cultivate the evil art; and at fourteen years old, his techniques reached grand completion and were filled with deadly evil energy. From then on, he was always victorious and never tasted defeat.

Dong Fang Jing Shui's arrival made Young Noble Flawless feel a great pressure. This pressure, along with the auras of two similarly ranked masters, collided. Even though they haven't fought, these two pressures were already fighting and killing each other.

Feng Fei Yun inched closer to Dong Fang Jing Yue. Seeing the godly man filled with an evil aura in the clouds, he asked:

"Where did you find such a ferocious man? I can feel the evil aura on his body along with the dense killing intent. Without cutting down the heads of one thousand people, he wouldn't be able to have such powerful killing intent."

The evil aura surrounding Dong Fang Jing Shui's body was also densely packed with killing intent, occupying the air. His gaze was enough to frighten a coward to death.

Plus, Feng Fei Yun could also see a qi image from his body, the "Nine Five Supreme Physique".

The breaths of the golden dragons and golden tigers that entangled in the air on top of his head were continuously roaring and turned into the aura of a king. This was the power of the Nine Five Supreme Physique. It could completely suppress any lesser qi image, like a king ruling his subjects.

"He is my big brother!"

Dong Fang Jing Yue said.

“Your brother? Could it be that water kettle head fella?”

Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng, of the Ancient Jiang tribe, had written a letter for Feng Fei Yun to give Dong Fang Jing Yue’s brother at Violet Firmament Ancient City. This was so that he could resolve the grievances between the two.

However, back then, Jing Feng misunderstood that Dong Fang Jing Yue was chasing Fei Yun because she was in love with him, so he had already sent a Jade Flying Talisman to Dong Fang Jing Shui.

Because Feng Fei Yun lied and didn’t tell the truth, naturally, he didn’t dare to go find Dong Fang Jing Yue’s brother and the letter had always been stored on his body. If her brother didn’t suddenly appear now, then he would have forgotten about this matter entirely.

“It is Dong Fang Jing Shui, not a water kettle head. You should watch your mouth before him. Otherwise, he’ll slap your head away like a smashed watermelon.”

Dong Fang Jing Yue grumpily said.

Feng Fei Yun also noticed that Dong Fang Jing Shui was extraordinarily devilish. He was absolutely not a nice person. At the same time, Dong Fang Jing Shui, who was standing on top of the clouds, suddenly gazed at Feng Fei Yun.

It was only a glance!

“Boom!”

Feng Fei Yun felt as if there was a thunder resounding inside his brain. It felt like his brain was shattered, causing him to be in a daze as he almost passed out on the floor.

Dong Fang Jing Shui gently nodded and devilishly smiled:

“This must be the little brat that Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng mentioned… Hmm… This vision is not too bad. First kill, then I’ll deal with this matter later. Gotta help the family before helping strangers. If little sis likes this man, then how could he escape? I could cut off his two legs, then carry him to Dragon Lake and make them have a wedding ceremony there!”

Because he stood in the clouds and the whistles of the winds and rains

submerged his words, no one could hear his muttering.

Dong Fang Jing Shui's eyes were filled with the lust for battle, as well as a sense of happiness.

If Feng Fei Yun knew the thoughts of this Grand Historical Genius, he would vomit blood and curse that this fella was indeed a water kettle head.

Chapter 86 : The Showdown of Grand Historical Geniuses

Dong Fang Jing Shui was just like an evil god. The evil aura of this guy was very heavy. His eyebrows were like reversed sword. He had heroic and fierce features, yet they didn't cloud his handsomeness. A heroic and evil presence wandered around his body, forming the dark clouds.

His crimson blood-like robe continuously fluttered. It was very easy on the eyes.

There were wrinkles on Young Noble Flawless' forehead. Naturally, he recognized the person who had just arrived.

An extraordinary man like Dong Fang Jing Shui would be full of momentum no matter where he went. Even people who had never seen him before would have heard of his name and would be able to immediately recognize him with just one glance.

"One of the Eight Grand Historical Geniuses of the godly Jin Dynasty, Dong Fang Jing Shui!"

Young Noble Flawless gently took a step back and his brilliant eyes stared straight into the tiger eyes of Dong Fang Jing Shui. Then, he continued:

"The dual cultivation of Evil and Dao, and you self-created the "Evil Dao Grand Physique", you are indeed extraordinary."

Young Noble Flawless smiled. Even though he was a bit more cautious, this did not mean that he was afraid.

"A Grand Historical Genius of the godly Jin Dynasty, Young Noble Flawless! You are the royal prince of the Po Luo Country who was able to cultivate the supreme secret "White Dragon Sacred Sword" of the royal family?"

Dong Fang Jing Shui was still standing on the clouds as he observed below. He clasped his two fists while his armor was exuding blinding lights.

Feng Fei Yun suddenly realized: no wonder why they were so arrogant, both of

them were geniuses part of the Eight Grand Historical Geniuses of the Jin Dynasty, the kings of the young generation. They had never tasted defeat and even competed with the high heaven.

However, wasn't Young Noble Flawless a prince of the Po Luo Country? Why was he considered one of the eight in the Jin Dynasty?

Dong Fang Jing Yue seemingly noticed the question in Feng Fei Yun's mind, so she spoke:

"The Jin Dynasty is a huge nation with an endless amount of territory and billions of people. Po Luo Country is a small nation next to the frontier of the Jin Dynasty, a vassal country so to speak. Young Noble Flawless has immaculate talent and never lost before, so the Wan Xiang Pagoda listed him as a genius of the Grand Historical rank for the Jin Dynasty."

There were many small nations that were vassals to the Jin Dynasty. Feng Fei Yun had read the "Geography of the Jin Dynasty" before. He knew that there were many small nations around the dynasty. Even just the vassal nations numbered in the three hundreds. Po Luo Country must be a fairly large one within these hundreds.

He really was a prince, no wonder why he was so slutty like this!

Feng Fei Yun and Dong Fang Jing Yue both retreated very far away because they knew that the two Grand Historical Geniuses would have a battle today. At that time, heaven and earth will fall apart and the mountains and rivers shall collapse. If they stood too close, then they would die without a grave.

They were both amazing figures. Feng Fei Yun admitted that even if he cultivated the Immortal Phoenix Physique, he couldn't catch up to them within three years.

In the end, they were both super geniuses and began to cultivate at a young age with the best methods. Feng Fei Yun started way too late. He only began a few months earlier, how could he compete with someone who had practiced hard for dozen of years?

Between geniuses, the one who had the most time and most effort would be the reigning king.

Even though Dong Fang Jing Yue's cultivation would allow for her to stand closer, she still felt that it would be wiser to follow Feng Fei Yun and retreat a few dozen miles in Jing Huan Mountain. They stood on top of a peak and watched from afar.

"Boom!"

A thunder came down from the sky, causing an extremely loud sound like two heavenly metals colliding with each other. The noise caused the eardrums to sting.

There was sword energy in the shape of a dragon fighting against the pitch black thunder. Their battle caused the rain and wind to stop, and the world became dark from the pressure.

The sounds of thunder continued as the loud sword followed while screeching through the winds!

"Thump thump!"

The earth began to shake. Even though they were standing dozen of miles away, they could still feel their bodies shaking.

These two were indeed two crazy psychopaths. Their fight darkened the sky, like two dragon tornados flying in the air. Each of their collisions unleashed endless amounts of murdering lights.

The fight had went on for two hours without stop, but it became even more terrorizing. It turned the ground into scorched earth and they flattened a nearby mountain. The trees and grass were crushed into powders, and only the yellow earth remained on the ground.

Feng Fei Yun felt his will to battle surge. This was the fight between two kings of the younger generation. Even though it was happening in the depths of the mountains, in the near future, this news would spread.

A fight between two geniuses of the Grand Historical rank would shock the world and become the main topic of discussion in the Jin Dynasty. They were already the two pedestals of the cultivation world and were considered targets. Many hoped to fight them in order to be renowned throughout the world.

Right now, Feng Fei Yun was witnessing this fight and his entire body was boiling. If it wasn't for the big gap in cultivation, he would want to rush in and fight against the two kings of the younger generation.

At this moment, Feng Fei Yun could only be considered a small character. There was absolutely no way to compete with the two Grand Historical Geniuses.

Dong Fang Jing Yue said:

"With your innate talent, if you practice for twenty more years, then you will be able to reach their current level."

She simply said it was to reach their current level. However, twenty years later, the cultivation of these two geniuses would be even more unfathomable.

From her words, she was implying that Feng Fei Yun was not comparable to these two men.

In reality, in the past, this was not a possible matter. One couldn't blame her for looking down on Feng Fei Yun. On the contrary, she felt like she was consoling him.

This was because, twenty years later, if Feng Fei Yun could actually reach the level of Young Noble Flawless and Dong Fang Jing Shui, then he would also be considered a Grand Historical Genius.

Feng Fei Yun shook his head and replied:

"Within five years, I will be able to compete with them. At that moment, I will trample all Grand Historical Geniuses beneath my feet. I will fly to the high heaven and fight against Ju Qings."

On the road of cultivation, there will be many powerful enemies so one couldn't be afraid of challenges. One had to fight and pave their own way to claim a position that belonged just to himself in this world filled with masters. This was the only way to walk faster than others on this road. Feng Fei Yun knew this logic very clearly.

Five years was not long or short. However, from Dong Fang Jing Yue's perspective, him wanting to reach the Grand Historical level within five years was

just simply daydreaming, so she didn't believe him at all.

"Dong Fang Jing Yue, I have to apologize to you here."

Feng Fei Yun contemplated for a long time before being able to say these words.

For a man to apologize to a woman, this was not an easy matter.

Dong Fang Jing Yue's jade eyes became slightly foggy and she felt a bit surprised, as if she had just heard the most incredible phrase. In the end, she couldn't help but laugh out loud:

"After seeing the invisible and matchless power of my big brother, you finally want to admit you're wrong? You are truly a spineless man!"

Feng Fei Yun coldly snorted:

"My apology has shit to do with your brother. Before, I thought you came to the Feng family and informed the clan master so I called you a "bitch". This was indeed because I misunderstood, and I'm only apologizing to you about this. As for our grievances from before, we are still not finished. How laughable! This might be hard on your ears, but even if your brother truly made a move, he wouldn't necessarily be able to do anything to me."

Feng Fei Yun was a person who was fair with his grievances. This damned Dong Fang Jing Yue might be insufferable, but she was indeed a girl who knew right from wrong. A misunderstanding was just a misunderstanding, just saying sorry to her wouldn't hurt.

However, that dog shit great sage who went to the Feng family to speak nonsense truly made Feng Fei Yun angry. If he knew who this great sage was, he had better not meet him. Otherwise, he would slap his face slanted, twice.

Dong Fang Jing Yue, once again, saw another side of Feng Fei Yun. She smiled and said:

"A great man should be forgiven. Feng Fei Yun, if you join our Yin Gou family and become my subordinate, then our grievances will all be erased and you will be protected and cultivated by our family. Our family does not turn away any geniuses, no matter who they might be."

Dong Fang Jing Yue valued Feng Fei Yun highly ever since their first meeting. If it wasn't for a few misunderstandings, their relationship wouldn't have been so stiff.

At this moment, when Feng Fei Yun conceded first, this allowed for Dong Fang Jing Yue to also step down. Therefore, she once again wanted to recruit him. However, her feelings were a bit different this time, as if it was mixed with some other emotion.

There was a hint of anticipation and excitement in Dong Fang Jing Yue's eyes, but it was very well hidden and unable to be seen.

"Young Miss Dong Fang is indeed someone who is very benevolent. There is no woman in this world that can compare to you. However, I, Feng Fei Yun, is not someone who wants to be dependent on someone else. My future road will be paved by my own feet. In the future, if we meet again, I hope we will not be shouting and wanting to kill each other. At the very least, we could sit down together and have a cup of tea."

Seeing the fight at the apex between Dong Fang Jing Shui and Young Noble Flawless, Feng Fei Yun was extremely stimulated. He decided that, after bringing the Na Lan Buddhist Robe and Buddhist Jade Bead to Monk Jiu Rou, he would immediately leave Jing Huan Mountain to cultivate in isolation. Until he was satisfied with his cultivation, he would not leave.

Cultivation was the answer to everything. Feng Fei Yun strongly felt that he was lacking power at the moment. Without the power of the Invincible Buddhist Staff, he could only be considered an intermediate Immortal Foundation cultivator. He essentially would be unable to fight against a true expert.

Dong Fang Jing Yue's eyes flashed a glimmer of disappointment, but her beautiful face smiled instead:

"So in your heart, I am thought of so highly. The truth is, I always had one thing that I wanted to ask you about. Who was Shui Yue Ting to you? And is she truly that similar to me? To the point of causing you to think that I was her, twice."

Feng Fei Yun's heart felt as if it was stabbed by a knife. He clenched his fists tightly and gritted his teeth. Then, he said:

“The most beautiful, most toxic, most powerful woman in this world. She is also my mortal enemy. Only when I kill her with my sword would my Dao foundation be without defects, and I would be able to reach the apex of the cultivation path.”

“But I feel that, in the end, you wouldn’t be able to kill her because when you thought I was her, you still didn’t finish me off. Then, how could you kill her?”

Dong Fang Jing Yue was a very smart woman. She knew that Feng Fei Yun’s heart did not only have hatred towards Shui Yue Ting.

However, she also felt jealousy in her heart. It turned out that, from beginning to end, she was only a shadow of another woman.

Feng Fei Yun turned her into Shui Yue Ting, so he opposed her; Feng Fei Yun turned her into Shui Yue Ting, so he saved her in the Mortal Life Cavern; Feng Fei Yun turned her into Shui Yue Ting, so he didn’t mind becoming enemies with Young Noble Flawless.

One person, one shadow.

Feng Fei Yun didn’t answer her question. Maybe he couldn’t answer it at this moment, or maybe he was evading the issue. He turned around and left towards the depths of Jing Huan Mountain, where the Mortal Life Cavern was located.

His back was full of energy and had a new aura that had never been present before. It was as if he would never return and never be seen again.

“Feng Fei Yun, if, one day, you arrived at a dead end, you can come to the Godly Capital to find me. Dragon Lake spans three thousand miles, the White Jade represents the Yin Gou!”

Dong Fang Jing Yue watched as Feng Fei Yun departed. She was not the least bit happy and instead filled with a faint sense of loss.

She didn’t understand this feeling without reasons. Many years later, she finally found out that it was a surge of emotion, muddled emotion!

Feng Fei Yun finally disappeared behind the mountains, and it was unknown whether he heard her or not.

Chapter 87 : Who Secretly Informed?

Dong Fang Jing Yue stood alone at the top of the peak. She watched the rain covering the sky without moving for a long time.

“Boom!”

A group of clouds came down, and the darkness dispersed from the sky. Dong Fang Jing Shui, with his armor and scarlet mantle, was standing next to her.

He was still arrogant and devilishly awe-inspiring!

He rattled his fists with his steel-like arms and tiger eyes, he seemingly wanted to pierce through others’ hearts. Even though he was standing on the ground, it felt like he was a pillar planted on the peak — eternal for ten thousand years.

“Victory or defeat?”

Dong Fang Jing Yue accepted the white veil from her big brother and covered her supremely beautiful features that were capable of toppling countries and cities.

This veil was taken back by Dong Fang Jing Shui from Young Noble Flawless’ hands.

The “White Dragon Heavenly Sword” of Su Yun had reached the sixth level and his sword energy could turn into dragons. Earlier, we fought for more than seven hundred rounds yet couldn’t determine the victor.”

Dong Fang Jing Shui stood straight while arching his chest. The battle aura on his body did not completely disappear. He spoke again:

“We both felt that there was a huge change in Jing Huan Mountain, so we both stopped. Many ultimate arts were not used. If the time and location permits it, then after eight thousand rounds, the victor can be decided.”

Dong Fang Jing Yue replied:

“I can’t believe this pervert is so strong. The ultimate art of Po Luo Country’s royal family was indeed worthy of its pride. To be able to reach the sixth level of

the White Dragon Heavenly Sword, he must have been directly taught by an extremely powerful Ju Qing of Po Luo Country.”

“This extremely powerful Ju Qing is a character in the legends, he might have fallen already. The rumors in the legends aren’t always true.”

Dong Fang Jing Shui gazed at all directions, between the gaps of mountains and rivers, as if he was searching for someone.

He looked everywhere, but he couldn’t find any traces of the person.

“Where is Feng Fei Yun?”

Even though Dong Fang Jing Shui’s evil aura was boiling, at this moment, he was smiling. In front of the little sister that he loved the most, he was always a lot more meek and obedient.

Dong Fang Jing Yue was surprised:

“How did Big Brother know his name was Feng Fei Yun?”

Dong Fang Jing Shui took out a Flying Jade Talisman from his chest pocket and said:

“Not long ago, Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng sent me a message and told me everything that happened between you guys. He told me to mediate between the two of you.”

He also wanted to add:

“Why do you think so highly of this brat?”

But he swallowed his words because his little sister’s eyes were above the world. She naturally couldn’t be wrong.

“I can’t believe that damned old man was interfering in others’ business.”

Dong Fang Jing Yue bit her teeth and angrily glared at her big brother as she asked:

“Will Big Brother help him or help me?”

Dong Fang Jing Shui, seeing his little sister’s expression, thought that she was angry as well as shy. Thus, he was even more certain that the words of Grand Wisdom Master Jing Feng were correct. It seemed like his little sister, who was

normally like a glacier, really had a lover.

“I naturally will stand by little sis’ side.”

Dong Fang Jing Shui replied.

Dong Fang Jing Yue said:

“Very well, Big Brother has to go and bring him back here for me, right now. I have to bring him back to the Godly Capital’s Dragon Lake and put him into the prison. I will use eighteen punishments to torture him in order to appease the grievances in my heart.”

Dong Fang Jing Shui broke out in laughter. He knew that his sister was very thin-skinned and couldn’t easily admit that she had a lover which was why she used such a harsh tone.

“Isn’t that a bit too cruel? If a woman is too fierce, it would normally scare the man away.”

Dong Fang Jing Shui sighed.

“He dares to run away?”

Dong Fang Jing Yue angrily exclaimed.

“With my little sister watching, there is nowhere he can run to!”

Dong Fang Jing Shui teasingly said.

Dong Fang Jing Yue seemed to not understand the hidden meanings in his words. She stomped the ground and said:

“Then, is Big Brother going to help me catch him or not?”

“Haha, I can see that you don’t want to capture him, but instead, want to save him.”

Dong Fang Jing Shui bursted out in laughter and the sound resonated up to the clouds.

“No way.”

Dong Fang Jing Yue denied.

“Dong Fang Jing Yue, this little brat is the son of the evil demon and has the

blood of the evil demon running in his veins. He already became the prey of many experts from the Feng family. And not only the Feng family, but there are also many big powers in the Grand Southern Prefecture that want his life. These big powers do not want the Feng family to obtain the evil demon blood and refine the evil demon battle armor. Therefore, Feng Fei Yun has to die. Currently, many cultivators are coming to kill him. If not ten thousand, then there has to be at least eight thousand."

Dong Fang Jing Shui might be a little strange, but his heart was very meticulous. He said:

"There is only one way to save him, and that is to keep him in the same place as us. Little Sis ordering me to capture him, isn't this simply saving him?"

The corner of Dong Fang Jing Shui's lips arched. He felt as if he had seen through his little sister's heart.

Even Dong Fang Jing Yue didn't see through the reasoning behind it all. Maybe it was just like how her big brother said, that she only wanted to save his life, and that she didn't want to see him die under a sword, didn't want his corpse left in the wilderness.

"How does Big Brother know everything so clearly? Could the one that secretly informed the Feng family be you?"

Dong Fang Jing Yue coldly glanced at Dong Fang Jing Shui with denunciation in her eyes.

Dong Fang Jing Shui had never been glared at by his little sis like this before. He couldn't help but lament: a woman in love wouldn't even recognize her own family, ah!

He didn't speak, there was someone else who spoke first.

"Such an amazing scheme, of course your big brother couldn't perform such a deed. Only I, your Second Grandpa, could be so smart and used this move that could deal with everything."

From the sky, a light quickly flew forward.

There was a shadow in the light, riding a flying beast.

This was an ugly old man with disheveled hair, riding a small mountain goat. The clothes on his body were a bit extravagant, but he hadn't taken a bath for who-knew-how-many-years so it was filled with dust. Every two steps he took, a layer of dust fell onto the floor.

He was very skinny, just like the scrawny mountain goat revealing his bones. It was as if he was an old shepherd who just came out from a valley somewhere.

There was a tobacco pipe in his hand. With smoke coming out from his mouth, he created a circle of cheap tobacco smoke.

"Second Grandpa, why did you come to this Grand Southern Prefecture?"

Dong Fang Jing Yue stared at this old man in front of her and couldn't hide the joy in her heart.

Compared to her Grandpa, this ugly old man before her was a lot more doting. From young till now, whenever she wanted something, Second Grandpa would always get it for her without hesitation.

This old man was a childish old man, and always had fun playing with Dong Fang Jing Yue. Plus, this old man had an extremely high status within the Yin Gou family, even the clan leader had to be respectful towards him. Also, his cultivation was unfathomable.

"The once in a lifetime grand matter of Little Yue, this is the biggest thing in the world. Not to mention that the Godly Capital and Violet Firmament Ancient City are only separated by two hundred thousand miles, even if they were separated by two million miles, this Second Grandpa would still come here without taking any breaks to help Little Yue take care of this big matter."

"Da da!"

The skinny goat slowly landed from the cloud. The ugly old man was still smoking his tobacco on top of the goat, and his eyes were squinted from laughter, revealing only a small gap.

Dong Fang Jing Yue's heart jumped once and immediately asked:

"Then, the great sage that came to the Feng family and spoke nonsense was you?"

“Heh heh! This Second Grandpa did such a good job this time! I only went to the front door of the Feng family, heh heh, and that son of a bitch Feng Nan Tian immediately stood to the side. Afterwards, I talked to him about the matter between the two of you. Can you guess what he said?”

Second Grandpa put down his tobacco pipe. It was as if, while telling the story, he was feeling very proud and even sprayed little spits all over the floor.

Dong Fang Jing Yue immediately tugged his unkempt hair and dragged him down from the skinny goat. She wanted to step on his face, twice.

“You truly caused me and Feng Fei Yun a lot of harm. This was not helpful! You truly made things worse.”

Dong Fang Jing Yue gripped her fists, wanting to punch this old man’s face, twice.

The second grandpa became alarmed and quickly said:

“The heaven and earth are my witnesses, ah! This Second Grandpa did everything just for you, ah! Think about it, ah! Only by driving that brat Feng Fei Yun to his death with nowhere else to go would he finally submit. At that time, you wouldn’t need to go after him, he would come and beg you instead. At this moment, all of the great powers in the entire Grand Southern Prefecture want his life. Only our Yin Gou family could protect him and save his life. Otherwise, there is only death.”

Dong Fang Jing Yue slowly released her fists and her fingers slowly loosened. She, once again, became a good girl and stood to the side as she gently nodded. She naturally felt that this old man’s words made a lot of sense.

She was no longer angry and, again, became elegant, quiet, and carried the aura of a goddess on earth.

“Hmph! Not right, ah! I have chased him for so long. I only wanted his life. He punched me once on my head. If I don’t get revenge, my heart will not be calm.”

There was a red blush on Dong Fang Jing Yue’s face, but it was hidden by her veil. Otherwise, if the other two noticed, her calm demeanor would be seen through.

“What? This damn son of a bitch dared to hit my little sister? Watch me cripple his two arms.”

Dong Fang Jing Shui became angry. The evil cloud on his body floated and directly became a black dragon light that flew towards Jing Huan Mountain.

“Boom!”

There was killing intent all over his body, as if he wanted to cut Feng Fei Yun into ten thousand pieces.

No one knew the hot temper of her brother better than Dong Fang Jing Yue. If he truly found Feng Fei Yun, to cripple his two arms — this matter, he was definitely capable.

She wanted to scold Dong Fang Jing Shui but it was already too late!

Chapter 88 : Xiao Nuo Lan

The Mortal Life Cavern carried an endless darkness and had existed in this world for more than eighteen hundred years. The moment the Mortal Life Temple sunk underground, the Mortal Life Cavern naturally appeared in the world.

At this moment, most of the Grand Southern Prefecture was alarmed and all of the big powers had been gathered at this place. There were only a few sects and families that were too far away, so they couldn't send experts to this place.

The heavy rain had stopped, but the air was still very moist.

The remains of the Mortal Life Temple were still located underground and had an ancient and mysterious feel. Inside the bronze lamps and buddhist statues were all sorts of great treasures. They were bathed in the buddhist chants of the high monks and had the power to calm the mind and suppress evil.

After one thousand years, everything in this place became a priceless treasure, worthy of being studied by many Wisdom Masters throughout their entire lives.

The cultivators present were all people that wanted to fish in troubled waters. Even though they wouldn't be able to seize the unparalleled buddhist treasures, if they could pick up even just half of a buddhist bead, then it would have been worthwhile.

"Eighteen hundred years ago, the Mortal Life Temple was the most sacred ground of the buddhist faith. Each and every monk was enlightened enough to pass on their own doctrines and establish their own temples."

"I heard the abbot of the temple, at that time, was a grand character of the buddhist faith. Back then, he was a person that was respected by everyone in the world. Even the Jin Emperor wanted to call him his buddhist master."

"It was such a sacred buddhist ground, with as many as experts as the clouds, yet it was still completely massacred, and even the temple was sunken under the ground. Who did they offend to bring about such a calamitous fate?"

***

There were many cultivators with great knowledge present that had heard about the legends of the Mortal Life Temple. However, they didn't know that the high monks were all killed by the abbot, and that the temple was also destroyed by the abbot because of a woman.

This was a scandal of the buddhist faith! There were buddhist disciples that knew about the secret, but it was greatly hidden, and they were unwilling to release this matter to the world.

Feng Fei Yun followed the group of cultivators to enter the Mortal Life Cavern. He stood outside of the dilapidated godly temple and looked towards the yellow ancient well. The woman corpse was still floating on top of the well, her perfect white skin was shining like jewels with godly brilliances.

"Whoosh whoosh!"

Strands of spirit spring water continuously flowed in the air and into the body of the woman, filling her with vivid life, wanting to seize her fate once more so that she could come back to life.

Wanting to revive after being dead for more than eighteen hundred years — this was easier said than done.

Feng Fei Yun's cultivation had once reached the ninth level of Heaven's Emergence and was known as the number one of the world. However, in order to revive the dead, he would still need to pay a heavy price that was basically half of his life.

Plus, the higher the cultivation of the dead, the harder it would be to revive them.

To revive an ordinary person, Feng Fei Yun's past life could accomplish it by sacrificing half of his life.

However, if the dead was someone with the same level of cultivation as Young Noble Flawless, then Feng Fei Yun would have had to risk his life just to attempt it.

Therefore, a powerful cultivator absolutely wouldn't revive someone else. Not only would it require a forbidden technique, but it was also a gamble with one's own life, and the chance for success was less than one percent.

One could only imagine how difficult it was to defy the heavens and change fate.

Even though this corpse woman was pale, her facial features were exquisite. With a long and slender figure, it would only be something to marvel. It was no wonder why the abbot was deeply in love with her and was even willing to die. And even after death, he couldn't forget about her and even wanted Feng Fei Yun to spare her life.

"I deserve to die, she should live on."

Feng Fei Yun softly whispered this phrase.

At this moment, if he handed the Na Lan Buddhist Robe and Buddhist Jade Bead over to Monk Jiu Rou, with his cultivation, along with the two sacred buddhist treasures, he would naturally be able to destroy her last sliver of life and turn her into dust or remnants of bones.

However, what could he do to not disappoint the plea of the abbot?

"Boom!"

A spirit wave channeled from the woman corpse. Her finger seemed to be moving gently. Many people saw this scene, but they had to rubbed their eyes, thinking that they were imagining it.

However, the finger of a dead person moving was an indisputable fact. This was a lot more surprising than evil corpses moving about.

One person curiously headed towards the yellow well. They were still ten zhang away before a chilling light emanated from the woman's forehead and immediately pierced through this cultivator, turning him into a pool of blood.

"Boom!"

This chilling light was extremely powerful. After penetrating the body, the light continued on and created a deep hole under the ground. It was pitch black, and one couldn't see the bottom.

The murderous energy was truly too sharp. With a decisive killing intent, its presence covered the entire Mortal Life Temple. Within this woman corpse was, indeed, a boundless evil energy that resented the entire world.

Feng Fei Yun clearly felt the killing intent inside her body. Not yet alive yet she already wanted to devour the heavens and swallow the earth. If he let her revive, then wouldn't it be letting loose a calamity?

"I'm just going to hand over the Na Lan Buddhist Robe and Buddhist Jade Bead over to Monk Jiu Rou first, then I will simply leave. As for her life and death, it has nothing to do with me."

Feng Fei Yun was no longer hesitant and he silently went over to the low wall of the godly temple. He carved a new formation into the ground.

A new lotus seat formation quickly formed. He stepped onto the lotus seat and quickly turned into a mysterious light that flew into the Mortal Life Temple.

"Everyone, look! There is someone flying into the godly temple but was not attacked by the ancient formations. Even the thousand year old female corpse didn't attack him with her godly intent."

Although Feng Fei Yun was very careful, but when he jumped over the high wall, people still detected him.

"This person has a very familiar figure… Right, isn't that the traitor of the Feng family, Feng Fei Yun? The son of the evil demon from the rumors. Could it be that he is related to the ancient corpses in this godly temple, so they do not attack him?"

"I heard that many people wanted to kill him, yet he still dared to come to this place. Look at the Feng experts, they are now surrounding this godly temple. It seems like they are waiting for the prey to come out. Once Feng Fei Yun comes out of the godly temple, he would be ruthlessly killed for sure, and his evil demon blood will be taken."

***

Even though the ancient monk corpses were restless, they didn't leave the godly temple. They were restrained by an invisible power, so they could only bellow out beastly roars.

Feng Fei Yun purposefully avoided these powerful ancient monk corpses and crossed through the ancient buddhist halls. He saw the decline of the temple; its past glory had ended and only sadness was left.

In the tall pagoda, along with the faint buddhist lamp that emitted a gentle light, Monk Jiu Rou, this time, was not eating grilled meat but was sitting under the buddhist lamp and forming buddhist seals with his two hands.

On top of his head was a floating golden buddha statue, giving off a vast power.

His golden light penetrated all four directions and had drops of sweat on his forehead. It was apparent that he was having a difficult time suppressing a certain something.

Could he actually be using his personal power to suppress the ancient corpses within this godly temple?

“Great Monk, I have brought what you wanted.”

Feng Fei Yun took off the Na Lan Buddhist Robe on his body and also took out the Buddhist Jade Bead. He placed it in front of the monk.

Finally, Feng Fei Yun also placed the Invincible Buddhist Staff on the ground.

These items were all supreme treasures of the Buddhist Gate, but Feng Fei Yun was perfectly fine and calm when letting go of them.

Monk Jiu Rou was still motionless, with golden radiance exuding from his body. He was like a diamond luo han.

An unknown amount of time had passed before he finally opened his eyes. His pupils also contained golden lights and two buddhist seals. However, it couldn’t hide his fatigue at this moment. It was as if he had expended countless amounts of energy.

He remained immobile and only spoke with his ancient voice:

“You came at the right time. Right now, let the little girl wear the Na Lan Buddhist Robe, and then the two of you will bring the Buddhist Jade bead to suppress Xiao Nuo Lan.”

The woman corpse had died for more than eighteen hundred years. During her golden era when she was alive, no one didn’t know of her name. However, the times had changed and very few knew of her great identity.

Her name was Xiao Nuo Lan, a generation’s heavenly daughter. Her beauty and

cultivation were both supreme. Now, even if she came back to life, all of her friends would still be dead. This was the pain of the gap between two generations.

“What? Are you joking, ah? Relying on the two of us to suppress Xiao Nuo Lan, are you telling us to go die?”

Feng Fei Yun originally wanted to put everything down and leave this place with Feng Jian Xue, but at the moment, it seemed like it was not so simple. He simply didn’t have the opportunity to not care for anything!

Chapter 89 : Heavenly Buddhist Essence

Monk Jiu Rou had dreariness written all over his face. His hands were clasped in front of his chest to form a holy golden statue of Buddha. He looked like a true Buddha that was suppressing the powerful evil.

“This was a matter relating to the people of this world. The moment Xiao Nuo Lan revives, with the evil aura in her body, blood will fill the rivers and corpses will cover the mountain…”

Monk Jiu Rou clearly spoke with heroic words that cared for the people of this world. They were truly stirring words that were very touching.

However, the chest of this monk had a tattoo of an azure dragon and a white tiger, and his face was very ferocious. This made it so that people couldn’t help but question the truth in his words.

Feng Fei Yun had goosebumps from hearing those dignified words:

“I don’t care. If this matter is so important, why don’t you go yourself?”

What a joke, this woman corpse was already so dangerous before coming back to life. An ordinary person, within ten zhang of her, would immediately be crushed by the killing aura on her body.

Even ancestors of the Ju Qing rank couldn’t do anything to her. Relying on two little shrimps like Feng Fei Yun and Feng Jian Xue to suppress her — this was truly a dream.

At this moment, there were many powerful experts from the big powers, surrounding the godly temple. Everyone was here for the treasures and the spirit spring water floating around the woman corpse. If someone actually approached the woman corpse, then everyone would band together and attack this person. At that moment, even a Ju Qing would be rendered into pieces.

This Monk Jiu Rou wanted to stay here and pretend to be a dead dog and let Feng Fei Yun take on the danger in his stead. If anyone would actually do this, they would be a fool.

“Jian Xue, let us go. Big Brother will bring you out of this evil place!”

Feng Fei Yun held Feng Jian Xue’s tiny hand, wanting to take her away.

“Hissss”

Her hand was unusually cold, like ice. This chill caused Feng Fei Yun’s entire body to shudder. It was as if he just touched a piece of a glacier.

At this moment, Feng Fei Yun finally realized that something wasn’t right. No wonder why this little girl didn’t say anything from start to finish, it was because she was freezing to this extent. There was a layer of thin mist around her body. Her lips wouldn’t stop quivering and cold sweat gathered on her forehead. This sweat did not drip down and became ice crystals that covered her entire face.

She truly looked like an ice statue!

She was chilled to the bones and directly hugged Feng Fei Yun. She shivered:

“Well… So cold, so cold, will you hold me?”

Feng Fei Yun quickly took off his clothes and covered her delicate body. He held her tight by her slender waist and used his own body temperature to help her ward off the chill.

“Why is it like this? Why can’t you resist this cold energy inside your body with your cultivation? Hey, Great Monk, did you give her some poison?”

Feng Fei Yun bit his teeth. He was saddened to see her pathetic state.

“No, this is clearly her own illness, yet you dare to blame me… For this Little Monk to poison someone, this is not right, ah!”

Monk Jiu Rou replied.

Feng Fei Yun was slightly stunned, and he asked:

“Illness? What illness?”

He had never heard of cultivators falling ill before because a high cultivation could prevent disease and death. Feng Jian Xue’s cultivation was even higher than Feng Fei Yun’s, so how could she be so ill?

“She is a natural born Buddhist Physique. In her body, six Heavenly Buddhist Essences are formed. To the buddhist cultivators, this was truly a sacred

physique for buddhist cultivation. In the future, she could become Buddha, or Bodhisattva. However, to someone who doesn't cultivate the buddhist Dao, this would be an incurable disease. From the age of fourteen, she will start to have these illness, and it will increase ferociously. Very few could live past the age of sixteen…"

Monk Jiu Rou chattered.

Feng Jian Xue's entire body was convulsing, and she couldn't speak. Even her breathing was unstable while her heart began to beat slower. Her blood seemed to have been frozen.

Feng Fei Yun began to worry. He kicked the bald head of Monk Jiu Rou and yelled:

"You stupid old ass, I only want to hear about how to save her. Why did you say so much nonsense?"

"Cough cough, this… She only needs to wear the Na Lan Buddhist Robe on her body, then it could temporarily extract the chilling energy from her body. However, in order to cure her completely, she has to cultivate the "Ancient Mortal Life Scripture" and join our Buddhist Gate to become a female nun…"

Monk Jiu Rou seemed to be in a good mood. Even when Feng Fei Yun kicked his head, he didn't become angry and began to chatter again.

Feng Fei Yun didn't listen to what he had to say. He quickly picked up the Na Lan Buddhist Robe on the floor and carefully put it on her body. He fastened the buttons then quietly observed the changes.

The Na Lan Buddhist Robe was just a plain robe on Feng Fei Yun's body, but when worn by Feng Jian Xue, there was an immediate magical change with an amazing resonance.

The gray cloth was completely wiped of its ancient and old appearance. Each strand of fabric exuded a faint green light. The naked eyes could even see these green lights moving above the cloth as they interwove into strands of buddhist seals.

There were seals from the Buddha, some from the Yin Yang Bodhisattva, and even sigils from the Vajra…

The glorious buddhist light became brighter and even more holy. Even the disguise on her face was dissolved by the buddhist light, revealing her original appearance. With alluring eyes, a jade straight nose, and red and translucent lips, her features as beautiful as a painting.

This was her original appearance; it was prettier than her initial appearance by more than a dozen times. This was why, when she was pretending to be a man, she was extraordinarily handsome and was even called a devilish handsome man by Feng Fei Yun.

When it came to beauty, Feng Jian Xue was essentially no inferior to Dong Fang Jing Yue. They were both existences that toppled all other creatures. Only, they used different methods to hide their true beauty.

Under the effect of the Na Lan Buddhist Robe, the six Heavenly Buddhist Essences were moved and began to shine, causing her entire body — down to the bones — to give birth to a holy buddhist light. It allowed this unruly girl to wield the sacredness and modesty of a Bodhisattva.

This was not an illusion; this feeling was real and grew even stronger.

A blue lotus seat began to form under her feet. There were nine lotus altogether. The blue radiant light sparkled together with her body and clothing as they were integrated into one.

At this moment, she was like the reincarnation of a Bodhisattva or a True Buddha — without any mundane flaws.

Feng Fei Yun's legs were quivering. He almost kneeled down to worship the Bodhisattva. Luckily, his willpower was powerful, so he was able to suppress his body's response and wasn't made a fool.

If it was any other cultivator, they would have soon kneeled in front of her and started to worship her as if she was a Buddha statue in a temple.

"Fuck! I can't believe how powerful this Na Lan Buddhist Robe is. It's capable of suppressing the human spirit and can create a sense of worship in their souls. Why didn't I become this powerful when I wore it?"

Feng Fei Yun had no doubt that if Feng Jian Xue was to go outside and scam others, the moment she puts out her hand, countless people would kneel on the

ground and give her all of their wealth.

This attack on the soul was much more frightening than a physical attack.

“Bah! This Na Lan Buddhist Robe could only be worn by a natural born Buddhist Physique before a true resonation. In the future, when this little girl cultivates the Ancient Mortal Life Scripture, this robe would be even more magical. Even with a spirit treasure in your hand, you still wouldn’t be able to harm a hair on her head.

Monk Jiu Rou began to chatter again.

The chilling poison in Feng Jian Xue’s body was finally removed. She gently opened her eyes and her eyelashes slightly trembled. Every action was the manifestations of holy charms. Could it be that she really became a true Buddha?

“Feng Fei Yun, I thought you wouldn’t come back for me. I thought that even if I died here, you still wouldn’t pay any attention to me.”

The moment she opened her mouth, all of her holy aura disappeared. There were even tears dripping down her face as her inconsolable crying made others want to empathize with.

Even though Feng Jian Xue was a strong woman, she was only fourteen and her courage was quite small. She absolutely couldn’t handle the supernatural matters. However, in this godly temple, that was filled with ancient monk corpses, she had to wait for several days. This truly caused her to be frightened.

However, she did not cry. She held onto all of her tears until Feng Fei Yun came, and unleashed all of them at once. She cried so that he could watch and feel guilty.

“How could I not care for you? Did you forget? You are my wife.”

Feng Fei Yun felt his heart becoming soft. He gently rubbed her cute nose and teased her.

Feng Jian Xue immediately stopped crying and started to laugh!

“Cough cough! The buddhist ground forbids romantic talks. Plus, a great calamity is now coming. The Evil Woman is about to come into this world, and

this world's rivers will be filled with blood and mountains will be covered by corpses, how could the two of you be touchy-feely like this? Where is the humility? Where is the respect?"

Monk Jiu Rou was very annoyed at this moment. He wanted for Feng Jian Xue to be his disciple, so naturally, he didn't want the two of them to be entangled in emotional attachment.

When someone from the buddhist faith fell in love, the end result would be no different from the fate of the Mortal Life Temple!

"None of your business! This husband and wife are leaving. This matter relating to the life and death of everyone is too grave; we can't deal with this. I'll just let the great master deal with this disaster!"

Feng Fei Yun dragged Feng Jian Xue, wanting to leave.

Monk Jiu Rou was so alarmed that he almost jumped up from the ground. He stuck his neck out and yelled:

"Feng Fei Yun, don't blame me for not reminding you! The chilling poison from the essences in the little girl's body is only temporarily suppressed. Right now, the Na Lan Buddhist Robe activated both the Buddhist Physique and essences in her body. The chilling poison in her essences will activate again next month. If she doesn't cultivate the Ancient Mortal Life Scripture, then one month later will be her funeral!"

"Thump!"

Feng Fei Yun's foot was already outside, but he suddenly stopped!

Chapter 90 : Reversed Life and Death

“A great man always has an indomitable spirit. The Evil Woman coming into being will cause misery to all living beings. A good man naturally will not fear danger and will welcome difficulties, no matter how badly they will be beaten, and will fight to the end.”

Monk Jiu Rou was sitting in the meditative pose with an excited expression while spits were flying everywhere.

Feng Fei Yun asked:

“Then why don’t you do it?”

Monk Jiu Rou replied:

“Umm….”

If it wasn’t for the chilling poisonous essences in Feng Jian Xue’s body, why would Feng Fei Yun still be here wasting time and nagging with this monk for so long? He would have ran away long ago. However, if Monk Jiu Rou was speaking the truth, then he really couldn’t leave.

Leaving was detrimental to Feng Jian Xue!

“This poor monk has to use the boundless buddhist power to suppress the ancient corpses within the Mortal Life Temple and essentially can’t leave this place. Therefore, the responsibility of stopping the Evil Woman can only be shouldered by the two of you.”

Monk Jiu Rou was still pretending to play dead in his meditative pose. He had no intentions of standing up.

Feng Fei Yun smilingly said:

“Fine, fine, I will take the Na Lan Buddhist Robe and Buddhist Jade Bead, then. You will also give me the fifth rank All Heaven Spirit Pill. I, of course, will go to suppress the Evil Woman without fear and definitely will not let her have a chance to revive.”

A fifth rank spirit pill was too valuable. It could be considered the king within medicinal pills. It can give birth to bones and flesh, and allowed others to break through an entire realm. Just by smelling it once, an ordinary person could prolong their lifespan by twenty years.

Each of these fifth rank pills were all priceless treasures and exceedingly rare in this world. The Grand Southern Prefecture had many big powers, but it would be a miracle to find one or two fifth rank spirit pills.

This treasure would, maybe, appear once every hundred years. If he was going to risk his life, then he naturally wanted to hold onto this fifth rank spirit pill first.

With this pill, it would be a cinch to cure the chilling poisonous energy in Feng Jian Xue's body. Once he obtained the pill, they would escape and wouldn't have to look at Monk Jiu Rou again.

Monk Jiu Rou was also extremely smart, how could he not know what Feng Fei Yun was thinking? So he replied:

"Young Benefactor, after you suppress the Evil Woman, then I will naturally hand the fifth rank spirit pill over to you with both hands."

Feng Fei Yun knew that this person was not an empty oil lamp, so he coldly snorted:

"Great Monk, you are trying to cheat us, ah!"

"A monk would never lie!"

Monk Jiu Rou replied.

"Boom!"

Outside of the pagoda, a loud bang occurred. Inside the ancient yellow well came a vast light, like a blinding pillar that aimed straight for the high heavens. It connected to the red heart that was hovering on top of the ancient well.

The corpse of Xiao Niu Lan was bathing in the light, causing her skin to be like ice jade. It was as if she was alive again and filled with the holy aura of a saintess.

The spirit spring water that was hovering in the sky originally numbered in a couple hundred drops, but at the moment, all of them were quickly flowing towards her body like countless celestials breaking through into her figure.

The seal of life was created in the middle of her eyebrows, like a tiny red plum. It was not red, but instead, white and full of spirituality.

“Oh heaven! This is the Reverse Life and Death Grand Law; is this person, who had died for one thousand years, about to come back to life?”

A cultivator of the early God Base realm was frightened by this scene.

“Everyone, there is no need to be alarmed. Even the strongest master activating the Reverse Life and Death Grand Law would only gain a little chance for survival. This chance is very ethereal, it’s not even one percent.”

There was a person who understood the matters of the Life and Death Reverse Law, and knew that its difficulty was too great.

“Wrong, ah! I feel that the blood within that body is already active and slowly flowing throughout her body from her heart. The spirit energy inside the blood is mighty and powerful. It is as if she is really coming back to life.”

The people here were all cultivators. Everyone had spirit energy inside their bodies, so they were able to sense many things that the ordinary eyes couldn’t discern.

The person who spoke earlier was a cultivator with a great spiritual sense. His spiritual sense told him that a terrible disaster was coming, and an evil woman was coming back to live.

“Not only the energy of life, but also an ancient killing intent that hates this entire world. I can faintly see a scene where blood was flowing like the river and mountains were built by human corpses. If this woman revives, then this would be a devil like never before.”

Even the other cultivators felt this unstoppable killing intent that caused others to shiver. It was emanating from the body that was floating in the air.

A peerless beautiful corpse, but it was even more of a ferocious monster.

No one was willing to see this evil woman come back to life, so a Ju Qing made a move again!

“Boom!”

This time, the person who took action was the Third Lord of the Sen Luo

Temple. He transformed into a giant fiery man. Towering at a hundred meters and wearing a flying fiery armor, he wielded a hellfire spear. He roared and unleashed a crimson cloud of fire.

The fire and smoke filled the air with ferocious momentum!

This was an evil demon that could accept a move from the Jin Emperor without dying. Even after being imprisoned under the thirteenth floor of the Godly Capital Prison, he was still able to escape. This evil demon escaped just so that he could wage war against all directions.

Experts at the Ju Qing realm were no joke. Only a simple fist was enough to create a small mountain of fire. This one fist alone was enough to raze the godly temple to the ground.

“Boom!”

The harmonizing brilliance outside of the yellow well flew out, turning into a layer of light with enough power to stop the heaven and earth. Even though this powerful fist slammed into it, it was not enough to break through the impregnable defense of this light.

Xiao Nuo Lan had reached a critical moment and someone had created an absolute defensive formation for her. Even a Ju Qing couldn’t break through.

This was not to say that the fist of the fiery Ju Qing was not powerful, but because the technique of whoever created this formation was too brilliant. His cultivation was even more terrifying than the fiery Ju Qing.

“Let me do it!”

Another Ju Qing made a move. He unleashed a spirit energy several zhang long. The spirit awareness inside the sword was completely activated, turning into an ice crystal with the shape of a cicada, revealing the entire power of the spirit sword.

Godly Cicada Spirit Sword — this was a true spirit treasure!

“A fully awakened spirit treasure naturally would have unrivaled power. Everyone below the God Base realm should leave the Mortal Life Cavern now, or risk being killed by the power of the spirit weapon.”

Someone reminded others.

A master at the Ju Qing realm — if he completely activated his spirit treasure, he could absolutely raze the godly temple from a thousand miles away. From this, one could imagine the real frightening power of a true spirit treasure.

All of these cultivators could feel the presence of the spirit treasure and were scared out of their wits. No one dared to linger for one second longer, and they all rushed outside of the Mortal Life Cavern like bees that lost their hive.

The remaining ones were either courageous or were especially confident with their cultivation.

“Boom!”

The spirit treasure was indeed impressive. The fibrillation of one sword was enough to shake the brilliant light. The entire Jing Huan Mountain quivered as if multiple earthquakes were happening, causing many large chasms to form in the ground.

There were indications that this large mountain was about to collapse.

Although the power of the spirit sword was powerful, it was still not enough to break through the brilliant layer that surrounded Xiao Nuo Lan’s body. The red celestial heart floating on top of her forehead reflected a bright bloody ray.

The bloody ray was filled with cold killing intent; this was her counterattack.

Even though she was still dead, she was already able to fight back and kill the ones who provoked her. This was the sign that a female demon was coming into this world.

“Boom!”

This bloody ray’s power was no less than the spirit treasure. It immediately hit the Ju Qing, who just took action, and cut through his hair, almost bursting his head open.

This Ju Qing was the ancestor of the Grand Development Immortal Gate. Even with a spirit treasure in his hand, he still almost died in the hands of the female corpse that had not yet revived. This, truly, was extremely embarrassing.

The hair of the ancestor of the Grand Development Immortal Gate was

disheveled, and he rapidly retreated a few steps back. He raised his spirit sword to protect his body and was afraid that the female corpse would make another move.

If another killing ray was to come, maybe he wouldn't be so fortunate to be able to dodge again. Only the power of a spirit treasure could stop the ferocious power of that killing ray.

"Huo Tuo Tuo, Qin San Jun, Feng Yi Yi… If you all don't make a move right now, when this Evil Woman comes back to life, then no one would be able to stop her."

The ancestor of the Grand Development Immortal Gate continuously named out several names of the other Ju Qings. The real names of the people were all from a long time ago. At the very least, two hundred years ago was their period of fame where all of them were characters of the ancestors rank.

Huo Tuo Tuo was the Third Lord of the Sen Luo Temple, Qin San Jun was an ancestor from the Qin family, and Feng Yi Yi was an ancestor from the Feng family. There were also two names after these three names because they were all extremely famous and used to be kings of their generation.

Each of them was a grand character. One stomp was enough to shake the entire Grand Southern Prefecture. At this moment, they were all together in one place; no one dared to imagine how heroic and spectacular this scene was.

Could it be that all of the old men who were in seclusion for many years came here? Or could it be that they were hiding in the shadows and just had not come out?

Chapter 91 : Six Ju Qings

The Grand Southern Prefecture was one of the eight grand prefectures of the Jin Dynasty. Even though it was located in the southern desolate border, it was vast and had great riches. The great powers, like the Feng family, number no less than a dozen. To be considered a great power, normally, there would be an ancestor of the Ju Qing level presiding within. There could be one, or two, or even multiple Ju Qings.

The strength of these great powers were directly related to how many Ju Qings they had. This was the paramount influence of the Ju Qing rank.

Outside of these top ranking great powers, there were also immortal sects and big families.

These sects and families' numbers exceeded one hundred. This was the middle power of the cultivation world at this prefecture, and they had the ability to rule over one county.

To be able to rule over one county was quite incredible. They were not lacking in experts, and each of them had more than ten thousand disciples and clan members.

To be able to be considered a big family, the sect or family would need at least ten characters of the elder ranking at the God Base realm, or enough to scare away the little bandits and become a county overlord. The more powerful sects and families would have more than ten characters of the elder ranking and could even have a half Ju Qing. These groups would only need one more step before becoming a great power.

There were also countless little sects and families below the big powers. They occupied an ancient city or a town. There were too many of them and they couldn't be fully accounted for.

This arrangement was the overall pattern of power in the Grand Southern Prefecture's cultivation world.

So, there must be a Ju Qing presiding to be considered a great power.

However, at the moment, there were several Ju Qings inside the Mortal Life Cavern. They were old monsters that had lived for hundreds of years. If they exerted their entire power, then they could shatter the entire Jing Huan Mountain into pieces in just one day.

There were conflicting interests between the great powers, such as the Feng and Qin families, and these conflicts have lasted for more than eight hundred years. But at this moment, the Feng ancestor and Qing ancestor had set aside their hatred and joined forces to attack the woman corpse on top of the yellow well.

In front of benefits, hatred could temporarily be set aside.

All of the six Ju Qings rushed forward together. They came from different great powers and all of them had ferocious auras along with heaven defying techniques.

They originally didn't want to fight together because that would be a degradation to their reputations, but this godly temple was truly strange and that woman corpse was too terrifying. If they didn't fight together, they essentially couldn't shake her.

This scene was truly shocking. It had been a long time since several Ju Qings had to fight together. The entire Jing Huan Mountain began to shake as if there was a godly beast, from the high ancient era, emerging from the mountain.

The brave cultivators that initially stayed behind had all ran away. This was a stage for Ju Qings to compete on. A character that was not at the Ju Qing rank didn't have the qualifications to stand in this place. Plus, even if they stayed behind, they would surely be rendered to dust by the fierce battle aura.

Of course, the Feng experts who wanted to trap Feng Fei Yun also all retreated. To have a weak cultivation — like Feng Fei Yun — yet to still dare to trespass into the forbidden temple… Everyone who did this had died inside the temple, and no one believed that he could survive.

"Haha! Great Monk, look. There are people taking action instead of us. These are six experts of the Ju Qing rank. With their combined power, it will be more than enough to suppress a corpse that has not come back to life."

Feng Fei Yun opened the window of the buddhist pagoda and stared towards the yellow well in the far distance. He felt that there were many chaotic shadows. With one thousand spirit powers all striking at once — this was too overwhelming and mighty.

If there was not an ancient formation protecting the buddhist pagoda, as well as Monk Jiu Rou's cultivation, then this buddhist pagoda would have been crushed into a land of rubble.

Monk Jiu Rou shook his head and sighed:

"Useless! The yellow well contained the cultivation of the abbot's entire life and was created by the refinement of his body. The six Ju Qings simply cannot break through it."

The Mortal Life Temple's abbot, when he was still alive, was the bright light of the buddhist faith. His cultivation pierced through the heavens! Even that generation's Jin Emperor wanted to call him his buddhist master. From this, one could see how powerful he was.

Even though the six Ju Qings were extraordinary characters, they absolutely couldn't compare to a celestial being like the abbot. The abbot used his life energy and body to create the yellow ancient well, so it contained great power. With the six Ju Qings' strength, it would be very difficult to break through it.

"Are you kidding me? The abbot might be powerful, but he had died for more than one thousand eight hundred years. The power of the yellow ancient well must have decreased over time. With the power of the supreme Ju Qings, at the longest, it would be an hour before they break through that glowing light."

Feng Fei Yun voiced out his analysis.

In fact, the only reason Feng Fei Yun said this was because he didn't want to oppose Xiao Niu Lan. The dying exhortations of the abbot remained lingering in his mind.

The grief of the red spider lilies, along with the death of a beauty, gave people an empathizing sadness.

On top of that, Feng Fei Yun had also died once, so he was very sympathetic towards Xiao Niu Lan. He felt that they were of the same type of people.

Monk Jiu Rou continued:

“You are wrong. That year, the abbot chose this location for the Reversed Life and Death Grand Formation for a reason.”

“Is there something special about Jing Huan Mountain?”

Feng Fei Yun asked.

“There are so many spirit stone mines in Jing Huan Mountain, how could it not be special?”

Monk Jiu Rou replied.

“Bah, even though spirit stone mines are rare, this is not something unique to Jing Huan Mountain.”

Feng Fei Yun naturally didn’t trust that the abbot chose this place just because it had many spirit stone mines. This explanation was a bit too forced.

“However, there are more than ten spirit stone mines in this mountain, each have great chances to give birth to spirit stones. The mountain contains enough resources for a great power to use for several hundred years. This amount of spirit stones, do you think they were just naturally created by the world?”

Monk Jiu Rou asked.

Spirit stones were the condensation of the world’s essence, like the spine of the world and the spirit marrow of the earth. To be able to obtain one spirit stone was already a great fortune, let alone so many spirit stone mines. This was indeed a bit unusual.

Feng Fei Yun suddenly recalled the valley right outside the Mortal Life Cavern. Inside the valley was a vast amount of spirit energy, flowing like the lava. It was much richer compared to the regular spirit energy in the air by several times.

He suspected that there was a spirit vein, but, because he didn’t personally go down, he wasn’t sure. However, after hearing Monk Jiu Rou’s words, it almost confirmed his suspicion.

“Could it be that there is a spirit vein beneath Jing Huan Mountain? And the abbot used the yellow ancient well as the location to gather from the spirit vein and use its inexhaustible source of energy to breed Xiao Niu Lan’s body? To

reverse life and death into a supreme spirit physique?”

Feng Fei Yun asked.

Monk Jiu Rou didn’t think that Feng Fei Yun would correctly guess the spirit vein’s existence, so he nodded his head and sighed:

“At this moment, one third of the spirit vein’s energy has already been absorbed by the yellow ancient well. Oh how great this energy is, it’s nearly endless. How could these Ju Qings have enough power to destroy it?”

“So in the end, you only want us to go to our deaths.”

Feng Fei Yun didn’t want to be the second fool, and he definitely didn’t want to desperately struggle against that Evil Woman.

“Not to die, but to save all living existences. You are at your youthful peak and should uphold the responsibility of destroying evil and protecting the dao. In the future, your reputation will be immortal…”

Monk Jiu Rou started to chatter endlessly again.

“Enough, enough, I am not interested in ordinary living beings. I am simply agreeing with you because of… Jian Xue…”

Feng Fei Yun bent down and picked up the Invincible Buddhist Staff. He was getting ready to leave the buddhist pagoda.

“Young Benefactor, I really did not misjudge you. Keke, didn’t I give you a fourth rank ancient pill, before? This is the time for it to be put to use. After you eat it, your power will greatly increase and be enough to fight against a half Ju Qing. Together with the Invincible Buddhist Staff, you would naturally be able to suppress the Evil Woman and grant her salvation.”

Monk Jiu Rou smiled for the first time. With such a crafty smile, it was as if he had waited for this moment the whole time.

Mother! It seemed like this old bald donkey had already schemed all of this beforehand. He gave the fourth rank ancient pill to Feng Fei Yun just so that he would use it at this moment.

Sigh, Feng Fei Yun was in a lot of pain. He was saving this for a moment of life and death, but it seemed like he couldn’t wait any longer.

“How long does this effect last for?”

Feng Fei Yun gritted his teeth and asked.

“One hour!”

Monk Jiu Rou also gritted his teeth.

“What!? Motherfucker, a fourth rank ancient pill only lasting for one hour? So if I can’t suppress that Evil Woman in one hour, then I would surely die once the effect runs out?”

Feng Fei Yun really wanted to take off his shoes and throw them at Monk Jiu Rou’s face.

However, the power of a Ju Qing was truly too great. Not to mention an hour, even one minute was enough to accomplish many things.

To be able to maintain the power of a half Ju Qing for an hour, this pill was indeed worthy to be a fourth rank ancient pill.

Monk Jiu Rou carefully added:

“It can maintain a surge of power like this, but it will also leave behind a side effect. After an hour, when the medicinal effect of the pill is gone, you will directly collapse into unconsciousness. If it is light, then you will sleep for three days before recovering, but if it is severe… You will lie down for three months.”

“What!?”

Feng Fei Yun had just eaten the fourth rank ancient pill. Then, he heard what Monk Jiu Rou said next and almost fainted from anger. However, he really didn’t faint. He simply kicked the shiny bald head of Monk Jiu Rou twice, and immediately left the buddhist pagoda. With Feng Jian Xue, he rushed towards the yellow ancient well.

There was only an hour’s worth of time so every second was very precious and couldn’t afford to be wasted.

Chapter 92 : Two Buddhist Treasures' Origin

The air in Jing Huan Mountain after a rainfall was especially fresh. Blessed with a rainbow spanning across the sky, it was like a scenery painted on a white misty palette, similar to an immortal bridge.

Outside of the mountain, countless flying creatures with strange figures had gathered. There were bronze carriages dragged by ancient beasts that stopped on the road, and thousands of cultivators standing in the midst of the wilderness, overlooking the mountain ranges.

This was a bustling scene. Countless disciples of the immortal sects congregated with many beautiful men and women. All of them were well dressed and had a spiritual aura, like a party of immortals.

In the far distance, Jing Huan Mountain was violently quaking and a fissure extended to the far distance. It was only two meters wide but it was still continuously expanding, as if the entire mountain would eventually collapse.

"Boom!"

The Ju Qings' attacks were indeed too powerful. A sword energy pierced through the mountain and aimed straight for the blue sky.

"It seems like it will be impossible to fish in this troubled water; picking up a few treasures is an impossibility. With the Ju Qings here, we small characters can only watch the fun."

A disciple sighed and said.

"We should probably stand further back. All of the Ju Qings moving together could destroy Jing Huan Mountain; the power could render cultivators lower than Immortal Foundation to several pieces."

A middle-aged man was visibly worried. The moment he finished speaking, there was a series of loud explosions from the far distance. It seemed as if the earth was shattering apart.

"Boom!"

Six amazing powers rushed out from the ground. There were sword energies, fiery clouds, gigantic fists, and the combined power of the five elements. These powers bursted simultaneously, sundering the ground into even more cracks.

“Crakk!”

The high mountain collapsed with countless rocks and debris that rolled down, causing the surrounding dozen miles to be buried. Some cultivators couldn’t escape in time and were crushed alive by giant boulders.

This scene was too shocking! A collapsed mountain had left a giant pit and created a man-made valley.

This valley was hundreds of meters deep and had a dense black fog below. Countless paths were interwoven and filled with the sounds of battle like the drums of the gods resounding.

The Mortal Life Temple appeared on the ground. From the far distant mountains, one could see the buddhist pagodas and the halls inside the godly temple.

These buildings that were underground for more than one thousand years had finally resurfaced in the mortal world. However, the majesty from the past has long been lost and only misery and dilapidation remained.

The old magnificent brilliant temples were now palely dimmed and harbored many cracks. The golden buddhist statues were covered in dust and dirt, as if they were made with mud.

The originally venerable monks were now decomposed corpses that underwent Corpse Transformation. Some were still chanting buddhist scriptures inside the chambers while others were ferociously screaming against the heavens, wanting to rush outside in order to feast on human flesh.

However, at this moment, these corpses were not the main focus. Everyone’s gazes were locked on the yellow ancient well where a shocking battle was taking place.

The six Ju Qings were on the offensive together. Countless energies sweeped the sky!

No one could clearly discern the shadows of these Ju Qings; they were truly too swift, only shadows filled the sky. It was as if there wasn't only six people, but six hundreds figures that surrounded the yellow ancient well.

"What a beautiful woman!"

Young Noble Flawless, who stood on a distant peak, gazed intensely at Xiao Nuo Lan's figure.

A female corpse that had not yet come back to life, but her beauty was already astonishing. This beauty of a whole generation was under siege by the six Ju Qings, so many people lamented the inequality.

However, some cultivators knew the terrifying truth of the female corpse. Inside of her was an endless killing intent. Once she came back to life, it would absolutely be dozen of times worse than a murderous demon.

This was not a beauty, but a devil.

"Why is it so powerful? The six Ju Qings can't break through that light. Plus, there are some wounded by that female corpse and almost died from her counterattack."

Dong Fang Jing Shui was very worried as he watched from the far distance. He also wanted to rush in to join the battle, but reason told him that he shouldn't join a battle of this level.

Even though he was strong, there was still quite a considerable gap between him and a Ju Qing!

Dong Fang Jing Shui originally wanted to find Feng Fei Yun to settle things, but he went around the mountain several time and couldn't even find Feng Fei Yun's shadow. Could it be that the little brat had already escaped?

Dong Fang Jing Yue was also standing at his side, beautiful and tranquil like a fairy.

There was a strange feeling in her heart. She felt that Feng Fei Yun was hiding in the godly temple, so from beginning to end, her sight was searching the buddhist pagodas in order to find the bastard.

"This old man suddenly appeared here. It must be that he is coveting the two

supreme buddhist treasures inside the Mortal Life Temple.”

Second Grandpa, with an unfathomable cultivation, was a grand character of the Yin Gou family. All of the heaven defying talents of the Feng family called him the wise sage. The truth was that he was an existence of the ancient monster ranking, and he knew a few secrets of the Mortal Life Cavern.

He was still sitting on his goat and smoking his pipe. From time to time, he hit the pipe on the goat’s horn and flicked the ashes to the ground.

The goat was skinny. With only bones left and no spirit nor power, it was as if it could collapse at any moment from the weight of the old man.

“Which two buddhist treasures?”

Dong Fang Jing Yue curiously asked.

“The Na Lan Buddhist Robe and Buddhist Jade Bead.”

“How miraculous must these two treasures be to be able to draw six Ju Qings here, together?”

Ju Qings rarely appeared in this world. Most of them were in isolated cultivation in order to find the profound truths of the Immortal Dao. Without a supreme treasure, they wouldn’t take action.

“This is an unfathomable matter. One thousand eight hundred years ago, the Mortal Life Temple was the number one buddhist holy land. Its historical heritage is even older than the Jin Dynasty. Before the inception of the dynasty, the Mortal Life Temple was already there.”

“Each of the abbots of the Mortal Life Temple was a great sage of the buddhist faith. In the Jin Dynasty, their cultivations reached the level of understanding the Heavens and Mortals. They were all stronger than Ju Qings. Since the Na Lan Buddhist Robe was the monastic robe of the abbots, it carried the buddhist aura and fortunes of all of the abbots, so it was no longer an ordinary robe. Each day, it listened to the high monks chant buddhist scriptures, so it became spiritual and formed its own conscience. The legends had it that, in one night, a storm suddenly appeared. The Na Lan Buddhist Robe flew out of the Mortal Life Temple and underwent a Tribulation in the thunderous storms.”

“What!? A monastic robe undergoing a Tribulation? This is too hard to believe!”

Hearing this, Dong Fang Jing Shui couldn’t contain his astonishment and exclaimed.

This had gone beyond common sense, and people didn’t dare to believe it.

“But this was the truth. After it successfully underwent the heavenly Tribulation, it became even more godly. When adorned with this godly robe, even spirit treasures wouldn’t be able to harm even one hair on the wearer. Plus, this monastic robe can assist the wearer in the enlightenment of the dao, and the cultivation speed would become much faster compared to even eating spirit grass.”

When the second grandpa was speaking, even his heart felt admiration. This robe was truly too amazing. Each of its effects was enough to drive a Ju Qing crazy.

“There is such a wonderful treasure in this world. No wonder why these Ju Qings are all so frantic to snatch it.”

Dong Fang Jing Yue gazed towards the godly temple with disdain. She also wanted to see this supreme buddhist treasure to satiate her curiosity.

However, she didn’t know that she had seen it before. At that moment, it was on Feng Fei Yun’s body.

“Although the Na Lan Buddhist Robe is truly magical, but amidst all of the treasures in this world, rumors say that it was still one level lower compared to the Buddhist Jade Bead.”

Second Grandpa said.

“There is a buddhist treasure that is even more magical than the Na Lan Buddhist Robe?”

“Indeed, the Buddhist Jade Bead. A long, long time ago, rumors had it that there was a young monk who drank water next to a stream. At that moment, a crane flew down from the clouds and was also drinking the water. The young monk had never seen such a big giant immortal crane, so he thought he was

seeing a miracle from Bodhisattva. He quickly kneeled down on the ground and respectfully kowtowed. Low and behold, the immortal crane was indeed a transformed female Bodhisattva. She sat on a lotus formation and had buddhist brilliances on top of her head. Her body was illuminated with a golden aura — very magical."

"She gave the Buddhist Jade Bead to that little monk?"

Dong Fang Jing Yue couldn't help but ask.

"Of course it was not so simple. The female Bodhisattva didn't say a single word and only stayed by that stream for nine days. And, the young monk also kneeled down for nine whole days. When the sun came down on the ninth day, the female Bodhisattva finally spoke. She only said one phrase: 'The path of cultivation in this life, the path of Buddhism in the next. When this life is over, the next life will be a Buddha. This is the causality of reincarnation, everlasting for all generations.'"

"Finished speaking, the Bodhisattva's body was ignited in fire. Her buddhist body burned for nine days before the flames finally extinguished. Finally, there was a lotus seed on the lotus formation. The young monk picked up this lotus seed and it turned into the Buddhist Jade Bead."

Second Grandpa retold the ancient legends of the past. After finishing, he asked:

"Who do you think this young monk was?"

"Could it be a monk from the Mortal Life Temple?"

Dong Fang Jing Yue answered.

"You're half right. This young monk was the Patriarch of the Mortal Life Temple, the first abbot. Legends had it that after he reached nirvana and became a Buddha, he disappeared in this world."

Second Grandpa said.

After a moment of silence, Dong Fang Jing Yue said:

"Second Grandpa's telling of this tale is just like the stories you told us when we were little!"

“This is not an ancient tale, this is a true existence. There were many documentations from the Buddhist faith; otherwise, do you think those old monsters would still be battling that female corpse, and not afraid of dying? The truth is that they all want the treasure of the Bodhisattva in the legends. Some say that the Buddhist Jade Bead is actually the prolonged life essence of the Bodhisattva. The next reincarnation of the Bodhisattva might come from the Buddhist Jade Bead. Once one meditates with the buddhist profound truths of the Bodhisattva inside, that person could understand the Immortal Dao and become a supreme dao celestial.”

Second Grandpa sincerely said.

“Quickly, take a look… who is that?”

The tiger eyes of Dong Fang Jing Shui suddenly exuded two evil lights. He almost jumped up as his finger pointed towards the godly temple.

There was a person leaving the godly temple from a buddhist pagoda. Many people who saw this scene were surprised.

There was a living person inside the godly temple!

Chapter 93 : Killing with a Borrowed Knife

"It is Feng Fei Yun!"

Dong Feng Jing Shui gently whispered while his crimson cloak fluttered in the wind.

In the far distance, illuminated by a buddhist lamp, the front door of the buddhist pagoda was opened and issued a creaking sound. Feng Fei Yun went out from inside the pagoda.

Feng Fei Yun, with his sharp eyebrows, was seemingly very heroic. His clothes were neat and clean, and he was handsome with a hidden charm of depth. Covered with an unprecedented powerful aura, it was as if he had become one with the dao of the heaven and earth.

Each of his movements had its own law, like a Ju Qing that had cultivated for several hundred years.

Many people had never seen Feng Fei Yun, so they subtly guessed the identity of the youth that came out from the buddhist pagoda. As for the ones who knew Feng Fei Yun, they were extremely surprised and alarmed by his sudden change.

This person was only a junior who was chased around the entire Violet Firmament Ancient City by the Feng experts, so how did his body suddenly contain such a soaring monstrous power? It was as if he will turn the heavens upside down, today.

Feng Jian Xue followed right behind Feng Fei Yun's back. The Na Lan Buddhist Robe on her body flashed out a blue buddhist brilliance, encompassing her entire body. The six Heavenly Buddhist Essences inside her body were also active and exuded a holy light outward.

As her body was covered with holy buddhist light, she was stepping on a lotus formation with nine layers, like a female bodhisattva. However, her figure was slender, like an innocent girl. She stood next to Feng Fei Yun, using his shoulder to hide her stunning beauty.

It was as if she didn't want to be recognized by some other people!

“Could this girl be a fairy? No, a female Bodhisattva?”

Some felt the holy presence from her body, and their souls were affected by the Na Lan Buddhist Robe. They almost kneeled down to kowtow and worship her!

Dong Fang Jing Yue naturally also saw this scene. Her expression under her veil became pale, and her gaze was focused on Feng Jian Xue. She judged every part of Jian Xue’s body, not even sparing a single strand of her hair.

She was very meticulous, but she didn’t look at Feng Fei Yun at all. All of her focus was on Feng Jian Xue. Just who was this girl?

“I can’t believe this little brat Feng Fei Yun dares to hide concubines in his golden pavilion. No, it is hiding concubines in his broken temple! Truly disgusting. Little Sister, you don’t need a man like this. I will go in your stead and punish him for you.”

The evil killing intent on Dong Fang Jing Shui’s body started to rise. His armor trembled, creating the sounds of steel colliding with each other.

Second Grandpa put away his tobacco pipe and his eyes suddenly shone with two bright lights. He gently placed one hand on Dong Fang Jing Shui’s shoulder and shook his head:

“There is something strange about this brat, don’t be rash.”

“Second Grandpa, this brat dares to like another woman, how can we let him live?”

Dong Fang Jing Shui, with his unparalleled presence, still wanted to make a move.

“Hmph, a man toying with our Little Yue’s heart, of course he deserves to die. However, Little Yue hasn’t even said anything, why are you — as a man — so blindly excited?”

Second Grandpa sternly glared at him.

Dong Fang Jing Shui was a king in the younger generation, but there was someone in the world who dared to scold him like this. Only his Second Grandpa was able to do so. Even the clan master of the Yin Gou family would mind his

words.

Dong Fang Jing Shui lovingly smiled and glanced at his Little Sister's eyes. However, she was still silently standing there. Her white robe gently fluttered in the wind as she carried her red lute. She was gentle and elegant, like nothing had happened.

It was truly like this matter had nothing to do with her. This impressed Dong Fang Jing Shui because he didn't expect for her to remain so calm; this control of her emotions was indeed worthy of her cultivation.

Dong Fang Jing Yue's eyes gradually narrowed. She laughed like a bright crescent moon!

"I can't believe she is still smiling!"

Dong Fang Jing Shui couldn't help but sigh. The heart of a woman was truly too hard to understand.

Dong Fang Jing Yue suddenly opened her mouth. With her clear and gentle voice, she murmured:

"The girl behind Feng Fei Yun is wearing the Na Lan Buddhist Robe. This is the supreme treasure of the buddhist faith. Anyone who wears it can understand the buddhist scriptures and become impervious to spirit treasures. It truly is a priceless buddhist treasure."

She didn't deliberately suppress her voice. Even though it seemed like she was muttering to herself, many cultivators nearby had heard her. They had heard of the legends regarding the Na Lan Buddhist Robe, before. Reminded by Dong Fang Jing Yue, they all became excited.

All of their gazes locked onto Feng Jian Xue. They were no longer gazes of sincere worship, but the eyes of desire. They wished that they could take off the buddhist robe from her body as soon as possible.

"The girl that looks like a Bodhisattva behind Feng Fei Yun is wearing the Na Lan Buddhist Robe!"

"This is the supreme treasure in the legends of the buddhist faith!"

"Everyone, look! She has a jade bead in her hand, could this be the Buddhist

Jade Bead?”

*** ***

Numerous monks were moved. From one mouth to another, this news was suddenly spread to everyone. They were all attracted by the supreme treasure and were no longer afraid of death. They slowly headed towards the direction of the godly temple.

Killing people to steal treasures — a truly lucrative venture, and definitely worthy of risking their lives.

Dong Fang Jing Yue was still silently standing there, like the bright moon in the sky, elegant and beautiful. She was still giving off a beautiful smile.

Dong Fang Jing Shui and Second Grandpa looked at each other and felt a cold chill. They lamented:

“The heart of this girl is too cold blooded. We cannot mess with her, definitely cannot mess with her.”

“What are you two saying?”

Dong Fang Jing Yue was not aware that something was wrong.

“Nothing, nothing. Very excellent, ah! Very smart!”

“Such an amazing application of using a borrowed knife to kill!”

***

Feng Fei Yun and Feng Jian Xue rushed like the wind towards the yellow ancient well. They planned to use the Buddhist Jade Bead to suppress Xiao Niu Lan and completely destroy the seal of life in her body.

“Monk Jiu Rou said that only the person wearing the Na Lan Buddhist Robe could enter that light. I will help you open a hole. After going in, you have to be careful. Even though the bead can suppress Xiao Niu Lan, you have to be wary of the yellow ancient well’s power.”

Feng Fei Yun reminded.

“You can rest assured. If I don’t come out in an hour from the light, then you should leave this place and not worry about me.”

Feng Jian Xue knew that the power of the ancient pill only lasted for an hour. After an hour, Feng Fei Yun's power would decrease to the lowest level possible. At that moment, he must escape to a desolate place; otherwise, he would die for sure.

Feng Fei Yun stopped and firmly said:

"If you don't come out from the light, I will absolutely not leave this place."

Feng Jian Xue was a bit surprised. She stared at the tall figure of Feng Fei Yun, who was holding the Invincible Buddhist Staff, and couldn't help but quiver. She cried out:

"Feng… Fei Yun!"

"What?"

Feng Fei Yun originally wanted to rush towards the yellow ancient well with his staff. He didn't want to waste his time, but he still stopped and turned around to ask.

"My real name really isn't Feng Jian Xue!"

"You have already told me this."

Feng Fei Yun said.

"My real name is… Na Lan Xue Jian. That Monk Jiu Rou is actually…"

She seemed to want to say something else, but there was a roar that came from above her and a thunder struck down. If the Na Lan Buddhist Robe didn't stop part of the impact, then she would have been dead at this moment.

"So the Na Lan Buddhist Robe is on your body… Hurry and hand it to me."

From the sky, fiery clouds were intertwining with thunders. Countless thunderous lights encompassed this world along with the flames.

This was not the sky, but only a palm. However, this palm was too huge! The two felt as if the entire sky had become fire and thunder.

The Third Lord of the Sen Luo Temple recognized the presence of the Na Lan Buddhist Robe, so he gave up on attacking the yellow ancient well and headed over here instead.

A Ju Qing's strike was truly not a joke. This palm gave others the feeling of an endless killing intent.

Feng Jian Xue had never witnessed such a scene before. The buddhist light on her body was burned away by the flames, as if it wanted to directly melt her into a pool of blood.

"Clank!"

The Invincible Buddhist Staff rapidly moved and unleashed a blinding light. With the staff in his hand, he suddenly emitted an endless battle prowess and headed straight for the sky.

"Kill!"

He yelled out.

With his killing intent, Feng Fei Yun was unstoppable like a death god. His Invincible Buddhist Staff directly pierced through the palm of Huo Tuo Tuo and carried an endless power all the way to the real body of Huo Tuo Tuo.

This was wanting to defy the heavens. A younger generation junior dared to make a move against a demon that was famous for many hundred years!

"Boom!"

This scene shocked everyone. They were too appalled to say a word.

Today wouldn't be an ordinary day. Many things that would shock the world had now just begun.

Chapter 94 : Battle Against Ju Qing

"What is going on? Who is this brat? He was able to destroy the Fiery Reincarnation Evil Grand Palm of the Huo Tuo Tuo. Could he be a genius of the Grand Historical level?!"

An elder of a large immortal sect exclaimed out loud, and he was quite shocked.

The "Fiery Reincarnation Evil Grand Palm" was one of the twelve grand evil techniques of the Sen Luo Temple. Huo Tuo Tuo was the previous third lord of the third palace hall, and was known as the "Reincarnation King". He cultivated the Fiery Reincarnation Evil Grand Palm to its utmost mastery.

All of the lords of the ten palace halls of the Sen Luo Temple were matchless, ferocious demons in this world. Huo Tuo Tuo already became a lord a few hundred years ago, so one could only imagine the height of his cultivation, today.

He was a character that, if one was below the Ju Qing rank, they simply couldn't handle one move from him.

But at this moment, this young man in silk clothing, with great spirit and a buddhist staff in his hand, was able to break through the proud evil technique of Huo Tuo Huo. Even though it was only one move, it was more than enough to make the spectators' blood boil.

This was a king of the younger generation opposing a Ju Qing of the previous generation!

"This is not one of the characters in the Grand Historical Genius level. He is the traitor of the Feng family, son of the Evil Demon, Feng Fei Yun!"

A heavenly daughter of a great family looked at the sky. With inspired battle intent and an excited heart, her eyes were flashing.

The eighth elder of the Feng family was standing on top of a bronze carriage, holding an ancient book. His originally pale and refined features became livid and was unable to remain calm.

A junior with a shallow cultivation suddenly became so powerful, and almost comparable to a Ju Qing. Could this be the true power of the Evil Demon's son?

Could it be that the Evil Demon Blood in his body has been awakened?

This was a slap to the face, ah!

The traitor, chased everywhere by the Feng family, turned out to be a peerless genius. How could the elders and ancestors of the Feng family handle this? They couldn't kill him, but only made a new powerful enemy against the clan!

The expressions of the Feng disciples present were very hard to watch. Feng Fei Yun's brilliance was too bright, making them feel shameful. They only relied on their pitiful cultivations, yet they still dared to chase him before; this was only bringing disgrace upon themselves.

"Continuous flow!"

The flames continued to burst and the thunders were exploding in the sky!

Even though the fiery figure was one hundred meters high and one finger was as big as a pillar, this was not the real body of Huo Huo but only flames that condensed into a fiery figure.

No one really knew where his real body was hiding within the giant fiery figure.

"Good little brat!"

The fiery figure roared and the palm that was penetrated by Feng Fei Yun was immediately repaired by fire and became intact again. The surface of the hand gained a new fiery armor, with thunders circulating through it.

Feng Fei Yun was floating in the air as he condescendingly looked down.

The Invincible Buddhist Staff in his hand had thirty-six formations. They were engraved in an overlapping manner into different layers on the body. From there, thirty six flashing layers of lights started to shine.

After taking the fourth rank ancient pill, the energy surged inside Feng Fei Yun's body. It was as if there were flames in his dantian that always provided him with an endless energy, allowing him to activate the formations within the Invincible Buddhist Staff and waking up its power.

This was the true power of the Invincible Buddhist Staff. It had the power of a spirit treasure; however, it was much more powerful than an ordinary spirit treasure.

Feng Fei Yun also had the Infinite Spirit Ring, but in order to awaken the spirit awareness and the formations within a spirit treasure, it would require a huge amount of spirit energy.

Feng Fei Yun's cultivation was only at the intermediate Immortal Foundation so even if he channeled all of his energy, he could only activate the formations inside the spirit treasure for a single second, and it would only be enough to activate it for one attack.

After this one attack, his energy would dry up and he would not even have one percent of his battle strength. Plus, the activated attack would only be one tenth of the spirit treasure's true power, or even one out of a hundred.

This was why, even though Feng Fei Yun had a spirit treasure in his hand, he never activated the formations on its surface before. At the very most, he would only borrow a part of its energy to increase his own battle power by one small level. This was not considered utilizing the true power of the spirit treasure.

Before, Feng Fei Yun could fight against an intermediate God Base with the Invincible Buddhist Staff, but that was only borrowing a strand of its power and not activating its formations and spirit awareness. Thus, it was not the true power of the Invincible Buddhist Staff.

But at this moment, the situation was completely different. With the power of the ancient pill, Feng Fei Yun's cultivation had reached the half Ju Qing realm, and he could completely activate the formations of the staff and utilize its true power.

It was even more powerful than a regular spirit treasure!

The thirty-six formations on the Invincible Buddhist Staff were simultaneously activated, like thirty six wheels rotating at the same time. They emitted a loud sound, like the chanting of thirty six buddhist high monks.

"Whoever blocks me will die!"

Feng Fei Yun unleashed a glow from his mouth. He combined the Invincible

Buddhist Staff with his own power and borrowed the world's lightning and wind to attack the outrageously large fiery figure.

The fiery figure was the external body of Huo Tuo Tuo, as well as his representative image. If a junior like Feng Fei Yun could break it, then, in the future, Huo Tuo Tuo didn't need to hang around the cultivation world any longer. He should then just directly go back to the godly capital prison and spend his life there, awaiting death in shame.

The Fiery Reincarnation Evil Grand Palm condensed once again. This time, the palm was even more realistic and had even more violent flames. Even though it was just a wave of fire, it could still melt steel from dozens of meters away into molten liquid, not to mention the flesh of humans.

The high temperature was only a small matter. What was even more frightening was the thunders within the palm when it traversed through the air. They were like chains that connected the fingers, not allowing anything to destroy it.

"First Palm Repression!"

The huge fiery palm from the sky came crashing down onto Feng Fei Yun's head and forced him deep into the ground. It created a huge crater in the ground, creating large waves of dust and rendered the ground into multiple parts.

"Boom!"

Feng Fei Yun was swallowed by the palm. He was possibly pressed into meat paste.

This palm was the true power of Huo Tuo Tuo, and also the true power of the Fiery Reincarnation Evil Grand Palm. A youth from the younger generation couldn't possibly block it.

This simple palm was shocking to many people. Feng Fei Yun was only a traitor of the Feng family. To be able to die under the supreme evil technique of Huo Tuo Tuo, this was truly a great honor and would be written down in the historical annals to be read by future generations.

Many people saw Feng Fei Yun dying under the Fiery Reincarnation Evil Grand

Palm without the power to resist. Not even his corpse was left.

“Indeed worthy of being the Reincarnation King of the Sen Luo Temple. Even though he was suppressed in the godly capital prison for several hundred years, his evil presence didn’t decrease and his cultivation is just as strong as before.”

“Those who dare to oppose Ju Qings are bound to die in their hands with one blow. Even geniuses of the Grand Historical level are no exception. Plus, the Evil Demon Blood running through the body of Feng Fei Yun had not awakened and he could only be considered a nobody, how could he block that palm?”

“Even though he died, it was a glorious death. I noticed that Huo Tuo Tuo exerted his full strength, and that was the Fiery Reincarnation Evil Grand Palm at it maximum potential.”

*** ***

Everyone was talking about the duel from earlier, and they felt that Feng Fei Yun had died a heroic death under the Fiery Reincarnation Evil Grand Palm. Not long from now, someone will carve a tombstone for him — a fitting end for a king of the younger generation.

“Boom!”

A golden light suddenly flew out from the already-scorched ground. It swept through the sky like a bright golden cloud and immediately struck the fiery figure, penetrating its huge right eye.

A golden shadow flew out from the neck of the fiery figure and flew upward towards the sky. It was wielding a golden staff and exuded a golden light. Then, it came down like a flooding waterfall from the horizon above.

“Bang!”

The giant head of the fiery figure suddenly exploded, and even the fiery armor protecting it had collapsed at the same time.

The very mighty fiery figure — in a flash — became headless. If there wasn’t a great source of mighty energy controlling it from inside, then the fiery figure would have been crushed.

The golden shadow stood on top of a buddhist pagoda after his powerful

attack. He was holding the Invincible Buddhist Staff. With slightly disheveled hair, he coldly glared at the fiery figure. Burning flames shined brightly in his eyes, like two dancing phoenixes.

It was indeed Feng Fei Yun!

How could one Fiery Reincarnation Evil Grand Palm kill him? His long hair draped over his shoulders while he stood up straight, exuding powerful aura.

The Dragon Horse River Diagram!

Like a godly river hovering over the sky, the dragon horse breathed in the essence of the moon and temporarily ruled over a corner of the sky. It changed the color of the sky itself. At this moment, Feng Fei Yun was not a person, but an incarnation of the heavens and earth. He was able to change the energy aura of the mountains and rivers.

Chapter 95 : Being a Good Man is Difficult

Feng Fei Yun stood on top of the ruined buddhist temple. He walked on a one hundred zhang high golden dome that was made from copper tiles. His black hair freely draped downward while his white robe was stained with drops of blood, giving off a chilling presence.

He stood straight in an awe-inspiring manner while the mysterious and ancient Dragon Horse River Diagram floated on top of his head.

The head of the Evil Fire Body was destroyed by the Invincible Buddhist Staff, but it didn't harm the actual body of the Huo Tuo Tuo. Another giant head immediately converged together and grew out from the neck.

After being suppressed in the Godly Capital's prison for many hundred years, could it be that the cultivation world has become so powerful that even a junior would have such frightening battle prowess?

Huo Tuo Tuo was an evil demon since the old times. He threw three moves against this junior, but he couldn't suppress the opponent, and instead, his Evil Fire Body was almost shattered by him. It made him wondered if his cultivation had fallen from before.

"Kshhh Kshhh!"

In the far distance, on the high buddhist pagoda, a tawny broken window was opened. Monk Jiu Rou was standing next to the window. With his eyes as big as bronze bells, he stared towards the horizon and slightly nodded his head:

"This brat is indeed something else. He has an ancient aura and willpower that is no less than a Ju Qing. The son of the Evil Demon truly cannot be understood by others."

The medicinal effect of the fourth rank ancient pill was extremely powerful and could increase the power of a cultivator to the half Ju Qing rank in a short amount of time. However, for a cultivator at the Immortal Foundation, to control the power of a half Ju Qing was extremely difficult.

In the end, cultivation was a process to harness the power of the mind. If the

willpower of a person was unable to match the strength of the cultivation, then they wouldn't be able to exert the true power of a half Ju Qing. An ordinary person being able to exert one fifth of the power would have been quite amazing.

However, Feng Fei Yun was not only able to use this half Ju Qing's power, but he was also able to surpass it like a real Ju Qing. His battle power was not any lesser compared to an experienced Ju Qing like Huo Tuo Tuo, who had been famous for hundreds of years.

"This brat actually managed to activate the formation of the Invincible Buddhist Staff! It's no wonder why he could fight against Huo Tuo Tuo, but how did he do it?"

There was a curious expression on Monk Jiu Rou's face. However, no matter how he thought about it, he couldn't come up with the reasons, so he attributed it to the miraculousness of being the son of the Evil Demon.

After all, the Jin Dynasty had expelled all of the demons. In this area of the world, there had not been any demons appearing for a long time. Feng Fei Yun could be considered the only human with the blood of a demon running in his blood for the past few thousand years.

A person whose body had both the blood of man and demon flowing inside!

Many people were extremely fearful of the evil demons, but they were also very curious about their powers. They felt that Feng Fei Yun definitely had different capabilities than a pure human.

Monk Jiu Rou shared this same notion.

Feng Fei Yun glanced towards the yellow ancient well. The light from its mouth was ejecting at an increasing higher rate. More than one thousand faint rays rushed outward, causing Xiao Niu Lan, who was bathed in the rays, to seemingly become more and more like a fairy. Lights appeared in her skin and there was a hint of pinkness on her cheeks, as if the blood had began to flow through all of the cells in her body.

Even though there were five Ju Qings attacking the ancient formation, they couldn't break through the light and were stopped outside. They were unable to

take a single step forward.

At this time, everyone felt the hatred exuding from Xiao Niu Lan's body. This was a resentment against the entire world. When she revived, she would absolutely become an Evil Woman of Destruction.

Previously, the Ju Qings were only thinking about how to steal the two supreme Buddhist Treasures, but at the moment, they felt a sense of danger and urgency. They didn't want Xiao Niu Lan to actually revive.

In the end, this was the area of the Grand Southern Prefecture. These Ju Qings were all ancestors of the great powers that resided within this area. They were afraid that, once she revived, she would begin her destruction, starting at the Grand Southern Prefecture's cultivation world. At that moment, there wouldn't be anyone or any great powers that could be her match. The entire prefecture would transform into hell!

Thus, these Ju Qings didn't stop their attacks on the yellow ancient well even after the Na Lan Buddhist Robe came into being. Their hearts were frightened of the Evil Woman's recovery.

Only Huo Tuo Tuo was not worried about this matter because he was the Third Lord of the Sen Luo Temple. The Sen Luo Temple was not located in the Grand Southern Prefecture, so he wouldn't be worried about a sect-destroying calamity. He was completely free to attack Feng Fei Yun and Feng Jian Xue, and he was hellbent on stealing the Na Lan Buddhist Robe. As for whether Xiao Niu Lan lived or died, it had little impact on him.

"Jian Xue… No, Xue Jian, I will open a hole for you. As for whether Xiao Niu Lan can be suppressed or not, I'm counting on you."

Feng Fei Yun flew down from the buddhist rooftop and caught Na Lan Xue Jian's jade-like hand, then he took her towards the ancient yellow well. When they were one hundred zhang outside, Feng Fei Yun suddenly stopped, paused for a moment, then said:

"If it is impossible to suppress her, then turn back and escape. There is no need to force it."

The reason why Feng Fei Yun said this was because he remembered the

abbot's entrustment before he died. Even until the very end, he didn't want to kill Xiao Niu Lan.

Even though her entire body was surrounded by hatred, this did not mean that she will absolutely become an Evil Woman. Maybe she will also have a good side.

"Juniors, the Na Lan Buddhist Robe belongs to the virtuous. This old man will get it for sure, today."

Huo Tuo Tuo screamed as he was approaching. Each of his steps left huge footprints on the ground that were many feet long. These footsteps were burnt by his fire until the prints were pitch black, leaving holes that were several feet deep in the ground.

Feng Fei Yun pushed Na Lan Xue Jian towards the yellow ancient well, and he took a sudden step forward. He stomped onto the ground to erect a wall made out of dirt, and this temporarily stopped the advancement of the Evil Fire Body.

Because Na Lan Xue Jian was wearing the Na Lan Buddhist Robe and stepped on the Nine Layers Buddhist Lotus Formation, the light exuded from the yellow ancient well essentially couldn't stop her path. Even the bloody heart on top of Xiao Niu Lan didn't try to attack her.

She gently approached inside the ancient land. The formation below her emitted waves of lights, opening the path for her to come closer to the yellow ancient well.

"Boom!"

The Evil Fire Body had destroyed the wall and his giant foot stomped downward!

Feng Fei Yun also flew up and directly attacked with the Invincible Buddhist Staff. The thirty six formations activated at the same time and turned into thirty six giant magical rings; they had a radius of several dozen meters. The rings first approached the giant foot and slowly entrapped the Evil Fire Body into the formation.

At this moment, Na Lan Xue Jian had just went inside the light. Feng Fei Yun will absolutely not let anyone disturb her; even a Ju Qing wouldn't be able to take a single step forward.

“Boom!”

The Evil Fire Body destroyed the shackles and it became more violent and ferocious. It knocked Feng Fei Yun flying with one fist, causing the flesh on his arm and chest to be ripped apart as blood freely flowed out.

In the end, Huo Tuo Tuo was a Ju Qing and Feng Fei Yun was only equal to a half Ju Qing, so there was a gap between the two.

“How did she get into the light? What is she doing in there?”

The sound of Huo Tuo Tuo appeared from inside the Evil Fire Body; it almost sounded like a growl. Wave after wave of sounds approached Feng Fei Yun, causing his hair to fly wildly and his robe to violently flap in the wind.

Huo Tuo Tuo felt that this matter was not ordinary. After all, several Ju Qings couldn’t destroy this light, but this little girl was able to easily enter. Others couldn’t help but become suspicious of the reason.

Not only Huo Tuo Tuo, but many people here had worrying expressions. Some thought that Na Lan Xue Jian was here to help the revival of the female corpse to destroy all of the people in this place, and maybe even all existences.

Other people speculated that Na Lan Xue Jian was here to steal the cultivation of the female corpse, and to take advantage of her not yet being revived and steal her body.

In the end, everyone had their own thoughts. They felt that Feng Fei Yun was scheming for his own benefits, that he was using this woman to steal the dao foundation of the female corpse in order to control a supreme master and become a tyrant in the cultivation world.

“We can never let this son of the Evil Demon accomplish his objective. I believe that this young woman is a chess piece for Feng Fei Yun. He wants to capture the thousand year old female corpse to increase his own cultivation. If he can control the thousand year old female corpse, then the entire Grand Southern Prefecture will be lost in his hands.”

A mocking expression appeared in the Feng’s eighth elder’s eyes as he loudly advocated a conspiracy theory.

After this exclamation, the unfriendly gazes increased in number. Moreover, Feng Fei Yun was the son of the Evil Demon so many people instinctively wanted to exclude him. Thus, when the eighth elder spoke, everyone became outraged.

The five Ju Qings that were attacking the yellow ancient well stopped as well. They also saw the young woman entering the light. The young woman was a supreme beauty that wore the Na Lan Buddhist Robe while riding a Nine Layers Buddhist Lotus Formation. With an air of otherworldliness, she was indescribable with words.

She was truly the embodiment of purity and goodness. At least, on the surface, everyone felt this way.

However, she was also the same person who came out of the buddhist pagoda along with Feng Fei Yun. She was a pure and holy woman, but Feng Fei Yun was the son of the Evil Demon. Many people suspected that Feng Fei Yun was using her as a pawn.

The six Ju Qings were no longer attacking the well, and instead, surrounded Feng Fei Yun in the center.

“Boom!”

Six majestic auras squeezed a nearby buddhist hall to immediately collapse into ruins. The golden buddhist statues were all pressured into strange shapes, and the glazed tiles were ground into powders.

Being a good man was difficult! At this moment, Feng Fei Yun understood the deep meaning behind these words!

Chapter 96 : Jin River Copper Cauldron

“Feng Fei Yun, what kind of devilish trick are you trying to pull?”

A Feng ancestor was standing on a brick wall of the temple. He was wearing a bagua robe while holding a blue cauldron that was made out of copper.

His face was filled with wrinkles, and his gray hair was three feet long. His experienced eyes had a sense of ancient and enlightened wisdom, along with a harsh countenance. His first words were to scold Feng Fei Yun, as if he was lecturing a young descendant.

If Feng Fei Yun was still a disciple of the Feng family, then maybe he would still bear some respect for the old man. However, at this moment, he didn’t even glance at him. He only dryly coughed twice and said:

“What can I do. I am only a junior. In the eyes of Ju Qing characters, such as yourselves, I am merely an ant.”

Feng Fei Yun naturally knew that they were all suspecting him, thinking that he had some great scheme, so they wanted to suppress him. Feng Fei Yun only coldly chuckled in regards to their ignorance, and he didn’t bother give an explanation.

This was because, even if he explained, they wouldn’t believe him anyway.

“How bold of you! You dare to use that tone to speak with this old man — so arrogant. Your body truly has the Evil Demon’s Blood flowing through it.”

The Feng ancestor felt very disrespected.

A junior from his family dared to speak in such a presumptuous manner towards him; it even had a clear sense of contempt. How could outsiders not joke about this?

If he didn’t teach this junior a lesson, then where would he hide his face?

“I will keep speaking like this!”

Feng Fei Yun’s bias against the Feng family was very deep. Because of the evil

demon's battle armor, they pursued him and wanted to take the Evil Demon's Blood from his body. The Feng ancestor was merely someone whose heart was clouded by greed, why would he need to show him any respect?

Feng Fei Yun sternly declared:

"As long as I, Feng Fei Yun, remain alive, sooner or later, I will come back to the Feng family to take back what belongs to me. At that moment, grievances will be dealt with, and revenge will be dished out."

"A traitor such as yourself… It seems like I cannot let you be!"

The Feng ancestor hyped himself up as his eyes widened and his hair began to flow freely in the wind. He attacked with the blue copper cauldron in his hand. Even though it was just as big as a fist, it was engraved with six dense formations that were filled with spirituality.

Feng Fei Yun had heard that the Feng family had three main Spirit Treasures. One of them was a copper cauldron, weighing three thousand and eight hundred jin, but it was only as big as a man's fist. There were ancient runes engraved on it from several thousand years ago.

This copper cauldron was mined by the Feng ancestors from a large river. It sunk under the sediments for thousand of years and decayed into nothingness. After several generations of refinement by the Feng family, it finally had the shape of the "Jin River Copper Cauldron" of today.

The copper cauldron was small and exquisite. It was carved with two ear handles along with four corners that were engraved with ancient runes and filled with spirituality. Amongst the three Spirit Treasures of the Feng family, the offensive power of the Jin River Copper Cauldron was not the highest, and its defensive power was not the best either. However, it had the power to gather the energy of the heavens and earth.

Legends has it that a sage from the Feng family used a grand technique to completely restore the Jin River Copper Cauldron. Then, it sucked in an entire mountain and refined it into a piece of hard iron as big as a fist. This hard iron could be used to refine top treasures.

A huge mountain was even refined into iron as big as a fist. If a person was

sucked inside, it would be easy to refine him into a grain of sand.

All of the Feng disciples knew of this rumor, so they were quite in awe of the copper cauldron. It would be better to run when met with this Spirit Treasure.

But at the moment, Feng Fei Yun couldn't run; he couldn't even take a step back.

"Infinite Spirit Ring!"

The Infinite Spirit Ring on Feng Fei Yun's palm began to rapidly revolve. It issued many mysterious ghastly voices and a black cloud flew above, issuing a large black sheen.

There were six ancient engraved texts on the Infinite Spirit Ring that turned into six ancient diagrams. They were the "Eight Trigrams Mysterious Language", "Four Yang Ancient Cauldron", "Netherworld Spirit Pagoda", "Heavenly Flying King", "Hundred Ghosts Banquet", and "Ten Thousands Lights" diagrams. The items were floating in the dantian of Feng Fei Yun, along with the Dragon Horse River Diagram. They were all very mysterious, as if they were six ancient symbols that were hiding a grand secret. However, no one had the power to decipher them.

The six ancient diagrams began to move as if six grand formations were activating.

The Crimson Dragon spirit that was flying around the Infinite Spirit Ring began to bellow out arrogant dragon roars. The spirit of the Spirit Treasure had recovered, and it became even more conscientious.

"The Infinite Spirit Ring!"

The huge voice of Huo Tuo Tuo resounded from inside the Evil Fire Body. This old devil immediately recognized the black Infinite Spirit Ring.

The Infinite Spirit Ring originally belonged to the Sen Luo Temple, and it was stolen away by San Ye. San Ye wanted to study the vast mysteries of the ring, but before he could make any progress, he was already killed by the hands of Dong Fang Jing Yue.

Huo Tuo Tuo clearly knew the origin of the Infinite Spirit Ring. Even though it

was only a half Spirit Treasure, it was considered by each of the hall lords as an ancient mysterious treasure. He didn't know how it turned into a real Spirit Treasure, or how it fell into the hands of such a junior.

The Infinite Spirit Ring and the Jin River Copper Cauldron began a heated battle. The two Spirit Treasures were both ancient existences and had hidden powers that were not unlocked by the users.

Their sizes were not large, but their power was extremely powerful. Each of the spirit lights that came from them were no less than the spirit techniques unleashed by the Ju Qings. They shook the heavens and caused the clouds to immediately dissipate.

"Rammmrmm!"

The sucking power of the Jin River Copper Cauldron couldn't repress the Infinite Spirit Ring. On the contrary, it was struck by the ring, creating thunderous noises, as if it had been penetrated.

Spirit Treasures were godly weapons that could rule over one direction. Even several Ju Qings wouldn't necessarily own a single one, let alone others. Amongst the six Ju Qings that were present, only three of them had Spirit Treasures.

One of them was the Jin River Copper Cauldron of the Feng ancestor, another was the Sky Breaking Sword of the Grand Development Immortal Gate's ancestor, and the last was the "Evil Fire Body" of Huo Tuo Tuo.

There was a great distance between Ju Qings with Spirit Treasures and those without one. In the end, the power of the Spirit Treasures were too formidable. Once completely activated, they could be extremely overwhelming.

Even though there were six Ju Qings here, the most powerful ones were the Feng ancestor, the Great Development Immortal Gate ancestor, and Huo Tuo Tuo.

However, Spirit Treasures were the ultimate killing weapons. Even Ju Qings would seldom fully recover their entire battle prowess because it required too much spirit energy.

Unless if it was a last resort, no one was willing to summon their Spirit Treasures to attract attention from everywhere — this would bring about

unnecessary trouble. If evil sects became interestested, it could bring about an unexpected sect destroying calamity.

The three Spirit Treasures were the strongest foundation and the reason why the Feng family was able to become a great power for more than one thousand years in the Grand Southern Prefecture. As long as the three Spirit Treasures were there, they could sustain the Feng family's heritage.

The other great powers only had one Spirit Treasure, or even none. So, the truth was that the Feng family was quite powerful.

However, the junior, Feng Fei Yun, was able to summon two Spirit Treasures — which were the Invincible Buddhist Staff and Infinite Spirit Ring. It drove these Ju Qings to be crazy with jealousy.

Two Spirit Treasures, two Spirit Treasures, ah! It was enough to start a large immortal sect!

"Let the Feng family deal with themselves! The competition between Spirit Treasures are too destructive. Even Ju Qings can be hurt!"

The Qin ancestor sighed loudly.

Even though Ju Qings were quite powerful, a Ju Qing with a Spirit Treasure could defeat another Ju Qing. However, it was still impossible to kill one.

Killing a Ju Qing was extremely difficult and easier said than done. Even a Spirit Treasure couldn't do it.

The Qin ancestor naturally was not afraid. He only wanted to watch a good show, to see the Feng family lose their face in front of all of these cultivators.

"Old Man Feng, it seems like you are becoming weaker as you grow old. You can't even suppress a junior! I will come give you a hand!"

Huo Tuo Tuo issued a cold and devious smile as he joined in the fight.

This old devil naturally didn't want to help the Feng ancestor deal with the traitor. Instead, he only wanted to steal the Infinite Spirit Ring from Feng Fei Yun. This was a treasure of the Sen Luo Temple; it hid a stunning secret, so he must retrieve it.

Chapter 97 : Female Corpse's Awakening

Two Ju Qings joining forces to take down a junior from the younger generation — if this matter were to be spread, then the reputations of the two Ju Qings would be ruined while Feng Fei Yun's reputation would definitely shock the world.

"It is over. With two Ju Qings taking action together, who here could stop them?"

Many cultivators were dumbfounded and were greatly surprised by Feng Fei Yun's power. However, when the two Ju Qings were about to fight him at the same time, everyone felt sorry for Feng Fei Yun.

It seemed as if a king of the younger generation will perish today, dying inside the godly temple.

Dong Fang Jing Shui asked:

"Second Grandpa, do I need to lend him a helping hand?"

The old man riding on the mountain goat rubbed his nest-like hair and glanced at Dong Fang Jing Yue, and he smilingly asked:

"Little Girl, what do you say?"

Both the old and young man assumed that Dong Fang Jing Yue was deeply in love with Feng Fei Yun. As for them, they also wanted to help Feng Fei Yun in order to get a great young talent with boundless potential to join the Yin Gou family, but they still wanted to tease Dong Fang Jing Yue first.

They were hoping to hear her personally implore them.

However, they didn't know that the feelings of Dong Fang Jing Yue towards Feng Fei Yun was rather vague. There were some grievances, as well as an unspeakable appreciation for his talents, but for a woman as proud as her to ask them for help, this was harder than reaching the heavens.

No matter the kind of women, in the beginning, they were all very shy!

If a woman's skin has thickened, then they must have encountered a man with thick-skin as well. This type of shamelessness could only be learned and incorporated into one's natural demeanor or sheer pretense!

However, our fourth Young Miss Dong Fang is still only a young girl. She had only just come out from the Godly Dragon Palace on top of the Heavenly Mountain to the real world. Her skin was still very thin. Even if she truly liked someone, she wouldn't be able to say it out loud — this would be too embarrassing, ah!

"Let him die! He's just a son of the Evil Demon, our Yin Gou family does not need to offend so many cultivators just for him."

Dong Fang Jing Yue continued:

"And I hate him to the bones. It is better if he dies, so I don't have to kill him myself."

"Are you sure you won't commit suicide out of love because of him?"

Dong Fang Jing Shui asked.

Dong Fang Jing Yue glared at him, and she coldly responded:

"I would only see it as a stray dog dying. The most I will do is digging a grave and bury him."

"Aish! A woman has to go and pick up her man's corpse, this is the "Husband Burial"… Cough cough, no, no! Burying a stray dog, burying a stray dog, a really big stray dog."

Second Grandpa changed his tone. He just wanted to ridicule Dong Fang Jing Yue.

The truth was that they both knew Dong Fang Jing Yue was just being shy and refused to say it. She actually didn't want Feng Fei Yun to die in this place. Therefore, when it was necessary, they would still take action. If not for Dong Fang Jing Yue, then it would be for the Yin Gou family to recruit a young genius with boundless potential.

"Boom, Boom, Boom!"

Both the Feng ancestor and Huo Tuo Tuo had Spirit Treasures. The Jin River

Copper Cauldron and Evil Fire Body both launched their attacks. Feng Fei Yun eventually couldn't block them, and he was filled with wounds. One of his ribs was broken by the cauldron. If the Spirit Vessel inside his body didn't counter the cauldron, then it would have pierced through his body.

"Poof!"

Feng Fei Yun was punched by the Evil Fire Body in the back. His spine issued a crackling sound, and his whole body was almost torn into two pieces.

Two Ju Qings with two Spirit Treasures wasn't something that the current Feng Fei Yun could oppose. However, he didn't take even half a step back. He was still persistent and didn't want them to distract Na Lan Xue Jian from suppressing the female corpse.

If Feng Fei Yun wanted to leave, these people wouldn't necessarily be able to stop him. However, he was unable to walk away. At the very least, he had to wait for Na Lan Xue Jian and bring her along.

Even though his whole body was wounded, he was still persisting through it all, waiting, and waiting!

The hour was approaching and the power of the ancient pill had weakened, but at this moment, Na Lan Xue Jian still hadn't come out from the light.

Dong Fang Jing Yue naturally saw through what Feng Fei Yun was doing. With his current power, he could easily break through the siege and escape, but he was still protecting the yellow ancient well. What else could he be doing but waiting for that girl inside the light?

Serves you right, you deserve to die. I will just bury a stray dog after this!

Dong Fang Jing Yue seemed to be acting at her leisure, as if she didn't care. Yet, her fingers were gripping her sleeves tightly. It was just as Feng Fei Yun had said:

"This damned Dong Fang Jing Yue is too narrow-minded and petty."

*** ***

Within the light, Na Lan Xue Jian was standing next to the yellow ancient well and observed the female corpse on top of it. At such a close distance, she

noticed that this female corpse was indeed quite beautiful. She had a slender face, a sharp chin, and a straight nose.

Her figure was particularly arousing to other women's jealousy. Those two slender legs went a bit too far. Na Lan Xue Jian considered that she had a great figure herself, but compared to the female corpse, her legs were a bit short.

When she controlled the Nine Layers Lotus Formation to fly next to the female corpse, she realized that her figure was so ordinary. Her legs were not as long and straight, and her waist was not as slim. Even her white breasts were lacking a whole chunk in comparison.

Na Lan Xue Jian became even more angry. Why was it that nothing was comparable to her? Was this woman an alluring succubus?

Suppress, definitely must suppress her!

Absolutely cannot let her revive!

Na Lan Xue Jian took out the Buddhist Jade Bead. It was blindingly dazzling and emitted a gentle green light. Buddhist auras permeated from the nine holes.

She wanted to activate it and completely obliterate the life essence inside the body of Xiao Niu Lan, but suddenly, her whole body started shaking. As she was holding up the Buddhist Jade Bead and staring at the female corpse, the female corpse's originally closed eyes, like a sleeping beauty, suddenly opened. The pupils in her eyes were crimson like an ocean of blood — extremely frightening.

Nefarious! Terrorizing! Sinister!

The female corpse that had died for more than one thousand years and the supreme beauty of her generation renowned throughout the world had opened her eyes at this very moment.

Her originally black pupils that opened again after eighteen hundred years had turned crimson. They were no longer pure and their spiritual consciousness were gone. The only things left were mysteriousness and killing intent.

Na Lan Xue Jian held the Buddhist Jade Bead and was completely motionless. She covered her mouth with her hands and held her breath; she was completely speechless. She firmly bit her lips and thought:

“Oh heavens! Even her eyes are prettier compared to mine!”

Xiao Niu Lan’s hand reached out and directly gripped her neck. Her crimson bloody eyes were no longer beautiful and, instead, were frightening and ferocious!

*** ***

The one hour limit was inching closer and closer and the wounds on Feng Fei Yun’s body were getting deeper and deeper, but Na Lan Xue Jian had not left the light. Could it be that something terrible had happened to her?

Feng Fei Yun couldn’t wait any longer. He recalled the Infinite Spirit Ring and then, using his Invincible Buddhist Staff, he engraved the ground with a Six Layers Lotus Formation. He intended to personally enter the light and bring Na Lan Xue Jian out. Even if they couldn’t suppress Xiao Niu Lan, it was now the time to leave.

The power of the Six Layers Lotus Formation originally couldn’t get through the light of the ancient formation. However, just a moment ago, the power of the light suddenly decreased. Feng Fei Yun seized this opportunity to directly rush into the light.

“Boom!”

At this final moment, Huo Tuo Huo unleashed a palm that flew forward, but it didn’t hit Feng Fei Yun. Instead, it collided with the light.

“This brat actually broke into the light!”

The Feng ancestor wanted to follow as well, but he was repelled by the power of the light and was knocked flying away.

At this second, the power of the light increased, and the entire yellow ancient well began to shake violently. A fierce light penetrated the high heavens and knocked the six Ju Qings away.

Bam! Bam! Bam! Bam! Bam! Bam! Bam!

The six Ju Qings were knocked away like pins, rolling on the ground and creating six human-shaped holes. They absolutely couldn’t have blocked that power from earlier.

What the hell was going on?

The day suddenly turned into night and the sun was replaced by the stars and the moon. The changing of celestials was a presage of the earth shattering event that would soon take place.

This will not be an ordinary day; many extraordinary things happened one after another!

Chapter 98 : Next to the Ancient Well

It was originally a sunny day, where the sweet flowers and singing birds basked in the scintillating sun. But suddenly, the black clouds covered the sky and the day became the night.

A bright moon in the center of the sky was amidst the stars!

This was a full moon. Its brilliance slowly poured down from the sky like a silk cloth sprinkled on the people's faces.

"Alternating sun and moon, and the passing of the celestials!" This meteorological phenomenon had not appeared for several thousand years. In the ancient records, the last time this happened was during the night before the founding of the Godly Jin Dynasty."

Second Grandpa faintly muttered, sitting on the mountain goat with his tobacco pipe still in his mouth.

In a few hundred thousand miles away, on a pagoda towering through the sky, an old man standing on a meteorological observation stage. Wearing a blue robe, one foot was stomping on a round disk — around nine zhang high — and overlooking towards the far distance.

This old man was old to the point where his age was unknown. He had lived through countless eras, and his face wore the traces of time!

From his forehead, a Heavenly Eye was opened and shot out a ray of light. Staring towards the far south, it was as if he saw an incredible scene, and he started to lament:

"Alternating sun and moon, and the passing of the celestials! Such a meteorological phenomenon… If this isn't a grand Holy Saint coming into being, then it is a grand Demon King coming into being. It seems like a heaven shattering event has happened in the south and is already impossible to stop."

In the Center Administration Prefecture of the Godly Capital.

In a magnificent palace came a surprised utter, and two bright rays of light

flew out from the palace all the way to the southern sky.

“Pass on my decree: send Zhen Tian Hou to personally go to the Grand Southern Prefecture…”

Not long after, a decree was sent to the house of Zhen Tian Hou; then, a condor flew out from it. It became a black rainbow, breaking through the sky, and it headed south.

Jing Huan Mountain creating a new meteorological phenomenon alarmed the entire Godly Jin Dynasty.
Even the masters of the several hundred small nations nearby were shocked. Anyone with a powerful cultivation felt an extraordinary presence at this very moment.

The moment Feng Feiyun stepped inside the light, he had an ominous feeling, and a cold chill came from beneath his feet. It spread rapidly all the way to his spine, then rushed up to his neck.

Danger, danger, danger!

A instinctive reaction surged, making Feng Feiyun want to run away. However, he felt as if his entire body was frozen and impossible to move.

“Bam!”

An invisible shadow knocked Feng Feiyun directly flying to the outside.

Feng Feiyun believed he had impeccable vision, but he couldn’t see the opponent’s shadow.

“Bang!”

Feng Feiyun hit a wall, and all of the bones in his body almost shattered.

With one more blow, his uncontrollable body flew right outside. However, the dangerous feeling and the spiritual suppression that could crush anyone still lingered.

“Boom!” He hit another wall, again. No, this was not a wall, but the yellow ancient well.

Feng Feiyun looked everywhere. There was no shadow; only the yellow ancient

well appeared before him — very eyecatching.

He was always curious about it and this was also his first time being so close. What was actually inside this well?

An ancient well being able to gestate a female corpse… Could it be that the entire well only had corpse water?

Feng Feiyun no longer cared about the black shadow and loosened his grip on the yellow ancient well. This well was built more than one thousand years ago. Rumors claim that it was created by the abbot's own body. It was filled with an ancient atmosphere. As his fingers touched the surface, it was just like touching the bones from an ancient era.

A cold aura!

It was another cold aura capable of freezing others' hearts into a glacier. It emanated from the ancient yellow well for only a second; however, it was enough to split Feng Feiyun's frozen finger, and his skin shattered, revealing his frost-covered bones.

He was currently a half Ju Qing, but he couldn't stop the cold aura from the yellow ancient well. If it was anyone else, then they would have already been frozen and broken into pieces.

"This is…"

Even though the cold chilled one to the bones, Feng Feiyun still couldn't suppress his curiosity, so he looked down inside the ancient well. It was dark inside. Faint and whirling, it was very difficult to discern.

Suddenly, a soul-devouring force came from the inside. Feng Feiyun was shocked and started to have cold sweat. The inside definitely contained a terrifying existence! He couldn't look any more.

"Bam!"

Feng Feiyun quickly withdrew his gaze. Even though it was just a glance, his eyes became bloodshot and blood was almost flowing from his eye sockets.

"Bam!"

Feng Feiyun was startled when he turned around. He quickly took a step back

and his heart violently contracted. His body directly pressed against the wall of the yellow ancient well.

He stared straight ahead, and he gravely said:

“You… You came back to life?”

The shadow finally revealed her figure. From start to finish, she had always been behind Feng Feiyun.

The rays from the yellow ancient well rushed back and forth, covering her body and creating an endless sense of mystery. Earlier, she was standing behind Feng Feiyun for who knows how long? When he finally turned around, he noticed crimson eyes right next to him, so he was startled and jumped back to the yellow ancient well.

Xiao Niulan remained motionless. Her distance from Feng Feiyun was only three feet. Her crimson, red eyes intensely stared at him. It was more terrifying than Feng Feiyun’s Heavenly Phoenix Gaze — comparable to oceans of blood.

The rays began to disperse and the moon and stars in the night’s curtain shined down, like a night lantern illuminating her body. Feng Feiyun was at one corner of this “night lantern.”

She gently breathed while basking in the lights of the stars and the moon. Her nose slightly narrowed; she was filled with spirituality and liveliness.

Absorbing the energy of the moon and the stars — this was a secret method only known by the cultivators from the High Ancient Era, and it was long gone. Only a few people and existences would be able to recognize it. However, these ancient people were grand characters and were always living in seclusion in the far desolace or ocean, and thus, humans rarely saw them.

However, this female corpse, who just came back to life, was using such a method. Could it be that after eighteen hundred years of culmination, she finally reached such a frightening height?

Feng Feiyun felt her body exuding an enveloping killing intent. At this moment, he didn’t dare to breathe. And not only him, but the cultivators a few dozen miles away were all quivering and holding their breaths.

Feng Feiyun originally wanted to escape while she was absorbing the light of the moon, but he only took one step backwards before he tripped on a hard stone and almost fell on the ground. Fortunately, he maintained his firm stance so he didn't fall, but it also disturbed the "female corpse."

She could no longer be considered a female corpse because she had revived; she was a living person!

Her eyes slightly turned and the crimson gaze was fixed upon Feng Feiyun. Her killing intent became stronger and the coldness became more dense. She slowly took one step forward.

Feng Feiyun quickly took one step back. This time, he was attentive and dodged the rock behind him. However, the spot where he almost tripped over, earlier, didn't have a rock, it was actually a person.

A woman!

Na Lan Xuejian was lying below Feng Feiyun's feet; she was always lying in this place. It was just that earlier, Feng Feiyun's gaze was focused on the yellow ancient well so he didn't notice her.

She was motionless on the ground, and it was unknown whether she was dead or alive.

Feng Feiyun no longer retreated, and he ignored the killing intent of Xiao Niulan right next to him. He quickly squatted down and propped Na Lan Xuejian up while calling out to her:

"Jian Xue, Jian Xue, what is wrong?"

Because of the desperate situation, Feng Feiyun shouted her previous name. The name 'Feng Jian Xue' was much more familiar and cordial to him.

Na Lan Xuejian remained motionless. Feng Feiyun then saw the red handprint mark on her neck. Fortunately, her heart was still beating and her breathing was normal. It seemed like she was only rendered unconscious from strangulation.

This was not normal. Under the current situation of Xiao Niulan, she should only be an evil god who only knew how to kill; how could she only make her faint? Could it be that the Na Lan Buddhist Robe saved her life?

Feng Feiyun didn’t think too much about it. He quickly carried Na Lan Xuejian and wanted to leave. However, he had not even taken a step before he felt a chill on his neck. He was gripped by an icy hand!

Feng Feiyun uttered a groan. The difference in cultivation was too big, so he was unable to move!

Xiao Niulan’s sharp fingernails on her slender fingers were like five extremely long swords and left two bloody wounds on Feng Feiyun’s neck.

“Infinite Spirit Ring!”

In a flash, Feng Feiyun activated the power of the ring, hoping to use its strength to suppress Xiao Niulan or force her back.

This was the only solution that Feng Feiyun could come up with. Otherwise, he would lose his life in an instant against this newly revived Evil Woman.

This was too unfortunate. Could he be her first taste of blood after coming back to life? Feng Feiyun was very unwilling, but his neck started to issue the sound of breaking bones. He felt his hot blood trickling down his neck and flowing down to his clothes.

Her hatred was too strong; she would kill anyone she met without any reasons. The words of Monk Jiu Rou were true, this was truly an Evil Woman coming into being.

Feng Feiyun’s sight became darker and darker, but the Infinite Spirit Ring finally recovered its power. The six ancient diagrams rushed outside and burst out a heaven shattering power straight at Xiao Niulan’s face.

Chapter 99 : Bloods Flown like the Rivers

"Boom!"

The outbreak of the Spirit Treasure's power was ferocious; it was enough to collapse a high mountain.

Xiao Niulan did not move. She ignored the Infinite Spirit Ring that struck towards her soft porcelain cheeks. The Infinite Spirit Ring was only an inch from her jade face before it suddenly bounced back.

Being struck back, its six ancient formations were broken. The important thing was that she didn't even move, yet she was already strong enough to knock away Spirit Treasures.

"Ohh…"

Everyone was shocked! This was truly an Evil Woman coming into being, even a Spirit Treasure couldn't hurt her. This was her wanting to sacrifice humans for the Dao, and this person was Feng Feiyun. His blood will dye the yellow ancient well, red.

Anyone who trespassed a forbidden place would have to pay a due price.

"Xiao… Xiao… Niulan!"

Feng Feiyun tried his best to utter a few words from his mouth, hoping to save his life. In front of this female devil, even a Ju Qing wouldn't dare to fight recklessly; that would be seeking death, ah!

Sure enough, after hearing these words, the crimson in her eyes slightly paled. It was as if she couldn't believe that someone still knew her name after one thousand years.

If someone now could say the three words "Feng Feiyun", then Feng Feiyun would also be surprised.

In the midst of her confusion, Feng Feiyun hastened to open her fingers and withdrew the Infinite Spirit Ring. He intended to carry Na Lan Xuejian away from this place.

“Xiao.. Niulan.”

She whispered to herself; her eyes were a bit sluggish. Then, it revealed some spiritual liveliness as she muttered:

“That’s right, my name is Xiao Niulan!”

Someone who had died for more than eighteen hundred years finally remembered her own name. The memories from her mind came flooding back. There were some people and some matters that she never forgot, but it was no different from forgetting. Too much time had passed. Even the figures of her close family became fuzzy, and her closest friends were no more than faint shadows.

Ten years of time was enough for one’s best friend’s figure to be faded, then what about twenty years? After thirty years? Let alone other people, after more than eighteen hundred years, she even almost forgot her own name!

There were no more lights being emitted from the yellow ancient well, and all of the ancient formations were destroyed as well. A Ju Qing saw her confusion and brazenly rushed forward, wanting to kill her.

Without the light stopping him, this Ju Qing easily struck towards the top of her head. In this Ju Qing’s hand was countless strands of lightning interwoven together. It was capable of rendering all things into powder.

Xiao Niulan’s pupils slightly flashed and she gently waved her sleeve. A ray of light came out from the sleeve and it routed the lightning into the sky.

This Ju Qing didn’t expect Xiao Niulan to recover from her absent-mindedness so quickly. Her eyes simply gazed at him, but it was enough for him to feel a cold chill. His heart beated violently as if it was about to jump out from his body.

What the hell was this monster?

This Ju Qing was a renowned figure that had shook the whole world, but he never felt such a fear until now. It was just like meeting his mortal enemy. He wanted to withdraw his palm and retreat, but he felt that his neck was being tightly gripped by a cold hand.

Like the scythe in the hands of a death god, it hugged the neck, causing fears

to instill into others!

“Crackk!”

This Ju Qing was not as lucky as Feng Feiyun. His neck was gripped by her slender jade hand and even his head was ripped off by her as if she was picking a watermelon.

Only, this “watermelon” was bleeding blood!

An ancestor of the Ju Qing level, renowned in one direction, was easily decapitated by someone’s hand. Even his head was picked off and was like a ball held in her hand.

“Bam!”

The Ju Qing’s body fell from the sky. A headless body, still bleeding from the neck, and still warm.

Xiao Niulan quietly observed the head in her hand like observing a work of art. She became more and more disgusted. Bam! The head was crushed into a sea of blood, causing her delicate hands to be stained red.

At this moment, no one could laugh; they could only feel chills all over. Was this still a human?

Decapitating a Ju Qing with her bare hands and crushing the head into a bloody powder — she was truly a devil, a devil killing people without blinking an eye.

Feng Feiyun had only just escaped from the godly temple before he heard the “bang” sound. The moment he turned his back, he saw the head of the Ju Qing being crushed by her.

His entire body shuddered. If earlier, he didn’t call out her name to secure a glimmer of hope, the crushed head would probably have been his. This bloodthirsty Evil Woman was not Xiao Niulan and definitely not the beauty that was unforgotten by the Mortal Life Temple’s abbot.

There was only resentment and killing intent enveloping her heart!

A dead person would remain dead. Even if they revived, they wouldn’t be the same person like in the past.

Feng Feiyun was like this, and Xiao Niulan was also the same!

“Boom!”

The wall of the godly temple collapsed, and a monk corpse came out from the rubble. The monastic robe on his body already rotted along with the skin on his body, leaving behind only the rotten bones. A pair of empty eyes looked at Feng Feiyun, then it rushed forward.

The moment Xiao Niulan awakened, the formations inside the godly temple were also destroyed. Even Monk Jiu Rou was not able to suppress them any longer. They were now able to leave the bindings of the godly temple.

Thus, these monk corpses became violently crazy. They began to destroy the buddhist hall and statues. Some directly jumped out from the temple and launched an attack on the nearby cultivators.

“Ah! Big Brother…”

“What the hell is this?”

***

More than one thousand ancient monk corpses, with heavy killing intent and wearing tattered monastic robes, came out and killed in all directions.

The heart and innards of a young disciple from the Feng family were clawed out and he was finally torn apart to death. It was a pitiful death, watching his own body being eaten by the ancient corpses.

A little sister from an immortal sect was being eaten alive by an ancient monk. Piece after piece of the flesh on her face was being devoured as she remained conscious. The blood vessels on her neck were pulled out like a red ribbon still drenched in blood.

“This… The mouth of that black crow monk was right. Not far from now, the entire Grand Southern Prefecture will have rivers flowing with blood and mountains of corpses!”

Feng Feiyun punched a monk corpse away then rushed outside. This fist was quite powerful, but it could only knock it away and it didn’t destroy it.

All of these monk corpses underwent Second Corpse Transformation so their

bodies were at the Impervious Diamond state. Even cultivators at the God Base realm would be torn in half by them.

If it was only Xiao Niulan, then many people would probably die, but it would not be a terrible calamity. However, with the release of more than one thousand monk corpses, this was truly a great disaster. There would absolutely be corpses for thousands of miles.

“A calamity has befallen the Grand Southern Prefecture!”

The ancestor of the Grand Development Immortal Gate was standing on his Ancestral Wind Beast. With the Sky Breaking Sword to his back, he watched the waves of corpses below. At this time, he could already foresee that, in a few months, there would be many great changes occurring in the Grand Southern Prefecture. Many great powers would probably be destroyed.

Jing Huan Mountain was not far from Violet Firmament Ancient City so the first people to struggle against this disaster would be this city. How many cultivators would have to die in this battle?

The ancestor of the Grand Development Immortal Gate saw — with his own eyes — the fall of a Ju Qing. His body, at the moment, was lying cold on the ground; it was frozen and broken into pieces.

“Ah!”

The ancestor of the Grand Development Immortal Gate felt a chill on his neck. He saw the female devil, standing next to the well, glare at his neck. Her gaze was so frightening that it caused his neck to freeze into ice.

“Escape, quick!”

The only thought on his mind was this. He ferociously slapped the back of the Ancestral Wind Beast, wanting to control it to flee Jing Huan Mountain.

“Aohhh!”

However, the Ancestral Wind Beast couldn’t fly. It uttered a whining sound, instead. Its head was penetrated by a killing light. Spurting out a rainbow of blood, its giant body fell straight towards the ground.

He panicked even more. Since the start of his name, he had never felt as scared

like this before. It was as if there was a ferocious ghost, that wore white robe, chasing him from behind. It was holding a steel chain, wanting to claim his life.

In the end, he couldn’t run away. His pace suddenly stopped and he surprisingly looked straight forward. Xiao Niulan was standing there. Her crimson eyes shot out two rays of bloody lights and pierced his chest, creating two streams of blood.

A Ju Qing of an entire generation didn’t even have the power to fight back!

Chapter 100 : Evil Woman’s Presence

An Evil Woman. Her body did not rot after eighteen hundred years, and her soul finally came back.

Reverse Life and Death was a terrifying grand technique. However, the chances of success was extremely low — not even one percent. Yet, she was successful, and she even absorbed several hundred drops of spirit spring water. She devoured one third of a spirit vein and even the power from the moon and stars were absorbed by her.

“What kind of existence is this?”

Some people felt chills throughout their entire body. They envisioned a scene where the heaven fell and the earth crumbled.

Time had passed and very few people knew her real name. Many instinctively called her “Evil Woman.” This was not a name for an ordinary demon, but a true devil. She was an existence that could fight against the gods and capable of forcing all existences in this world to tremble.

The Evil Woman also wore a buddhist robe and the material woven together to make it was unknown. After one thousand years, it was completely unharmed; it even carried a unique sense of spirituality. It was embroidered with an azure buddhist lotus — beautiful and moving. Like a lotus flower blooming in a spirit pond, there were still rolling dewdrops on the lotus leaf.

Her hair was not at all disheveled. She was using a jade ornamented hairpin to hold her hair together. Each strand of hair was full of energy and life essence. The strands emitted a bright, jade light. Some shone on her jade-white neck and others faintly glimmered on her round earrings.

Her crimson eyes were still red like two tigers, carefully gazing at the ancestor of the Grand Development Immortal Gate. With the presence of a higher being looking down below, her pressure was truly formidable and suffocated her opponent.

The two wounds on the back of the ancestor were finally sealed by his

powerful cultivation. However, they were grave wounds, and his internal organs had been damaged. He had to use his endless spirit energy to barely suppress his injuries.

“I inadvertently have offended you, but you shouldn’t kill to the very end!”

The ancestor took two steps back and his eyes emitted blinding lights. The two hands hidden in his sleeves began to form sword seals. If this woman took action yet again, he could only fight to the bitter end.

With a Spirit Treasure in his hand, there was a chance that he could survive this using his sword.

The Evil Woman’s figure was so sultry and her slim waist under the moonlight was too beautifully charming. Her face under the silver moonlight was illuminated like the ceramic jade — filled with implicit charms.

A beautiful woman was even more pretty while standing below the moonlight!

But at the moment, no one dared to enjoy this kind of beauty. Even Young Noble Flawless, who was always crazily obsessed with beauties, ran away a long time ago. This wasn’t a joke; even Ju Qings were decapitated, how could he stay in this place?

The beautiful, alluring jade hands of the Evil Woman stretched out again. They were the same hands that had just crushed the head of a Ju Qing, earlier. The sword of the ancestor immediately slashed forward, releasing a cold ray from the sky.

A Ju Qing ferociously attacked with the power of the Spirit Treasure utilized to the extreme.

“Swoosh!”

Two slender fingers pinched the unstoppable Sky Breaking Sword. All of the spirit energy immediately collapsed into pieces; the powerful Ju Qing attack was easily blocked by her.

“”Bam!”

The Sky Breaking Sword was broken by her jade fingers, and a countless amount of spirit energy and spirituality spilled out from the fracture. A bright

light — the size of a fist — wanted to rush into the sky. This was the Spirit Awareness of the Sky Breaking Sword; it contained a trace of intelligence.

It wanted to flee, but the Evil Woman opened her red lips. She opened her sweet, moist, and seductive lips to easily swallow it, and it was refined.

A Spirit Treasure was crushed and even the Spirit Awareness was swallowed?

“First, she absorbed the power of the moon and stars; now, she devoured the power of the Spirit Awareness… Is there anything in the world that she can’t eat?”

Feng Feiyun felt a tingling sensation behind his scalp. He leaned on the wall of the godly temple while cold sweat dripped down his forehead.

“Little Brat, why are you in daze? Hurry up and escape.”

Monk Jiu Rou’s sleeves gently fluttered as he rushed out from the godly temple. He was a monk, but he had a grand stature. His chest was revealed and it was filled with fierce tattoos.

The left had an Azure Dragon, the right had a White Tiger, and in the middle was a giant rat!

This monk, before entering the buddhist temple, must have been a street thug. No, a butcher on a rowdy street. If he held a sword with a piece of cloth tied in his hair and showed off his fat body, he would certainly look like an executioner.

“Fuck, aren’t you suppressing the ancient monk corpses? Why are you running out here?”

Feng Feiyun looked at the monk corpses, who were killing without restraint while wearing their decaying buddhist robes that covered their dried flesh. It was a truly ferocious terror, able to scare a coward to death.

This Monk Jiu Rou was truly not reliable, ah!

Monk Jiu Rou heavily sighed and said:

“The heaven’s will is made up. Humans cannot turn back the rotation of the heaven and earth. At the moment Xiao Niulan awakened, all of the ancient formations of the godly temple collapsed. Plus, she combined the spirit essence of all of the ancient monk corpses. When she awakened, all of the power of

these corpses also activated, creating a resonance, and they became even more powerful. My power alone cannot stop them."

"You see, even the buddhist light on top of the pagoda, that had been burning for more than eighteen hundred years, has vanquished. If even this buddhist light has ran out, then this indicates that this was all part of the heaven's will, ah!"

After his exasperation, he took the Invincible Buddhist Staff from Feng Feiyun. In his hands, its light was even stronger, and there were buddhist lights circulating its body.

"Xiao Niulan utilized the essence of these monk to revive so naturally, she could also control these ancient corpses. Oh heavens, an Evil Woman alone is scary enough, but now there is also these ancient monks that are truly capable of sweeping a grand power."

Feng Feiyun said.

"So right now, you should get as far away as possible. Hand Na Lan Xuejian over to this monk. Suppressing these monks wasted too much of my energy. At the moment, I also want to escape this situation."

Monk Jiu Rou intended to steal the person from Feng Feiyun's hand, then escape far away.

Na Lan Xuejian's last name was "Na Lan", and the Na Lan Buddhist Robe also had the two words, "Na Lan". Feng Feiyun felt that there was a connection between the two. Plus, this Monk Jiu Rou showed a lot of concern for her. This absolutely was not just because she was a natural buddhist physique, and not simply because he wanted to take her in as a disciple.

This concern was a bit too much…!

"Hey, hey, you're kidding. She is my wife! Handing my wife to a monk — who in the world would do this?"

Feng Feiyun naturally wouldn't hand Na Lan Xuejian to an untrustworthy monk.

"Your wife? Such dog shit! Little Brat, I've been tolerating you for a long time

now.”

Monk Jiu Rou was no longer polite and courteous. He swung his fist, that was as big as a pot, and knocked Feng Feiyun to the ground. Then, he lifted up Na Lan Xuejian and propped her on his shoulder. As he was holding his Invincible Buddhist Staff, he took a strong step and its momentum carried him more than one hundred meters away.

“Your mother! You dare to kidnap someone!”

Feng Feiyun got up from the ground and spit out some dirt. His anger made his blood rise all the way to his head, and he began to chase.

He knew that this monk was taking revenge. Earlier, Feng Feiyun kicked his bald head twice so now he struck Feng Feiyun on the head.

*** ***

Although the Evil Woman broke the Sky Breaking Sword with her fingers and devoured its Spirit Awareness, the ancestor of the Grand Development Immortal Gate seized a glimmer of life and found the strength to escape. He directly flew to the clouds and used a forbidden technique to burn his blood energy. He only thought about running as far away as possible.

The Evil Woman gazed up in the sky with her crimson eyes. She gently stretched her hand towards the heavens curtain.

Even when separated by dozens of miles, the ancestor still felt the threat of death so his entire body was unable to relax. As long as this jade hand of the Evil Woman touched him, that would be his death.

I am not willing! I am not willing!

The jade hand had reached the head of the ancestor!

“Amitabha! Humans must have the heart to forgive and forget!”

A giant, golden pillar from the sky suppressed downward. It was like a pillar that was able to support the collapse of the heaven and earth. It destroyed the shadowy figure of the Evil Woman’s hand.

This was not a giant pillar but a golden buddhist staff.

So shocking! There was someone who was able to block a move from the Evil Woman and capable of destroying the shadow of her hand!

The moment she came into being, she swept this entire place. Even the Ju Qings were not able to block one move from her. At this moment, she had finally met a worthy opponent. Could it be that there was a great virtuous paragon of the buddhist faith to destroy the evil?

Feng Feiyun was chasing right behind them, and he was quite surprised to see how powerful Monk Jiu Rou was.

Didn't he say his original energy was expended?

Feng Feiyun originally thought that Monk Jiu Rou was just a scamming thug on the street. Only god would know that this person would be able to block a move from the Evil Woman that remained unbeaten.

Someone that could fight the Evil Woman had appeared!

This was a great turning point, and it allowed others to see a glimmer of survival!

"Oh mama! Run for your life, ah! This poor monk didn't mean to offend you. Earlier, my hand was just cramping, ah!"

Monk Jiu Rou shouted. He carried Na Lan Xuejian on his shoulder and ran away like an old man being chased by a dog. He used his Invincible Buddhist Staff like a walking stick; he propped it once then ran the heck away for his life.

Although he only propped it once, this speed simply couldn't be described with words. He immediately jumped across several high mountains, leaving only a shadow.

The crimson eyes of the woman suddenly bursted two rays of light, turning into two oceans of blood. With a "Whoosh", she disappeared from the spot and became a crimson ray of light that pierced through the high sky to pursue.